





Class PC 5066

Book .V 5  
1827











A  
P O R T U G U E S E  
G R A M M A R :

WITH

THE PORTUGUESE WORDS PROPERLY ACCENTED

ACCORDING TO THE LATEST AND BEST AUTHORITIES.

---

By ANTHONY VIEYRA.

---

*THE TENTH EDITION,*

REVISED AND IMPROVED.

---

*“Necesse est enim inter quos mercatura et contractuum sint, inter eos quoque sermonis esse commercia.”—UBERTUS FOLIETA.*

---

L O N D O N :

PRINTED FOR J. COLLINGWOOD, IN THE STRAND.

---

1827.



39  
11053

PC 5066

V5  
1827

## THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE.



*AS the usefulness of the Portuguese Language is so well known to all English merchants who carry on a general trade with the different Parts of the known world, it will be needless to use any arguments here to prove it ; and I shall refer what I have to say on the copiousness and energy of this language, to the Preface to my English and Portuguese Dictionary.\**

*The reader will find in the FIRST PART of this Grammar, what is material as a foundation of the whole.*

*At the end of the SECOND PART is a full explanation of the PARTICLES, on which I have bestowed more time and labour, because this subject has been hitherto much neglected, although the principal ornament and elegance not only of the Portuguese, but of every other language, chiefly consist in the proper arrangement and judicious interspersions of the words.*

---

\* A New Edition of which is now in the Press.—JAN. 1827.

*In the THIRD PART is a larger collection than hitherto published of the terms of TRADE, WAR, NAVIGATION, &c. which the present intercourse between the nations renders particularly useful.*

*Having found a great difficulty in procuring Portuguese books in this Country, I have been commonly obliged to furnish with part of my private collection those Gentlemen whom I have had the honour of assisting in the study of this language, during my residence here; therefore, in the FOURTH PART I have given some passages selected from the best Portuguese Authors, and which will, at the same time, facilitate the reading of their most eminent writers.*

# ADVERTISEMENT

TO

THE NINTH EDITION.

---

THIS new Edition of Mr. Vieyra's Grammar has been not only accurately marked with the proper accents, to facilitate the Pronunciation and the Intelligence of the Language, but even materially altered in the body of the Work. The accentuation is a matter of so much consequence in the Portuguese Language, that one accent used in the room of another often changes entirely the signification of the word; as for instance in the words *Avó* and *Avô*; the former, when marked with an acute, meaning *grand-mother*, the latter with a circumflex, meaning *grand-father*. This interesting part, in which all the former Editions have been so deficient (using only the acute) has been scrupulously corrected in the present one. In that part which treats of the Pronunciation, some very necessary corrections have been introduced. The pronunciation of the *ch*, wrongly explained in the other Editions, is in this brought to its real sound.



New passages from the best Modern Writers have been substituted for some of the Ancient ones, to enable the learners to form a proper idea of the variations and progress of the Language, down to the present time. A new Vocabulary of the Military Words of Command and a fresh Translation of the Commercial Letters have also been inserted in this Edition. \*

Such are the principal alterations made in this Work, which, it is hoped, will meet with the approbation of the public.

*London, May 1813.*

---

\* Various Improvements have been made in the present Edition, (Jan. 1827) particularly in a general correction of the Phraseology of the English part of the Grammar.



# CONTENTS.

## PART I.

	<i>Page</i>
OF the Portuguese Alphabet, and the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter - - - - -	1
Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables - - - - -	3
Of the Articles - - - - -	8
Of the Nouns - - - - -	11
Of the Pronouns - - - - -	25
Of Verbs - - - - -	44
Of the Participles - - - - -	113
Of the Adverbs - - - - -	114
Of the Prepositions - - - - -	117
Of the Conjunctions - - - - -	118
Interjective Particles - - - - -	120
Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language -	121

## PART II.

Of the Division of Syntax - - - - -	122
Of the Syntax of Articles - - - - -	126
Of the Syntax of Nouns, and first, of the Substantives -	131
Of the Syntax of Adjectives - - - - -	132
Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives -	135
Of the Syntax of Pronouns - - - - -	136
Of the Syntax of Verbs - - - - -	139
Of the Syntax of Participles and Gerunds - - - - -	152
Of Prepositions - - - - -	154

Of the Portuguese Orthography	▪	-	▪	▪	▪	191
Of the Quantity of Syllables, and their Sound		-				209
Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin						215

## PART III.

The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language						218
A Vocabulary of Words most used in Discourse						249
Of the Portuguese Coin	-	-	-	-	-	306
A Collection of Portuguese Proverbs	-	-	-			307
Familiar Dialogues	-	-	-	-	-	316
Letters on Mercantile Affairs, &c.		-	-	-		331

## PART IV.

Several useful and entertaining Passages, collected from the best Portuguese Writers						356
---	--	--	--	--	--	-----

---

---

A NEW  
P O R T U G U E S E  
G R A M M A R.

---

P A R T I.

---

C H A P. I.

OF THE PORTUGUESE ALPHABET, AND THE  
MANNER OF PRONOUNCING EACH SEPARATE  
LETTER.

**T**HE Portuguese alphabet contains twenty-four letters, viz.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P,  
Q, R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z.

The A is expressed by a sound like that of *a* in the English words *at, rat, fat, &c.*

B is expressed by a sound like that of the *be*, in the first syllable of the English word *Betty*.

C is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *celebrated*.

D is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *declare*.

E is expressed by a sound like that which we give to the English *a* when we pronounce the word *care*.

F is expressed by the same sound as in English.

G is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *generation*.

H is expressed by a sound like that of the English word *ahast*, if you cut off the two last letters *st*, and keep the accent on the second *a*.

I is expressed by the sound of *ee*.

J is called *consoante*, it is expressed by the sound of *ee*, and has the same power as the *g* before *e* or *i*.

L, as in English.

M, as in English.

N, as in English.

O has nearly the same sound as in the English word *store*.

P is expressed by a sound like that of *pe* in the English word *penny*.

Q is expressed by a sound like that of the English *k*.

R is expressed by a sound like that of the English participle *erred*, if you cut off the last letter *d*.

S, as in English.

T is expressed by a sound like that of *tha* in the English word *Thames*.

U is expressed by a sound like that of *oo* in the English word *poop*.

V is expressed by a sound like that of *oo*; they call it also *oo consoante*, i. e. the *v* consonant.

X is expressed by a sound like that of our pronoun personal *she*, if you add an *s* to it, or as *shees*.

Y is expressed by a sound like that of an *i* in the English word *visible*, and is called *ypsilon*.

Z is expressed by the sound of our English *zed*, leaving out the *d*, or *zea*.

*Of the manner of Pronouncing the Portuguese Letters  
as combined in Syllables; and first*

## OF THE VOWELS.

## A,

In Portuguese, is commonly pronounced like *a* in the following English words *adapted, castle, &c.* It is sometimes pronounced with less strength, and closely, as in *âmbos*, where the *a* is pronounced like *a* in the English word *ambition*.

## E.

The letter *e* has two different sounds; the one open like *ai* in *daily*: the other close, like that in the English word *mellow*. Examples of the former, *fê, faith, pé, foot, &c.* Examples of the latter, *rêde, a net, parêde, a wall, &c.* In this consists a great part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation, which, however, cannot be learned but by long use, notwithstanding all the rules that can be given.

## I

Is pronounced like *ee* in the English word *steel*, *âço*; or like *i* in the English words *still, ainda; visible, visível.*

## O.

This vowel has two sounds; one open, as in the word *dó, pity*, where the *o* is pronounced like our *o* in the word *store*; the other close, as in the Portuguese article *do, of*, and the word *redôndo, round*, where the *o* is pronounced like our *u* in *turret* or *stumble*. It is likewise in the different pronunciation of this vowel that the greatest part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation consists; but it can be learned only by long use.



## U.

The vowel *u* is pronounced like *oo* in English.

## Y

Has the same sound as the Portuguese vowel *i*.

## O F C O N S O N A N T S .

## B

Keeps always the same sound as in English.

## C

Before *a*, *o*, *u*, and the consonants *l*, *r*, is properly pronounced as *k*; but before *e* and *i* it takes the hissing sound of *s*: it takes also the sound of *s* before *a*, *o*, *u*, when there is a dash under it thus ç.

I could wish the learned in Portugal would follow the resolution of the Royal Academy of Madrid, by expunging such dash, and placing the *s* in its stead, since they have in both languages the same hissing sound, which frequently occasions great confusion in the proper use of them.

*C* before *h* is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shine*, *shape*, &c.

Double *c* is sounded only before *e* and *i*, the first with the sound of *k*, and the other with the hissing sound of *s*; as in *accidênte*, accident, pronounce *aksidênte*.

## D

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

## F

Is pronounced always as in English.

## G

Before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, and before consonants, is pronounced as in English: example, *gôsto*, taste; *gaiôla*, cage; *grito*, a cry.

G. before *e* and *i* denotes the sound of *j* consonant.

*Gua* sounds almost like the English *wa*: example, *guárda*, pronounce *guarda*.

*Gue*, *gui*, are pronounced as *gue* in the word *guest*, and *gui* in the word *gift*; but in the verbs *arguír* and *redarguír*, it is pronounced as if it were written *argueer*, &c.

## H.

The letter *h* is never aspirated nor pronounced at the beginning of words, as *hóra*, an hour; *homem*, a man: according to the modern orthography, all those words are written without an *h*.

H, when preceded by a *c*, makes a sound with it like our *sh*. See the letter C, and also the letters L and N.

## J

Is pronounced like our *j* consonant.

## K.

The Portuguese have no *k*.

## L

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

*Lh*, is pronounced like *g* before an *l* in the Italian words *figlio*, *foglio*, &c.

## M

Is pronounced as in English, when placed before a vowel with which it forms a syllable; but, when it is at the end of words, and preceded by the letter *e*, it forms in Portuguese a nasal sound like that of the French words *vin*, wine; *pain*, bread; except *sóem*, *tóem*, from the verbs *soár*, *toár*, and some others.

M at the end of words preceded by an *a*, *o*, or *i*, has a nasal obtuse sound, which can only be earned from the mouth of a mas r.

## N

Before a vowel with which it forms a syllable, is pronounced as in English; otherwise, it only gives a nasal sound to the vowel that precedes it.

N before *h* has the same sound as *gn* in Italian, or in the French words *Espagne, Allemagne*.

## P

And *ph* are pronounced as in English.

## Q

Is pronounced like *k*: example, *quero* I am willing, pronounce *keró*.

The vowel *u* after *q* in the word *qual*, which must be uttered so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear, is pronounced as in the English word *quantity*, in order to distinguish it from the substantive *cal*, lime.

## R

And double *r* are pronounced as in English.

## S

And *ss* are pronounced as in English.

S between two vowels is pronounced like a *z*; particularly in the words ending in *oso*, and *esa*, as *amoróso, cuidadóso, mésa, defésa, &c.*

## T

Is pronounced as in English.

## V

Is pronounced as in English.

## X

Is pronounced as *sh* in English; except in the word *axíoma*, in which, according to *Feyjó*, the *x* is to be pronounced like *c*.



X after the vowel *e* is pronounced like *es*, in the words, *extençam*, *extenuádo*, *expulso*, *excellênte*, and some other words.

X between two vowels is pronounced like *gz* in the words *exactamênte*, *exornár*; except *Alexânde*, *Paixám*, *Puxo*, *báxo*, and some other words, that may be learned by use. Care must be taken to pronounce the *g* so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear.

## Z

Is pronounced as in English, but at the end of words it is pronounced like *s*, as *rapáz*, boy; *Francez*, French; *perdíz*, partridge; *voz*, voice; *luz*, light, &c.

The little dash which the Portuguese call *til*, is set by them over some letters instead of *m*; as *bẽ* instead of *bem*; *convẽ* instead of *convém*; *hũa* instead of *huma*; and as it is then to be considered as an *m*, see what we have said about the pronunciation of that letter.

The *til*,<sup>~</sup> is also placed over the vowels, *ao*, *aa*, in the end of words, thus *aõ* *aã*. See what we have said above of *m* at the end of words preceded by an *a*.

It may be here observed that the curved mark,<sup>~</sup> is the most perfect, though it is often found necessary, in English types, to substitute the plain instead of the curved.

## OF DIPHTHONGS.

The meeting of two vowels in one syllable constitute what is called a Diphthong. The following are the Diphthongs of the Portuguese language.

*Aa*, as in *maçãa*, an apple.

*Ae*, as in *cães*, dogs.

*Ay*, as in *páy*, father.

*Ai*, as in *máis*, more.

*Ao*, as in *páo*, wood.

*Au*, as in *cáusa*, a cause.

*Eo*, as in *céo*, heaven.

*Ey*, as in *réy*, king.

*Ei*, as in *améi*, I loved.

*Eu*, as *éu*, I.

*Io*, as *vío*, he saw.

*Oe*, as in *poēm*, they put ; *compoēm*, they compose ; *meloēs*, melons, &c.

*Oy*, as in *bóy*, an ox : *fóy*, he was.

*Ou*, as *dóu*, I give ; *sou*, I am.

*Ue*, as *azúes*, blue :

The two vowels in the following words must be plainly and distinctly pronounced :

*Ai*, as in *paíz*, a country, pronounce *pa-íz*.

*Ea*, as in *lampréa*, a lamprey, pronounce *lampré-a*.

*Ia*, as *clemência*, clemency, pronounce *clemência-a*.

*Io*, as in *navío*, a ship, pronounce *naví-o*.

*Iu*, as *viúva*, a widow, pronounce *vi-úva*.

*Oa*, as *Lisbóa*, Lisbon, *próa*, a prow, pronounce *Lisbó-a*, &c.

*Oe*, as *tóem*, *sóem*, from the verbs, *toár* and *soár*, pronounce *tó-em*, &c.

*Oi*, as *roím*, bad, pronounce *ro-ím*.

*Oo*, as *cooperaçám*, co-operation, pronounce, *co-operaçãõ*.

*Ui*, as *ruína*, ruin, pronounce *ru-ína*.

## CHAP. II.

### OF THE ARTICLES.

THOSE particles called Articles, are properly prepositions, commonly put before nouns, to shew their gender, number, and case.

These articles are definite or indefinite.

#### *Of the Definite Article.*

The definite article marks the gender, number, and case, of the nouns which it precedes.

The English tongue has but one definitive article, namely *the*, which serves for both numbers.

The Portuguese has two, viz. *o* for the masculine and *a* for the feminine.

The definite article has five cases, the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative; because the vocative in the nouns is designed and preceded merely by the particle *o*.

*The Declension of the Masculine Article o.*

Singular.	Plural.
Nominative, <i>o</i> , the	Nominative, <i>os</i> , the
Genitive, <i>do</i> , of the	Genitive, <i>dos</i> , of the
Dative, <i>ao</i> , or <i>o</i> , to the	Dative, <i>aos</i> , or <i>os</i> , to the
Accusative, <i>ao</i> , or <i>o</i> , the	Accusative, <i>aos</i> , or <i>os</i> , the
Ablative, <i>do</i> , from or by the	Ablative, <i>dos</i> , from or by the

*The Declension of the Feminine Article a.*

Singular.	Plural.
Nominative, <i>a</i> , the	Nominative, <i>as</i> , the
Genitive, <i>da</i> , of the	Genitive, <i>das</i> , of the
Dative, <i>á</i> to the	Dative, <i>ás</i> , to the
Accusative, <i>a</i> , the	Accusative, <i>as</i> , the
Ablative, <i>da</i> , from the	Ablative, <i>das</i> , from or by the

Observe, that the Portuguese have an article for each gender, both in the singular and the plural.

*Of the Indefinite Article.*

The indefinite article may be put before the masculine as well as the feminine gender, before the plural as well as the singular number.

The indefinite article has but four cases, the genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative.

*De* may be put before a noun masculine as well as feminine, as *húma corôa de réy*, a king's crown; the word *réy* is masculine; *hum chapéo de pálha*, a hat of straw; the word *pálha* is of the feminine gender.

The indefinite article *de* is also put before the plural as well as the singular number; example,

*húma corôa de flôres*, a crown of flowers ; *hum prato de arrôz*, a plate of rice.

*Declension of the Indefinite Article.*

Genitive, *de*, of  
Dative, *á*, to,

Accusative, *a*  
Ablative, *de* from

The accusative of this article is not expressed in English : example, *Eu conheci a seu páy*, I knew his father, *eu conheci a sua mãy*, I knew his mother.

The indefinite article may also be put before infinitives, and then it signifies *to* ; as *he tempo de fallár*, *de dormír*, *de lér*, &c. it is time to speak, to sleep, to read, &c. *eu vou a vér*, *a fallár*, I am going to see, to speak.

N. B. Whenever we meet with *of* and *to* in English, followed by *the*, remember they are the indefinite articles, and then we must use the indefinite article *de*, or *a*, in Portuguese.

When the verb is in the infinitive mood, and serves as nominative to the following verb, put the article *o* before it ; as *o comér e o dormír são as cousas máis necessárias nesta vida*, eating and sleeping are the greatest necessities of life.

When the preposition *in* is followed by the article *the*, or by a pronoun possessive, as *in the*, *in my*, *in thy*, *in his*, we must render it in Portuguese by *em o* or *no*, *em*, *os*, or *nos* for the masculine ; and by *em a* or *na*, *em as* or *nas*, for the feminine : example, in the garden, *em o jardim*, or *no jardim* ; in the street, *em a rúa* or *na rúa* ; in thy book, *em o teu* or *no teu livro* ; in his bed, *em a sua*, or *na sua câma*, &c.

When after the preposition *with*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *com*, we find the article *the*, or a pronoun possessive, as *with the*, *with my*, &c. we may say, *com o*, or *co*, *com a* or *coa*, *com os* or *cos* *com as* or *coas* : example, with the prince, *com o* or *co príncipe* ; with the sword, *com a* or *coa espáda* ; with the eyes, *com os* or *cos olhos* ; with my books, *com os* or *cos meus livros*, &c.



When the preposition *with* is followed by a pronoun possessive, and this by a noun of quality or kindred, as *with your majesty, with your highness, with your excellency, with his brother, &c.* *with* must then be rendered by the Portuguese word *com*, as *com vossa, majestade com vossa alteza, com seu irmão*, without using the article.

Observe, that sometimes the dative and accusative of the indefinite article are not expressed in English, particularly before pronouns personal and proper names; example, *convém a nós*, it behoves us; *António matou a Pédro*, Anthony killed Peter.

### CH A P. III.

#### OF THE NOUNS.

THE Portuguese nouns have various terminations, as will appear hereafter.

They have but two genders, the masculine and feminine.

The Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases, like the Latin, the article only distinguishes the case.

#### *Of Nouns ending in a; and of their Declension.*

Singular.			Plural.	
Nom. <i>a rainha,</i>	the	} queen.	Nom. <i>as rainhas,</i>	the
Gen. <i>da rainha,</i>	of the		Gen. <i>das rainhas,</i>	of the
Dat. <i>á rainha,</i>	to the		Dat. <i>ás rainhas,</i>	to the
Acc. <i>a rainha,</i>	the		Acc. <i>as rainhas,</i>	the
Voc. <i>ó rainha,</i>	O		Voc. <i>ó rainhas,</i>	O
Abl. <i>da ou pélla rainha,</i>	from or by the		Abl. <i>das ou pellas rainhas</i>	from or by the
				} queens.

We have already observed that the Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases; therefore there is

no occasion to display more examples of their declensions, as it is only necessary to change the article according to their gender.

*Of the Gender of Nouns ending in a.*

Nouns ending in *a* are generally of the feminine gender; as *rôsa*, a rose; *janélla*, a window, &c. Except *día*, a day, *planéta* a planet; and other nouns ending in *a*, belonging to a man; as *mariôla*, a porter; *jesuíta*, a jesuit: those derived from the Greek are likewise masculine; as *dógma*, *epigrámma*, *clíma*; except scientific names, as *mathemática*, *theologíá*, &c.

Except also from this general rule some nouns that have the accent upon the last syllable; as *alvará*, a charter, or a prince's letters patent; *Pará*, one of the captainships of the Portuguese America, &c.

Observe, that the plural of nouns ending in *a* is formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular; as likewise the plural of all nouns that terminate in vowels.

Observe also, that nouns ending in *ãa* are of the feminine gender, and form their plural as those ending in *a*.

*Of the Gender of Nouns ending in e.*

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender; as *dente*, a tooth; *válle*, a valley; *véntre* the womb, &c.

The exceptions are *fé*, faith; *fónte*, a fountain; *chave*, a key; *tórre*, a tower; *áve*, a fowl; *cárne*, flesh or meat; *gênte*, people; *mórte*, death; *néve* snow; *nóite*, night; *pónte*, a bridge; *péste*, plague; *párte*, part; *serpênte*, a serpent; *lébre* a hare.

Except also all names of virtues, vices, faculties, and those expressive of the passions of the mind; as *virtúde*, virtue; *santidáde*, holiness; *bondáde*, goodness; *vaidáde*, vanity; *ociosidáde*, idleness, &c.

Thirdly, *idáde*, age ; *velhíce*, old age ; *rusticidáde*, rusticity ; *capacidáde*, capacity ; *felicidáde*, happiness ; *sórte*, fortune ; *árte*, art ; *árvore*, a tree ; *fertilidáde*, fertility ; *séde*, thirst ; *sébe*, a hedge ; *cóuve*, cabbage ; *herdáde*, a farm or manor ; *chaminé*, a chimney ; *paréde*, a wall ; *saúde*, health ; *réde*, a net ; *maré*, the tide ; *fébre*, fever ; *galé*, a gallery, &c.

*Of the Gender of Nouns ending in i.*

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine ; as *éxtasi*, a rapture ; *nébri*, a hawk, &c.

*Of Nouns ending in o.*

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender ; as *livro*, a book ; *fílho*, a son ; *bráço*, an arm ; *vestído*, a garment ; *espélho*, a looking glass, &c. Except *náo*, a ship ; *filhó*, a fritter or pancake ; *eiró*, an eel.

*Of Nouns ending in u.*

All nouns ending in *u* are masculine ; as *perú*, a turkey ; *gróu*, a crane.

*Of Nouns ending in y.*

Nouns ending in *y* are of the masculine gender ; as *réy*, king ; *páy*, father ; *bóy*, ox, &c. except *léy*, a law ; *máy*, a mother.

*Of the other Terminations of Nouns, or of those terminating in Consonants.*

1. All nouns ending in *al* are masculine ; as *sinál* ; a sign or token ; *sal*, salt. Except *cal*, lime, which is feminine, and has no plural.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the letter *l* of the singular into *es* ; as *sináes* from *sinál* ; *animáes* from *animal*.

2. Nouns ending in *ar* are of the masculine gender ; as *ar* air.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *áres* from *ar*.

Some nouns ending in *as* in the plural are feminine, and have no singular; as *mígas*, *exéquias*, &c.

3. Nouns ending in *az* are of the masculine gender; as *rapáz*, a boy; except *paz*, peace. The plural is formed by the addition of *es* to the singular.

4. Nouns ending in *el* are masculine; as *annél*; a ring; *papél*, paper, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *is*; *annéis*, from *annél*: *papéis*, from *papél*.

5. Nouns ending in *em* are of the masculine gender; as *hómem*, a man; *bem*, benefit, &c. Except *órdem*, order; *viágem*, a voyage; *virgem*, a virgin, &c. but *salvágem*, a savage, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*; as *hómens* from *hómem*, &c.

6. Nouns ending in *er* are of the masculine gender; as *podér*, power; *prazér*, pleasure, &c. Except *colhér*, a spoon; *mulhér*, a woman.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *colhéres*, from *colhér*.

7. Nouns ending in *ez* are of the masculine gender; as *freguéz*, a parishioner or a customer; *méz*, month; *arnéz*, *levéz*, *revéz*, &c. Except *surdéz*, deafness; *torquéz*, *véz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *freguézes*, from *freguéz*; but *téz* has no plural.

8. Nouns ending in *il* are of the masculine gender; as *funíl*, a funnel; *barríl*, a barrel.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *s*, as *funís*, from *funíl*, &c. Except *aquátíl*, *fácil*, *pensíl*, &c. which change the *il* into *eis* in the plural, as *fácies*, from *fácil*.

9. Nouns ending in *im* are of the masculine gender, as *espadím*, a little sword.



The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *espadíns* from *espadím*.

10. Nouns ending in *ir* or *yr* are of the masculine gender ; but *mártir* or *mártyr*, a martyr, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

11. All nouns ending in *iz* are of the masculine gender ; as *apprendíz*, an apprentice ; *naríz*, nose ; *verníz*, varnish ; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting ; *chafaríz*, *chamaríz*, &c. Except *aboíz*, *perdíiz*, *raíz*, *codorníz*, *matríiz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *perdíizes* from *perdíiz*.

12. Nouns ending in *ol* are of the masculine gender ; as *anzól*, a hook ; *sól*, the sun, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *anzóes* from *anzól*, &c.

13. Nouns ending in *om* are of the masculine gender ; as *som*, sound ; *dóm*, gift, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *sons* from *som*, &c.

14. Nouns ending in *or* are of the masculine gender ; as *amór* ; love, *temór*, fear, &c. Except *dór*, pain ; *cór*, colour, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *amóres* from *amór*.

Nouns ending in *os* are of the masculine gender ; as *Deós*, God.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *s* into *zes*, as *Déozes*, from *Déos*.

15. Nouns ending in *oz* are of the masculine gender ; as *albernóz*, a Moorish coat ; *arróz*, rice ; *algóz*, hangman, &c. Except *nóz*, a walnut ; *vóz*, voice ; *fóz* the mouth of a river.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

16. Nouns ending in *ul* or *um* are of the masculine gender ; as *sul*, the south ; *Saúl*, Saul, a proper name of a man ; *atúm*, tunny-fish.

The plural of those ending in *ul*, according to the learned *Bluteau*, is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *súes* from *sul* ; *azúes*, from *azúl*, blue, &c. Except *cónsules* from *cónsul*, a consul.

The plural of those ending in *um*, is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *atúns* from *atúm*.

17. Nouns ending in *uz* are of the masculine gender ; as *arcabúz*, an arquebuss.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

18. Nouns ending in *aõ* are of the feminine gender ; as *maõ*, hand ; *composiçaõ*, composition, *oraçaõ*, oration, &c. Except *paõ*, bread ; *anaõ*, a dwarf ; *ouçaõ*, a hand-worm ; *trovaõ*, thunder ; *esquadraõ*, a squadron ; *piaõ*, a child's top ; *borraõ*, a blot with Ink ; *papelaõ*, paste-board ; *chaõ*, the ground, *quinaõ*, a share.

There is no certain rule for the formation of the plural of the nouns ending in *aõ* ; because some change the *aõ*, of the singular into *ães*, as *Alemães*, from *Alemaõ*, a German ; *capitães*, from *capitaõ*, a captain ; *cães*, from *caõ*, a dog ; *pães*, from *paõ*, a loaf, &c. Some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ãos* ; as *cidadãos*, from *cidadeaõ*, a citizen ; *christãos*, from *christaõ*, a christian ; *cortezãos* from *cortezão* a courtier ; *villãos*, from *villaõ*, a villain, &c. Some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ões* ; as *esquadrões*, from *esquadraõ*, a squadron ; *trovões*, from *trovaõ*, thunder ; *conclusões*, from *conclusaõ*, a conclusion ; *orações*, from *oraçaõ*, an oration ; and generally all the Portuguese nouns may be easily made English, by changing their termination *çaõ* into the English termination *tion*, as *declinaçaõ*, declension or declination, *consideraçaõ*, consideration, &c. and these are of the feminine gender.

19 All nouns signifying a male must be of the inasculine gender ; as *dúque*, duke ; *marquéz*, a marquis ; *cónde*, count ; and those denoting a female are always feminine.

Two general rules may be formed from what has been said concerning the formation of the plural of nouns, viz.

I. That all nouns ending in any of the vowels have their plural formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular.

II. That the plural of nouns ending in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

#### *Of Augmentatives.*

The Portuguese have their augmentatives formed by the increase of one or two syllables, which they add to the end of their nouns, and which serve either to augment the signification of nouns, or to declare a thing contemptible ; thus, from *hómem*, a man, they form, *hómemzarro*, a great strong man ; *tólo*, a fool, *toleiraõ*, a great fool, &c. and some others that may be learned by use. They have also their augmentatives for the feminine ; as *molheróna*, a great stout woman ; *toleiróna*, &c.

There are a great many nouns that appear, by their termination, to be augmentatives, though they are not ; as, *forão*, a ferret ; *atafóna*, an ass or a horse-mill, &c.

#### *Of Diminutives.*

The diminutives lessen the signification of their primitives.

The diminutives in the Portuguese language are always formed by changing the last vowel of the primitives into *inho* ; but they denote either smallness of things, or kindness and flattery ; as *bichinho*, a little worm, from *bicho*, a worm ; *coitadinho*, from *coitado*, a poor little man ; *bonitinho*, a little pretty

person or thing, from *bonito*, pretty. Sometimes they are formed by adding *zinho* to the primitives; as *caõzinho*, a little dog, from *caõ*, a dog, *irmaõzinho*, dear little brother, from *irmaõ*, &c.

The diminutives that serve for the feminine have their termination in *inha*, or *zinha*; as *maõzinha*, a little hand, from *maõ*, a hand; *cabecinha*, a little head, from *cabeça*, a head. It may be seen from the last example, that the diminutives serving for the feminine and ending in *inha*, are formed by changing the last syllable *a* of the primitive into *inha*.

Observe that many nouns appear to be diminutives without being so; as *móinho*, a mill; *espinha*, a fish bone.

Note, the diminutives in Portuguese convey sometimes a bad meaning, and denote contempt.

#### *Of Nouns Adjective.*

All adjectives ending in *o* make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as *dôuta*, from *dôuto*, learned; but *mão*, bad, makes *má* in the feminine.

Those which end in *ão* have their feminine in *ãa*; as, *sãa*, from *saõ*, healthy; *louçãa*, from *louçãõ*, brisk, gay, beautiful; *mẽaa*, from *mẽãõ*, middling, ordinary.

Those ending in *e* are common to both genders; as, *fôrte*, strong, &c.

Those which end in *m* make their feminine by adding an *a* to the masculine; as, *húma*, from *hum*, one; *algúma*, from *algúm*, some, &c. and sometimes by changing the *m* into *a*; as, *commúa*, from *commúm*, common; *bóa*, from *bom*, good.

Those ending in *u* make their feminine by adding an *a* to the masculine, as *núa*, from *nu*, naked; *crúa*, from *cru*, raw.

Those ending in *ez* are common to both genders; as *cortéz*, civil, kind; *capáz*, capable, &c. except some which make the feminine, by adding *a* to the



masculine; as, *Francéza*, from *Francéz*, French; *Portuguéza*, from *Portuguéz*, Portuguese.

*Espanhól*, Spanish, makes *Espanhóla* in the feminine: but generally those which end in *l* are common to both genders; as *affável*, affable; *cruél*, cruel, &c.

### *Of the Comparison of Adjectives.*

The comparison of adjectives is the way of increasing their signification by certain degrees, which are three, viz. the positive, comparative and superlative.

The positive lays down the natural signification of the adjective; as, *nóbre*, noble; *gránde*, great.

The comparative raises it to a higher degree, by comparing it with the positive, which in Portuguese is performed by the adverbs *máis*, more; *ménos*, less; as, *máis nóbre*, more noble; *ménos bélla*, less handsome.

There are some adjectives which do not admit of *máis* or *ménos* before them; as *celéste*, *nascído*, *comprádo*, *desterrádo*, &c.

There are four Portuguese comparatives which end in *or*: they may also be expressed by *máis*, more, before their positive; as,

*Mayór*, greater, *máis grande*.

*Menór*, less, *máis pequéno*.

*Peór*, worse, *máis roím*.

*Melhór*, better, *máis bóm*.

To which may be added *superiór*, superior; *inferiór*, inferior; *deteriór*; and some others.

Observe, that there can be no comparison made without the word *than*; and that this word is expressed in Portuguese by *que*. Ex. *Máis cláro que o sól*, clearer than the sun; *máis bráncó que a néve*, more white than the snow. The particle *que* is sometimes preceded by the word *do*. Ex. *isto he máis do que éu lhe disse*, this is more than I told him;

*hé máis prudente do que parece*, he is more wise than it appears.

N. B. The comparatives *superiôr*, *inferiôr*, and some others, do not require *que* before the second term but the dative of the articles, viz. *á*, *ás*, *áo*; *aos*: Examp. *O ótro he superiôr a este*, the other is superior to this.

When the Portuguese have a mind to heighten their comparisons, they make use of, *muíto máis*, a great deal or much more; as also of, *muíto ménos*, a great deal or much less. Ex. *Cæsar he muíto máis estimádo que Pompéo*, Cæsar is much more esteemed than Pompey: *Pompéo fci muíto ménos feliz que Cæsar*, Pompey was much less happy than Cæsar.

#### *Of the Superlative.*

The Portuguese superlative is formed from the noun adjective, by changing the last letter into *íssimo* for the masculine, and into *íssima* for the feminine: thus, from *béllô* is formed *bellíssimo* and *bellíssima*, most handsome. But sometimes the superlative is formed by adding *muíto*, very, to the positive; as, *muíto álto*, very tall.

Observe that some superlatives are differently formed; as *frigidíssimo*, from *frío*, cold; *amicíssimo*, from *amigo*, friend; *antiquíssimo*, from *antigo*, ancient; *capacíssimo*, from *capáz*, capable; *nobilíssimo*, from *nóbre*, noble; *acérrimo*, from *ácre*, sharp, or acerb; *riquíssimo*, from *ríco*, rich; *fertilíssimo*, from *fértil*, fruitful; *boníssimo*, from *bóm*, good; *fidelíssimo*, from *fiél*, faithful; *sacratíssimo*, from *sagrádo*, sacred, &c.

The *most* is expressed also in Portuguese by *o máis* and *a máis*; as the most fair, or fairest, *o máis béllô*, *a máis bélla*. But there are some adjectives which do not admit of *muíto*, very, *o máis*, or *a máis*; as *mórto*, *desterrado*, &c.

Observe, that by changing the last letter of the superlatives into *amente*, superlative adverbs are

composed ; as, from *doutíssimo*, learned ; *doutíssimamente*, most learnedly, &c. But the positive adverbs are formed by adding *ménte* to the feminine of the positive ; as *doutaménte*, learnedly, from *dóuta*, the feminine of *dóuto* ; *prudenteménte*, prudently, from *prudénte*, prudent.

*Of Numeral Nouns ; and first, of Cardinal.*

The cardinal nouns are such as express the number of things ; as,

<i>Húm</i> . . . . .	one	<i>Vinte e dous</i> . . . . .	twenty-two
<i>Dous</i> . . . . .	two	<i>Vinte e três, &amp;c.</i>	twenty-three &c.
<i>Três</i> . . . . .	three	<i>Trinta</i> . . . . .	thirty
<i>Quátro</i> . . . . .	four	<i>Quarênta</i> . . . . .	forty
<i>Cinco</i> . . . . .	five	<i>Cincoênta</i> . . . . .	fifty
<i>Sêis</i> . . . . .	sixty	<i>Sessênta</i> . . . . .	sixty
<i>Sête</i> . . . . .	seven	<i>Setênta</i> . . . . .	seventy
<i>Oúto or ôito</i> . . . . .	eight	<i>Oitênta</i> . . . . .	eighty
<i>Nóve</i> . . . . .	nine	<i>Novênta</i> . . . . .	ninety
<i>Déz</i> . . . . .	ten	<i>Cém</i> . . . . .	a hundred
<i>Ónze</i> . . . . .	eleven	<i>Duzêntos</i> . . . . .	two hundred
<i>Dóze</i> . . . . .	twelve	<i>Trezêntos</i> . . . . .	three hundred
<i>Trêze</i> . . . . .	thirteen	<i>Mil</i> . . . . .	a thousand
<i>Quátôrze</i> . . . . .	fourteen	<i>Dous mil</i> . . . . .	two thousand
<i>Quínza</i> . . . . .	fifteen	<i>Milhaõ or cônto</i>	a million
<i>Dezasêis</i> . . . . .	sixteen	<i>Húma dezêna</i>	half a score
<i>Dezasête</i> . . . . .	seventeen	<i>Húma duzía</i> . . . . .	a dozen
<i>Dezôuto</i> . . . . .	eighteen	<i>Húma vintêna</i> . . . . .	a score
<i>Dezanóve</i> . . . . .	nineteen	<i>Dúas vintênas</i> . . . . .	two score
<i>Vinte</i> . . . . .	twenty	<i>Três vintênas</i>	three score
<i>Vinte e húm</i>	twenty-one		

Observe, that all the cardinals that are adjective nouns are not declined, being of the common gender, except *hum húma*, one ; *dous dúas*, two ; and those composed of *cênto*, a hundred ; as *duzêntos*, two hundred ; *quátro cêntos*, *quátro cêntas*, four hundred, &c. and when the feminine *húma* is preceded by *á*, and followed by *á outra*, then *húma* signifies *first*, and *á outra*, *secondly*.

The plural, *húns*, *húmas*, is taken sometimes instead of *algúns*, *algúmas*, signifying some ; as *húns reys*, some kings ; *húmas rainhas*, some queens.

N. B. *Cênto* loses *to* before a noun, either masculine or feminine, and the *n* is changed into *m*; therefore you must say, *cem soldádos*, not *cênto soldádos*. It only retains *to* and *n* when it is followed by another number, as *cênto e húm*, &c. a hundred and one, &c. and when it is substantive.

N. B. Sometimes *cênto* is made a substantive; as *húm cênto de castânhas*, one hundred of chesnuts; likewise all the cardinal numbers, when preceded by an article, or by another noun of number, as *o cinco de páos*, the five of clubs; *húm sête*, a seven.

The cardinal number is rendered into English by the ordinal, when it expresses the day of the month, or the date of any act; as, *chegbu a quátro de Máyo*, he arrived the fourth day of May.

### Ordinal Nouns.

Ordinal nouns are such as express the order of things; as,

<i>Primêiro</i> ... .. first	<i>Décimo-oitávo</i> .. .. eighteenth
<i>Segúndo</i> ... .. second	<i>Décimo-nôno</i> .. .. nineteenth
<i>Tercêiro</i> ... .. third	<i>Vigésimo</i> , or <i>ventésimo</i> .. .. twentieth
<i>Quárto</i> ... .. fourth	[tieth
<i>Quínto</i> ... .. fifth	<i>Vigésimo-primêiro</i> .. .. one and
<i>Sêxto</i> ... .. sixth	[twentieth
<i>Sétimo</i> ... .. seventh	<i>Trigésimo</i> .. .. thirtieth
<i>Oitávo</i> ... .. eighth	<i>Quadrágésimo</i> , or <i>quarantésimo</i> .. .. fortieth
<i>Nôno</i> ... .. ninth	<i>Quinquágésimo</i> .. .. fiftieth
<i>Décimo</i> ... .. tenth	<i>Sexágésimo</i> .. .. sixtieth
<i>Undécimo</i> , or <i>onzêno</i> , eleventh	<i>Septuágésimo</i> .. .. seventieth
<i>Duodécimo</i> ... .. twelfth	<i>Octágésimo</i> .. .. eightieth
<i>Décimo-tércio</i> ... .. thirteenth	<i>Nonágésimo</i> .. .. ninetieth
<i>Décimo-quárto</i> ... .. fourteenth	<i>Centésimo</i> .. .. the hundredth
<i>Décimo-quínto</i> ... .. fifteenth	<i>Millésimo</i> .. .. the thousandth
<i>Décimo-sêxto</i> ... .. sixteenth	<i>Último</i> .. .. the last
<i>Décimo-séptimo</i> .. .. seventeenth	

The proportionable numbers are, *simplez*, *duplicádo* or *dobrádo*, *triplicádo* or *tríplice* or *tresdobrádo*, *quadruplicádo* or *quádruplo*, *cêntuplo*; a single, double, threefold, fourfold, a hundredfold.



The distributive nouns are, *hum á hum*, one by one; *dous á dous*, two by two.

In English all ordinal numbers may be formed into adverbs: but in Portuguese they have only *primeiraménte*, and *secundáriaménte*, or *segundáriamente*, first, secondly; and to express thirdly, fourthly, &c. they say, *em tercéiro lugar*, *em quáрто lugar*, in the third place, in the fourth place.

*A Method (for those who understand French) to learn a great many Portuguese words in a short time.*

We must observe, that the French syllable *cha* is generally expressed in Portuguese by *ca*, rejecting the *h*. Examp. *Charbon*, *charité* *chasteté*, *chapón*, *chapéllé*, *chapître*, &c. the Portuguese say, *carvaõ caridáde castidáde*, *capaõ*, *capélla capítulo*, &c. Observe also the following rules.

French words ending in *ance*, or *ence*; as, *constance*, *vigilance*, *cleménce*, *prudénce*, &c. in Portuguese end in *ância*, or *ência*; as *constância*, *vigilância*, *clemência*, *prudência*, &c.

*Agne* makes *ânha*; *montagne*, *montânha*; *campagne*, *campânha*.

*Ie* makes *ia*; *comédie*, *comédia*. Here the accent is upon the *e*, and not upon the *i*, as in French; *poesie*, *poesía*.

*Oire* makes *ória*; *gloire*, *glória*; *victoire*, *victória*.

*Ure* makes *úra*; *imposture*, *impostúra*; *figure*, *figúra*.

*Ison* makès *zaõ*; *raison*, *razaõ*; *prison*, *prizaõ*

*On* makes *aõ*; *charbon*, *carvaõ*; *baron*, *baraõ*.

*Ulier* makes *ulár*: *regulier*, *regulár*; *particulier*, *particulár*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in e*

*Ant*, *ánte*; *vigilant*, *vigilánte*; *amant*, *amánte*.

*Ent*, adjective, *énte*; *prudent*, *prudénte*; *diligent*, *diligénte*.

*Té* makes *dáde*; *pureté*, *puridáde*; *liberalité*, *liberalidáde*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in vel.*

*Able*, *vel*; *louable*, *louvável*; *aimable*, *amável*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in ez.*

*Ois*, names of nations, *ez*, *François*, *Francéz*; *Anglois*, *Ingléz*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in o*

*Ain*, and *ien*, names of nations, *áno*; *Romain*, *Románo*; *Italien*, *Italiáno*; *Napolitain*, *Napolitáno*.

*Aire*, *áριο*: *salaire*, *salário*; *téméraire*, *temerário*.

*Eau*, *eo*, *chapeau*; *chapéo*.

*Ent*, substantive, *énto*; *sacrement*, *sacraménto*.

*Eux*, *óso*; *généreux*; *generóso*; *gracieux*, *gracióso*.

*If*, *ivo*; *actif*, *actívo*, *passif*, *passívo*.

*C*, *co*; *porc*, *pórco*; *Turc*, *Túrco*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in or.*

*Eur*, *or*; *terreur*, *terrór*; *humeur*, *humór*; *chaleur*, *calór*.

### *Change of Terminations of the Verbs and Participles.*

*Er*, in the infinitive mood of the first conjugation, makes *ár*; *aimer*; *amár*; *chanter*, *cantár*.

*Ir* makes *ír*, in the infinitive mood; as, *partir*, *partír*; *sentir*, *sentír*.

*Oir* makes *ér* in the infinitive mood; as, *concevoir* *concebér*.

The participles in *é* make *ádo*; *aimé*, *amádo*; *parlé* *falládo*.

The participles in *i* make *ído*: *dormi*, *dormído*; *menti*, *mentído*.

The participles in *u* make *do*; as, *conçu*, *concebído*, *entendu* *entendído*.

There are a great many Portuguese words that have no manner of analogy with the French, which prevent these rules from being general.

## CHAP. IV.

## OF PRONOUNS.

THE pronouns are personal, conjunctive, mixed, positive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or improper.

*Of Personal Pronouns.*

The pronouns personal are *eu* and *nos* for the first person; they serve for the masculine and the feminine.

*Tu* and *vos* for the second: these serve also for the masculine and feminine.

*E'lle*, for the third person of the masculine gender; and *elles* in the plural.

*E'lla*, for the third person of the feminine gender, makes in the plural *éllas*.

The pronouns personal are declined with the article indefinite, *de, a, á, da*.

*The Declension of Personal Pronouns.*

## FIRST PERSON.

Singular Number.	Plural Number.
Nom. <i>Eu</i> , I	Nom. <i>nós</i> , we
Gen. <i>de mim</i> , of me	Gen. <i>de nós</i> , of us
Dat. <i>a mim</i> , to me	Dat. <i>a nós</i> , or <i>nos</i> , us
Acc. <i>a mim</i> , me	Acc. <i>a nós</i> , us
Abl. <i>de mim</i> , or <i>por mim</i> , from or by me	Abl. <i>de nós</i> , or <i>por nós</i> , from or by us

*With me* is rendered by *comigo*; and sometimes they add the pronoun *mêsmo* to it; *me* is expressed by *me* in the Portuguese; as speak to me, *fallái-me*; tell me, *dizéi-me*: send me, *mandái-me*; write to me, *escrevéi-me*; *elle disse-me*, he told me, &c.

*With us* is rendered in Portuguese by *com nósco*.

*Us* is rendered by *nos*. Examp. tell us, *dizéi-nos* ; give us, *dái-nos* ; show us, *mostrái-nos* : *elle dissé-nos* he told us, &c. In these examples *us* is not a pronoun personal, but conjunctive, as you will see hereafter.

## SECOND PERSON.

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. <i>tu</i> , thou	Nom. <i>vós</i> , ye or you
Gen. <i>de ti</i> , of thee	Gen. <i>de vós</i> , or <i>vós</i> , you
Dat. <i>a ti</i> , or <i>te</i> , to thee	Dat. <i>a vós</i> , or <i>vós</i> , you
Acc. <i>a ti</i> , or <i>te</i> , thee	Acc. <i>a vós</i> , or <i>vós</i> , you
Abl. <i>de ti</i> , or <i>por ti</i> , from or by thee	Abl. <i>de vós</i> , or <i>por vós</i> , from or by you

*With thee* is rendered by *contígo* ; and sometimes they add to it the pronoun *mésmo*. *You*, or *yourself*, after imperatives are rendered by *vos*, and not *vós* ; as, be you contented, *contentái vos* ; show yourself, *mostrái-vos* : hide yourself, *escondéi-vos*.

*Thee*, or *thyself*, are expressed after imperatives by *te* ; as *móstrate*, show yourself.

*With you* is rendered in Portuguese by *com vósco*.

## THIRD PERSON. (For the Masculine).

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. <i>éle</i> , he or it	Nom. <i>éles</i> , they
Gen. <i>déle</i> , of him or of it.	Gen. <i>déles</i> , of them
Dat. <i>a éle</i> , to him, or to it	Dat. <i>a éles</i> , to them
Acc. <i>a éle</i> , him, or it	Acc. <i>a éles</i> , them
Abl. <i>déle</i> , or <i>por éle</i> , from or by him, or it	Abl. <i>déles</i> , or <i>por éles</i> , from or by them

The Portuguese have no particular pronoun, as the English *it*, for things that are inanimate.

The pronoun *him*, or to *him*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese, by *lhe*, and *them*, or to *them*, by *lhes*.

*With him* is rendered in Portuguese sometimes by *com éle*, and sometimes by *comsigo*, to which they add the pronoun *mésmo*.



## THIRD PERSON. (Feminine).

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. <i>élla</i> , she or it	Nom. <i>éllas</i> , they
Gen. <i>délla</i> , of her or of it	Gen. <i>déllas</i> , of them
Dat. <i>a élla</i> , to her or to it	Dat. <i>a éllas</i> , to them
Acc. <i>a élla</i> , her or it	Acc. <i>a éllas</i> , them
Abl. <i>délla</i> , or <i>por élla</i> , from or by her or it	Abl. <i>déllas</i> , or <i>por éllas</i> , from or by them

The pronoun *her* or *to her*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese by *lhe*, and *them*, or *to them*, by *lhes*; as will be seen in the pronouns conjunctive.

*With her* is rendered in Portuguese by *com élla* or *comsigo*.

*Of the Pronoun si*, himself, or one's self.

There is another pronoun personal that serves indifferently for the masculine and feminine: this is *si*, one's self. It has no nominative.

Gen. *de si*, of one's self, himself, or herself.

Dat. *a si*, to one's self, &c.

Acc. *a si*, one's self, &c.

Abl. *de si*, *por si*, from or by one's self.

It is joined with the pronoun *mêsmo* or *mêsma*; as *de* or *por si mêmso*, by himself; *por si mêmso*, or *de si mêmso*, by herself; *o hómem não ama senão a si mêmso*, man loves himself only; *quem nao hé bóm senão para si, não hé bem que viva*, who cares for nobody but himself, does not deserve to live; *o vício he abominável de si mêmso*, vice is in itself hateful; *a terra de si*, or *de si mêmso he fértil*, the earth is fruitful of itself.

Observe that they join also the pronoun *mêsmo* to pronouns personal, as the French do with their pronoun *même*, viz.



<i>Eu mésmo</i> , myself	<i>nós mesmos</i> , ourselves
<i>Tu mésmo</i> , thyself	<i>vós mesmos</i> , yourselves
<i>E'lle mésmo</i> , himself	<i>élles mesmos</i> - } themselves
<i>E'lla mésmo</i> , herself	<i>éllas mesmas</i> - }
<i>o hómem mésmo</i> , man himself;	<i>a mésmo virtúde</i> , virtue itself.

1st. Observe, that *mésmo* with the article is also an adjective, signifying the *same*; thus *o mésmo*, *a mésmo*, *os mesmos*, *as mesmas*, the same, relating to some nouns expressed or understood,

2dly. Note, Also that the adjective *óutro*, other, is joined to the plural of the pronouns personal, *I* and *thou*; thus, *nós óutros*, we; *vós óutros*, you.

3dly. *Comsigo* may be rendered in English (as we have said above) by *with him* and *with her*; and it may be rendered also by *with them* in the plural; and sometimes by *about him*, *about her* or *about them*. Examp. *Elle* or *élla*, *nunca tráz dinhéiro comsigo*, he, or she, never has money about him, or about her.

### Of Conjunctive Pronouns.

The pronouns conjunctive are so called, because they always come immediately before or after the verb that governs them.

The pronouns conjunctive bear a great resemblance to the pronouns personal; the pronouns personal are,

*Eu*, I; *tu*, thou; *élle*, he; *nós*, we; *vós*, ye; *élles*, they.

There are seven pronouns conjunctive, viz. *me*, to me, or me: *te*, to thee, or thee: *se*, to himself, or himself, to herself, or herself; *lhe* to him, or him, to her, or her; *nos*, to us, or us; *vos*, to you, or you, *lhes*, to them, or them.

#### EXAMPLE.

*Isto me agráda*, this pleases me; *hé-me necessário*, I want.

*Déos te vê*, God sees thee.

*Ella se lóuva*, she praises herself.

*Eu lhe diréi*, I will tell him, or I will tell her.

*Eu lhes promettí*, I promised them: as well for the masculine as the feminine.

The pronoun conjunctive, *lhe*, is always put after the verb, when it is in the imperative mood; as *dizéi-lhe* tell him; *cort ái-lhe as ázas*, cut his wings; but when the verb is in some other mood, it may be put either before or after it; as *élle lhe cortóu*, or *élle cortóu-lhe a cabeça*, he has cut off his head. The same observation applies to the other pronouns conjunctive.

The pronoun conjunctive, *se*, is sometimes followed by *me*, *lhe*, &c. as *offeréce-se me*, it is offered to me; *representóu-se lhe*, it was represented to him, &c.

1st Note, that the pronouns conjunctive are very often joined to a verb, preceded or followed by the verb *havér*. Examp. *Dar-lhe héi tanta pancáda*, or *éu lhe héi de dar tanta pancáda, que, &c.* I will cudgel him so much, that, &c.

2dly. *Lhe* is sometimes rendered in English by *you*. Examp. *Que lhe paréce aquillo?* What do you think of that? *assénta no que lhe digo*, be persuaded, or believe what I tell you.

### *Of Mixed Pronouns.*

There are some pronouns in Portuguese which are composed of the pronouns personal and conjunctive, and which therefore are called mixed.

These pronouns are formed by changing the letter *e* of the pronoun conjunctive into *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine; thus, *to me of it*, instead of *me o*, or *me a*, you must say, *mo* or *ma*. In like manner, instead of *lhe o* or *lhe a* you must say, *lho* or *lha*, &c. as you may observe in the following pronouns mixed, or rather contracted.

<i>mo</i> , m.	{ me of it or it or him to me.	<i>to</i>	{ thee of it or it or him to thee.
<i>ma</i> , f.	{ me of it or it or her to me.	<i>ta</i>	{ thee of it or it or her to thee.
<i>mos</i> , m.	{ me of them or them to me.	<i>tos</i> , m.	{ thee of them or them to thee.
<i>mas</i> , f.		<i>tas</i> f.	
<i>selo</i> , m.	{ it to himself, to herself, or to themselves.		
<i>sela</i> , f.	{ it to herself, to himself, or to themselves.		
<i>selos</i> , m.	{ them to himself, to herself, or to themselves.		
<i>selas</i> , f.	{ them to herself, to himself or to themselves.		
<i>lho</i> , m.	{ to him, or to her of it. or to him, or to her		
<i>lha</i> , f.	{ to him, or to her of it or it to him, or to her.		
<i>lhos</i> , m.	{ to them of it, to him of them, or to her of them.		
<i>lhas</i> , f.	{ to them of it, to him of them, or to her of them.		
<i>nolo</i> m.	{ us of it, or it to us.		
<i>nola</i> f.	{ us of it, or it to us.		
<i>nolos</i> , m. p.	{ them to us.		
<i>nolas</i> , f. p.	{ them to us.		
<i>volo</i> , m.	{ you of it, or it of you.		
<i>vola</i> , f.			
<i>volos</i> , m. p.	{ you of them, or them to you.		
<i>volas</i> , f. p.			

## EXAMPLES.

*Pára dár-lho*, to give it to him or to her.

*Dái-mo*, give it to me.

*Eu to daréi*, I'll give it you.

*Entrégo-to*, I deliver it to you.

*Dize-lho*, you tell it him, or her.

*Entréga-lhos*, deliver them to him, or to her.

*Lá selo haja*, leave that to himself.

*Elle nolo disse*, he told us of it.

*Eu volos mandaréi*, I'll send to you.

If the verbs are in the infinitive, the pronouns mixed may be put either before or after the verbs : as, *para dizérmo*, or *para mo dizér*, to tell me it ; but if the verbs are in the gerund, the pronouns

mixed must be transposed; as, *dizêndomo*, and not *mo dizêndo*, in telling me it.

You must make use of these pronouns, both masculine and feminine, according to the gender of the thing named, sent or delivered, and not of the person to whom the thing is said, sent, given, &c.

*Of Possessive Pronouns.*

Pronouns possessive, so called, because they denote that the thing spoken of belongs to the person or thing they are connected with, are of two sorts, absolute and relative. See the remarks hereafter.

The English have no article in the nominative before the pronouns possessive; but the Portuguese have, as, *my*, *o meu*, *a minha*, fem. Plur. *os meus*, *as minhas*, fem.

The pronouns possessive in Portuguese are the following:

Sing. <i>mêu</i> , m. <i>minha</i> f.	} my
Plur. <i>mêus</i> , m. <i>minhas</i> , f.	
Sing. <i>têu</i> , m. <i>tua</i> , f.	} thy.
Plur. <i>têus</i> , m. <i>tuas</i> . f.	
Sing. <i>sêu</i> , m.	} his or its.
Plur. <i>sêus</i> , m.	
Sing. <i>súa</i> , f.	} her or its.
Plur. <i>súas</i> , f.	
Sing. <i>nôssô</i> , m. <i>nóssa</i> , f.	} our.
Plur. <i>nôssos</i> , m. <i>nóssas</i> , f.	
Sing. <i>vôssô</i> , m. <i>vóssa</i> , f.	} your.
Plur. <i>vôssos</i> , m. <i>vóssas</i> , f.	

The pronouns possessive are declined with the definite article *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine.

EXAMPLE.

Singular.

Nom. *o meu livro*, my book.

Gen. *do meu livro*, of my book.

Dat. *ao meu livro*, to my book.

Acc. *mêu livro*, my book.

Abl. *do ou pélo meu livro*, from or by my book.



## Plural.

Nom. *os meus livros*, my books.

Gen. *dos meus livros*, of my books.

Dat. *aos meus livros*, to my books.

Abl. *dos ou péllos meus livros*, from or by my books.

Decline all the other masculines after the same manner, and their feminines by the article *a*; as my house; *a minha casa*; of my house, *da minha casa*, &c.

Note, you must not use the definite article when the pronouns possessive precede nouns of quality, as well as those of kindred, but the indefinite article *de*, *a*, &c.

## EXAMPLE.

*Vossa magestade*, your majesty.

*De vossa magestade*, of your majesty, &c.

*Mêu páy*, my father.

*De mêu páy*, of my father, &c.

From the above examples it appears that nouns declined by the definite article have no article in the nominative.

Though the definite article is sometimes used before nouns of kindred, yet we ought not to use it, according to the old proverb: *tu vivendo bonos, scribendo sequare peritos*.

*Seu* is sometimes used instead of *vosso* and *vossa*, in the polite way of speaking: thus, *têngo o seu livro*, I have your book; *falléi ao seu criado*, I spoke to your servant; *os séus ólhos são formósos*, your eyes are handsome.

*Remarks upon the Possessives.*

The pronouns possessive absolute always come before the noun they belong to. We have expressed them above.



Pronouns possessive relative are so called because they not being joined to their substantive, suppose it either expressed before, or understood, and are related to it. They are the following :

	Masc.	Fem.	
Sing.	<i>Mêu</i>	<i>mínha</i>	} mine
Plur.	<i>Mêus</i>	<i>mínhas</i>	
Sing.	<i>Têu</i>	<i>túa</i>	} thine
Plur.	<i>Têus</i>	<i>túas</i>	
Sing.	<i>Sêu</i>	<i>súa, hers</i>	
Plur.	<i>Sêus</i>	<i>súas, theirs</i>	
Sing.	<i>Nóssó</i>	<i>nóssa</i>	} ours
Plur.	<i>Nóssos</i>	<i>nóssas</i>	
Sing.	<i>Vóssó</i>	<i>vóssa</i>	} yours
Plur.	<i>Vóssos</i>	<i>vóssas</i>	

To express in Portuguese *it is mine, it is thine, &c.* we must say *he mêu, he têu, &c.*

The pronouns possessive absolute do not agree in gender with the noun of the possessor, as in English, but with that of the thing possessed ; as, *a mãy âma a sêu filho*, the mother loves her son ; *o pái âma a sua filha* the father loves his daughter. Thus the pronoun masculine *sêu*, in Portuguese, is sometimes rendered by *her* in English, and the feminine *súa* by *his*.

The same observation is to be made upon the possessives relative, according to the gender of the noun that is understood ; we say of a hat (for instance) belonging to a lady, *he o sêu*, it is hers ; because the noun understood, viz. *chapéo*, hat, is of the masculine gender.

We have already said, that *sêu* and *súa*, are sometimes rendered into English by *your*, when they are absolute : they are also sometimes rendered into English by *yours*, when they are pronouns relative, speaking politely of any thing belonging to a gentleman or lady, *he o sêu*, or *he a sua*, it is yours ;

but if the gentleman or lady is not present, or if they are not directly spoken to, though present, then the pronouns *séu* and *súa* must be rendered into English by *his* or *hers*.

Note, That the pronouns possessive absolute, in Portuguese, agree also in number with the noun of the thing possessed; hence we say *a sua história*, its history, speaking of a kingdom, province, &c. or, his history, speaking of any history composed by a man; or her history, speaking of that written by a woman; or, their history, speaking of that written by several hands, or of several people. From this example it will be seen, that the Portuguese have no particular pronoun possessive for things that are inanimate, corresponding with the English pronoun *its*. Hence, finally, it follows, that when the Portuguese possessives *séu* and *súa* are relative, they are rendered into English by *his*, or *hers*, or *theirs*, according to the gender and number of the noun of the possessor that is understood.

The third pronoun personal, *délle*, of him, *déllas* of them, *délla*, of her, *déllas*, of them are sometimes added, to denote more plainly whose thing it is they speak of; as *o séu livro, déllas*, their book; as *súas palavras délla*, her words, &c.

The possessives absolute are left out when they are preceded by a verb, or by a pronoun conjunctive, which sufficiently denote whose thing it is they speak of; the article alone being sufficient; as *dévo-lhe a vida*, I owe my life to him, or to it; *dóe-me a barríga*, my belly aches.

When the pronouns possessive absolute are before nouns of different genders in the same sentence, and with which they are grammatically construed, they ought to be repeated; as, *séu pái e sua mãy*, his father and mother: not *séu pái e mãy*.

The pronoun possessive absolute is also used as in the following case, when we use the pos-

sessive relative; a friend of mine, *hum dos meus amigos*.

The possessives *mínha, túa, súa, nóssa, vóssa*, may be also relative, but with a different meaning. Examples; *Levaréi a minha avante*, I will insist upon it, I will obtain it; *élle levará a súa avante*, he will insist upon it, he will do it; *levái a vóssa avante*, go on with your resolution; *fazér das súas*, to play tricks, to dodge.

*Os meus, os séus, &c.* signify my relations, or my friends, thy relations, or thy friends; as, *os séus não o quérem*, his parents or relations do not like him; *déixa-o hir com os séus*, let him go with his people, his countrymen, &c.

When the pronoun possessive is accompanied by a pronoun demonstrative, we do not put the article in the nominative; we do not say *o éste meu livro*, but *éste meu livro*, this book of mine. But in all other cases the indefinite article is used; as *d' éste* or *déste vosso livro*, &c.

### *Of the Pronouns Demonstrative.*

They are called pronouns demonstrative, because they serve to point out or demonstrate any thing or person; as, this book, *éste livro*; that man, *aquélle hómem*.

There are three principal demonstratives, viz. *éste*, this; *ésse*, that; *aquélle*, that; *éste* shews the thing or person that is just near or by us; *ésse* shews the thing that is a little farther, or near the person; and *aquélle* shews what is very distant from the person who speaks, or is spoken of, and is expressed in English by *that there*, or *yonder*. *Esse, éssa*, are used in writing to any person to express the place or town wherein he dwells; as *ténho falládo néssa cidade com múitosia migos*, I have spoken in your city with many friends.

These Pronouns are declined thus :

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular	Nom. <i>éste</i>	<i>ésta</i>	<i>ísto</i>	this
	Gen. <i>désta</i>	<i>désta</i>	<i>dísto</i>	of this
	Dat. <i>a éste</i>	<i>a ésta</i>	<i>a ísto</i>	to this
	Acc. <i>éste</i>	<i>ésta</i>	<i>ísto</i>	this
	Abl. <i>déste</i>	<i>désta</i>	<i>dísto</i>	from this
Plural	Nom. <i>éste</i> s	<i>ésta</i> s		these
	Gen. <i>déste</i> s	<i>désta</i> s	No Neuter	of these
	Dat. <i>a éste</i> s	<i>a ésta</i> s		to these
	Acc. <i>éste</i> s	<i>ésta</i> s		these
	Abl. <i>déste</i> s	<i>désta</i> s		from these
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular	Nom. <i>ésse</i>	<i>éssa</i>	<i>ísso</i>	that or it
	Gen. <i>déssse</i>	<i>déssa</i>	<i>dísso</i>	of that, &c.
	Dat. <i>a ésse</i>	<i>a éssa</i>	<i>a ísso</i>	to that
	Acc. <i>ésse</i>	<i>éssa</i>	<i>ísso</i>	that
	Abl. <i>déssse</i>	<i>déssa</i>	<i>dísso</i>	from that
Plural	Nom. <i>ésses</i>	<i>éssas</i>		those
	Gen. <i>désses</i>	<i>déssas</i>	No Neuter	of those
	Dat. <i>a ésses</i>	<i>a éssas</i>		to those
	Acc. <i>ésses</i>	<i>éssas</i>		those
	Abl. <i>désses</i>	<i>déssas</i>		from those
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular	Nom. <i>aquélle</i>	<i>aquélla</i>	<i>aquílllo</i>	that
	Gen. <i>daquélle</i>	<i>daquélla</i>	<i>daquílllo</i>	of that
	Dat. <i>a aquélle</i>	<i>a aquélla</i>	<i>a aquílllo</i>	to that
	Acc. <i>aquélle</i>	<i>aquélla</i>	<i>aquílllo</i>	that
	Abl. <i>daquélle</i>	<i>daquélla</i>	<i>daquílllo</i>	from that
Plural	Nom. <i>aquéllles</i>	<i>aquéllas</i>		those
	Gen. <i>daquéllles</i>	<i>daquéllas</i>	No Neuter	of those
	Dat. <i>a aquéllles</i>	<i>a aquéllas</i>		to those
	Acc. <i>aquéllles</i>	<i>aquéllas</i>		those
	Abl. <i>daquéllles</i>	<i>daquéllas</i>		from those



There is an elision of the vowel of the indefinite article in the genitive and ablative of the pronouns *éste* and *ésse* both in the singular and plural; as *déste*, *déostas*, &c. instead of *de éste*, *de éstas*; so also in the neuter as *dísso*, *dísto*, instead of *de ísso*, *de ísto*. The same observation applies to the pronoun *aquélle*, wherein you will see another elision besides, in the dative case.

Both Portuguese and Spaniards have demonstratives of the neuter gender; though they do not agree with the substantives, as in Latin; they do not say *ísto hómem*, but *éste hómem*, this man. But the word *cóusa*, thing, is always understood, though the neuter demonstrative does not agree with it; so that it is indifferently said *ísto*, or *ésta cóusa*, this thing; *íссо*, or *éssa cóusa*, that thing, &c. Example, *íссо he* or *éssa he a cóusa de que nós estamos fallando*, that is the thing we are speaking of; *aquillo he* or *aquélla he a cóusa que vós devéis fazer*, that is the thing you must do, &c.

When the preposition *em*, in, comes before the pronouns demonstrative, the vowel is cut off, and the consonant *m* is changed into *n*; thus, instead of *em éste*, *em ésta*, *em, ísto em íссо*, *em aquillo*, they write and pronounce *néste*, *nésta*, *nísto*, *nísso*, &c. in this, in that, &c.

The words *ótro*, *óutra*, are often joined to the pronouns demonstrative, cutting off the final *e*; as *estótro*, *essótro*, *aquellótro*. Example; *Estótro hómem*, this other man; *estóutra molhér*, this other woman; *essótro hómem*, that other man.

The pronoun *mésmo*, the same, is also frequently joined to the demonstrative; as *éste mésmo hómem*, this very same man; *aquillo mésmo*, that very same thing.

*Aquí*, *alí*, and *lá* are sometimes added to the demonstrative, or to the noun that comes after it, in order to specify and particularize it still more; as



*éste hómem aquí*, this man ; *aquella molhêr lá*, that woman : *aquí*, denoting a near, or present object ; and *lá*, a distant and absent one.

The pronouns *aquêlle*, *aquella*, *aquêlles*, *aquêllas*, when they relate to persons, and are followed by the relative *que*, are rendered into English by *he who*, or *he that*, *she who*, or *that*, *they who*, or *that* ; as *aquêlle que ama a virtúde he feliz*, he who loves virtue is happy ; *aquêlle que desprezaõ a sciência naõ conhecem o valôr dèlla*, they who despise learning know not the value of it. Observe, that when *aquêlle*, *aquella*, &c. are preceded by *éste*, *ésta*, &c. then *éste* signifies the last thing or person spoken of, and *aquêlle*, &c. the first ; as *Cárlos fôí grãnde*, *Frederico ambiçioso*, *éste valênte*, *aquêlle poderoso*, Charles was great, Frederic ambitious, the first powerful, the last courageous.

The pronoun possessive absolute *his*, *her*, *their*, construed in English with a noun followed by the pronoun relative *who* or *that* before a verb, is rendered in Portuguese by the genitive of the pronouns *aquêlle*, *aquella*, *aquêlles*, followed by *que*, and the possessive is left out ; as, all men blame his manners who often says that, which himself does not think, *tôdo o mún-do censúra o procedimênto daquêlle que tem por costúme dizêr o que naõ tem no pensamênto* ; Providence does not prosper their labours that slight their best friends, *a Providência naõ abencôa o trabalho daquêlles que desprezaõ os séus melhóres amígos*.

The English pronoun *such* followed by *as* or *that* (but not governed of the verb substantive *to be*), is also rendered into Portuguese by *aquêlles que*, or *aquêlles táes que*, or *aquêlle que* ; as, such as do not love virtue do not know it, *aquêlles or aquêlles táes que naõ amaõ a virtúde, naõ a conhecem*.

The pronouns *isso*, *isto*, *aquillo*, before *que*, are Englished by *what* ; as *elle diz aquillo que sábe*, he says what he knows.

*Aquélle* is also used to shew contempt ; as *que quèr aquélle hómem ?* What does that man desire ?

*Of the Pronouns Interrogative.*

The pronouns interrogative serve to ask questions, and are as follows ; who, what, which, *quem, que, qual.*

EXAMPLE.

<i>Quem hé ?</i>	who is it ?
<i>Quem vos disse isso ?</i>	who told you so ?
<i>Que queréis ?</i>	what will you have ?
<i>Com que se sustêta ?</i>	what does he maintain himself with ?
<i>Que estâis fazendo ?</i>	what are you doing ?
<i>De que se faz isto ?</i>	from what is this done ?
<i>Que livro he este ?</i>	what book is this ?
<i>Que negócios têdes ?</i>	what affairs have you ?
<i>Que casa hé ?</i>	what house is it ?
<i>De qual fallâis vós ?</i>	which do you speak of ?
<i>Qual dêlles ?</i>	which of them ?
<i>Quem or qual dos dous ?</i>	which or whether of the two ?

These pronouns are thus declined :

Singular and Plural. Masculine and Feminine.		Singular and Plural. Masculine and Feminine.	
Nom. <i>quem</i>	who	Nom. <i>que</i>	what
Gen. <i>de quem</i>	of whom	Gen. <i>de que</i>	of what
Dat. <i>a quem</i>	to whom	Dat. <i>a que</i>	to what
Acc. <i>quem</i>	whom	Acc. <i>que</i>	what
Abl. <i>de quem</i>	from whom.	Abl. <i>de que</i>	from what

*Qual* is used in speaking both of persons and things, and is declined thus :

Singular.	Masculine and Feminine.
Nom. <i>qual</i>	which or what
Gen. <i>de qual</i>	of which or what
Dat. <i>á qual</i>	to which or what
Acc. <i>qual</i>	which or what
Abl. <i>da qual</i>	from which or what

## Plural. Masculine and Feminine.

Nom. <i>quâes</i>	which or what
Gen. <i>de quâes</i>	of which or what
Dat. <i>a quâes</i>	to which or what
Acc. <i>quâes</i>	which or what
Abl. <i>de quâes</i>	from which or what

Observe, that when the word *quer* is added to *quem*, or *qual*, it quite alters the meaning; *quemquér* signifying whoever, or any person, and *qualquér* any one, whether man, woman, or thing; and sometimes they add the participle *que* to them, as *quemquér*, *que*, &c.

*Of the Pronouns Relative.*

Pronouns relative are those which shew the relation, or reference, which a noun has to what follows it. They are the following; *qual*, which, *que*, that or which; *cújo*, whose; *quem*, who.

*Qual*, in a sense of comparison, is followed by *tal*, and then *qual* is Englished by *as*, and *tal* by *of*.

N. B. When *qual* is only a relative, it is declined with the definite articles *o* or *a*.

The pronoun *que* may be relative both to persons and things, and is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; as *o livro que*, the book which; *os livros que*, the books which; *a carta que*, the letter which; *as cartas que*, the letters which; *o méstre que ensina*, the master who teacheth; *a molhér que tenho*, the wife that I have; *o hómem que eu ámo*, the man whom I love; it is thus declined:

## Singular and Plural.

Nom. <i>que</i>	which or who
Gen. <i>de que</i>	of which or of whom
Dat. <i>a que</i>	to which or to whom
Acc. <i>que</i>	which or whom
Abl. <i>de que</i>	from which or from whom

*Que* is sometimes a conjunction ; as *créyo que hiréi*, I believe that I shall go. See the *Syntax*.

The relative *quem*, who, is only relative to persons ; but in the nominative case of the singular is rendered into English by *he who*, or *who* ; as, *quem fálta déve considerár*, &c. he who speaks ought to consider, &c. *éu não séi quem*, I know not who.

Observe, that *quem* is common to all numbers, genders, and cases ; but it has no nominative in the plural.

*Quem* is declined thus :

		Singular and Plural.
Nom.	<i>quem</i>	he who, or she who, or whoever.
Gen.	<i>de quem</i>	of whom.
Dat.	<i>a quem</i>	to whom.
Acc.	<i>quem</i>	whom.
Abl.	<i>de quem</i>	from whom.

*Quem* is sometimes a particle disjunctive, and then it signifies *some* ; as, *quem cânta, e quem ri*, some sing, and some laugh ; and sometimes it serves for exclamation ; as *quem me déra estár em casa!* how fain would I be at home !

*Cújo Cúja*, is declined thus :

		Masc.	Fem.		
Sing.	{	Nom.	<i>cújo</i>	<i>cúja</i>	whose.
		Gen.	<i>de cújo</i>	<i>de cúja</i>	of whose.
		Dat.	<i>a cújo</i>	<i>a cúja</i>	to whose.
		Acc.	<i>cújo</i>	<i>cúja</i>	whose.
		Abl.	<i>de cújo</i>	<i>de cúja</i>	from whose.

The plural is formed by adding *s* to the singular ; as, *cújos, cújas*, whose, &c.

Note, that *cújo* must be followed by the noun or term which it refers to, and with which it agrees in gender, number and case ; as, *a pessóá cúja reputação vós admiráis*, the person whose reputation you wonder at ; *o céo cújo soccórro nunca fálta*, heaven, whose assistance never fails ; *cúja bélla cára*, whose fair visage : *cújas bellézas*, whose beauties ; *a cújo*



*pái*, to whose father ; *de cújos irmãos têmho recebido*, from whose brothers I have received. Observe also that *cújo* is not to be repeated, though the terms which it refers to be of different number ; as, *cúja valia e óbras*, whose value and deeds.

Note, that, *o, a, os, as, lo, la, &c.* are also pronouns relative, when joined to verbs. See the *Syntax*, chap. iv.

### *Of the Improper Pronouns.*

These pronouns are called *improper*, because indeed they are not properly pronouns, although they bear a great resemblance to pronouns, as well as to adjectives. They are the following :

<i>Hum</i>	one.
<i>Alguém</i>	somebody.
<i>Algúm</i>	some.
<i>Ninguém</i>	nobody.
<i>Nenhúm</i>	none.
<i>Cadahúm</i>	every one, each.
<i>Cáda</i>	every.
<i>Outro, óutra</i>	other.
<i>Outrem</i>	another.

*Qualquer*, any one ; whether man, or woman, or thing.

*Qualquer dos dós*, either of the two, or whethersoever of the two.

*Quemquer*, whoever, or any person.

*Tódo*, all, or every. *Tal*, such &c.

*Hum* has two terminations, viz. *hum, húma* ; and in the plural it makes *huns*, and *húmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

*Alguém* has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article.

*Algúm*, has two terminations, viz. *algúm, algúma* ; and in the plural, *algúns, algúmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

*Ninguém*, has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article ; *ninguém o cré*, nobody believes it.



*Nenhúm* has two terminations, viz. *nenhúmas*, *nenhúma*, and in the plural *nenhúns*, *nenhúmas*; and is only declinable with the indefinite article; *nenhúm hómem*, no man; *de nenhúm efféito*, of no effect.

*Cadahúm* has two terminations, viz. *cadahúm*, *cadahúma*; but it has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article.

*Cáda* has but one termination. It has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article: *cáda día*, every day; *cáda mez*, every month.

*Outro* has two terminations, viz. *óutro*, *óutra*; and in the plural, *óutros*, *óutras*. It is declinable both with the definite and indefinite articles.

*Outrem* has only one termination. It has no plural, and takes the indefinite article.

*Qualqué*r has but one termination. It makes *quaesqué*r in the plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. *Qualquer* is said both of persons and things.

*Quemqué*r has but one termination. It has no plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. It is rendered in English by *any body*: *quemqué*r *vos dirá* any body will tell you. *Quemqué*r is used in speaking of a person.

*Tódo* has two terminations, viz. *tódo*, *tóda*; and in the plural, *tódos*, *tódas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article. It is sometimes taken substantively, and then it signifies *the whole*; as *o tódo hé mayór que a súa pá*rte, the whole is bigger than its part.

*Tal* has only one termination. It makes *táes* in the plural, and it is declined with the indefinite article. It is common to the masculine and to the feminine genders; and sometimes it is joined to *qual*; as, *tal qual élle hé*, such as it is.

*Tal* supplies sometimes the place of the person whose name is not specified; as, *hum tal velháco déve sér castigádo*, such a rogue ought to be punished.

## CHAP. V.

## OF VERBS.

THE verb is a part of speech which serves to express that which is attributed to the subject in denoting the *being* or *condition* of the things and persons spoken of, the *actions* which they do, or the *impressions* they receive.

The first and the most general division of Verbs is into personal and impersonal.

A verb personal is conjugated by three persons.

## EXAMPLE.

Sing.	{	<i>eu âmo</i>	I love
		<i>tu âmas</i>	thou lovest
		<i>elle âma</i>	he loves
Plur.	{	<i>nós amâmos</i>	we love
		<i>vós amâis</i>	ye love
		<i>elles âmaõ</i>	they love

A verb impersonal is conjugated by the third person of the singular number only; as *chóve*, it rains, *convém*, it behoves.

A verb, considered in regard to syntax, is of four sorts, viz. active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal.

Some of the verbs are regular, and others irregular.

Some are also called auxiliary verbs. We shall give their definitions in their proper places.

Before you begin to learn the conjugations, it will be proper to observe, that all the verbs may be conjugated with the pronouns personal, *eu*, *tu*, *elle*, &c. or without them.

*Of the Auxiliary Verbs.*

The auxiliary verbs are so called, because they aid the conjugation of other verbs. They are four in Portuguese, viz. *havér*, *têr*, to have; *sêr*, *estár*, to be. The auxiliary verb *sêr*, to be, is also called the verb substantive, because it affirms what the subject is, and is always followed by a noun that particularizes what that subject is; as *sêr rico*, *prudênte*, *dôuto*, to be rich, wise, learned, &c.

---

*Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb,  
têr, or havêr, to have.*

## THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

Sing.	{	<i>êu ténho, ou hey</i>	I have
		<i>tu téns, ou has</i>	thou hast
		<i>êlle tém, ou há</i>	he has or hath
Plur.	{	<i>nos têmos, ou havêmos, ou hêmos</i>	we have
		<i>vos têndes, ou havêis, ou hêis</i>	you have
		<i>êlles tém, ou haõ</i>	they have

## Preterimperfect

Sing.	{	<i>êu tínha, ou havia, ou hía</i>	I had
		<i>tu tínhas, ou havías, ou hías</i>	thou hadst
		<i>êlle tínha, ou havia, ou hía</i>	he had
Plur.	{	<i>nós tínhamos, ou havíamos, ou híamos</i>	we had
		<i>vós tínhieis, ou havíeis, ou híeis</i>	you had
		<i>êlles, tínhaõ, ou haviaõ, ou híaõ</i>	they had

## Preterperfect definite.

Sing.	{	<i>êu tive ou houve</i>	I had
		<i>tu tivêste, ou houvêste</i>	thou hadst
		<i>êlle teve, ou houve</i>	he had
Plur.	{	<i>nós tivêmos, ou houvêmos,</i>	we had
		<i>vós tivêstes, ou houvêstes</i>	you had
		<i>êlles tivêraõ ou houveraõ</i>	they had

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tenho tido</i>	I have had
		<i>tu tens tido</i>	thou hast had
		<i>elle têm tido</i>	he has had
Plur.	{	<i>nós temos tido</i>	we have had
		<i>vós tendes tido</i>	you have had
		<i>elles tem tido</i>	they have had

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tinha tido</i>	I had had
		<i>tu tinhas tido</i>	thou had had
		<i>elle tinha tido</i>	he had had
Plur.	{	<i>nós tínhamos tido</i>	we had had
		<i>vós tínheis tido</i>	you had had
		<i>elles tínhaõ tido</i>	they had had

This tense may also be conjugated thus ; *tivéra, tivéras, tivérea, tivéramos, tivéreis, tivéraõ.*

## First Future.

Sing.	{	<i>eu terêi, ou haverêi</i>	I shall or will have
		<i>tu terás, ou haverás</i>	thou shalt or wilt have
		<i>elle terá, ou averá</i>	he shall or wilt have
Plur.	{	<i>nós terêmos, ou haverêmos</i>	we shall or will have
		<i>vós terêis, ou haverêis</i>	ye shall or will have
		<i>elles teráõ, ou averáõ</i>	they shall or will have

## Second Future.

Sing. *eu hei de ter, ou haver, &c.* I must have, &c.

## Third Future.

Sing. *eu haverêi de ter, ou haver, &c.* I shall be obliged to have, &c.

## Fourth Future.

Sing. *eu havia de ter, ou haver, &c.* I was to have, &c.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	{	<i>têm tu, ou hájas tu</i>	have thou
		<i>têna elle, ou hája elle</i>	let him have
Plur.	{	<i>tenhâmos, ou hajâmos nós</i>	let us have
		<i>tênde, ou havêi, vós</i>	have ye
		<i>tênhaõ, ou hájaõ elles,</i>	let them have



The imperative has no first person, because it is impossible to command one's self.

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

I join them together because their tenses are similar.

Present.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tenha, ou haja</i> that I have, or that I may have
		<i>que tu tenha, ou haja</i> thou hast, or mayest have
		<i>que elle tenha, ou haja</i> he has or may have
Plur.	{	<i>que nós tenhamos, ou hajamos</i> we have, or may have
		<i>que vós tenhaís, ou hajaís</i> ye have, or may have
		<i>que elles tenhaõ, ou hajaõ</i> they have, or may have

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tivéra ou tivésse</i>	} that I had, or I should, would, &c. have, &c.
		<i>houvéra, ou houvésse</i>	
		<i>que tu tivéras ou tivesses</i>	
		<i>houvéras ou houvesses</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>que nós tivéramos ou tivéssemos</i>	} that we had, or we should, would, &c. have, &c.
		<i>houvéramos ou houvéssemos</i>	
		<i>que vós tivéreis ou tivésseis</i>	
		<i>houvéreis ou houvésseis</i>	
	{	<i>que elles tivéraõ ou tivéssem</i>	} have, &c.
		<i>houvéraõ ou houvéssem</i>	

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu teria ou haveria</i>	} I should, would, or could have, &c.
		<i>tu terias ou haverias</i>	
		<i>elle teria ou haveria</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>nós teriamos ou haveriamos</i>	} we should, would, or could have, &c.
		<i>vós terieis ou haverieis</i>	
		<i>elles teriaõ ou haveriaõ</i>	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tenha tido ou havido</i>	} that I have had	
		<i>que tu tenha tido ou havido</i>		thou hast had
		<i>que elle tenha tido ou havido</i>		he has had
Plur.	{	<i>que nós tenhamos tido ou havido</i>	} we have had	
		<i>que vós tenhaís tido ou havido</i>		you have had
		<i>que elles tenhaõ tido ou havido</i>		they have had



## Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.	{	<i>se eu tivéra ou tivésse</i> <i>se tu tivéras ou tivésse</i> <i>se elle tivéra ou tivésse</i>	}	<i>tido</i>	{	if I had had, &c.
Plur.	{	<i>se nós tivéramos ou tivéssemos</i> <i>se vós tivéreis ou tivésseis</i> <i>se elles tivéraõ ou tivéssem</i>				

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.	{	<i>eu teria</i> <i>tu terias</i> <i>elle teria</i>	}	<i>tido</i>	{	I should have had, &c.
Plur.	{	<i>nós teríamos</i> <i>vós teríeis</i> <i>elles teriaõ</i>				

## First Future.

Sing.	{	<i>se eu tivér</i> <i>tu tivéres</i> <i>elle tivér</i>	}	if I shall have thou shalt have he shall have
Plur.	{	<i>se nós tivérmos</i> <i>vós tivérdes</i> <i>éslle tivérem</i>		

This tense may be conjugated also thus: *houvér, houvéres, houvér; houvérmos, houvérdes, houvérem.* See *Syntax of the auxiliary Verbs.*

## Second Future.

It is composed of the first future and the participle.

Sing.	{	<i>se eu tivér</i> <i>tivéres</i> <i>tivér</i>	}	<i>tido</i>	{	if I shall have had, &c.
Plur.	{	<i>tivérmos</i> <i>tivérdes</i> <i>tivérem</i>				

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*tér* to have.

Preterperfect.

*têr lido*, to have had.

PARTICIPLES.

Preterit. Sing. *tido*, *tida*. Plur. *tidos* *tidas*, had.

Future.

*que há de têr*, that is to have.

GERUNDS.

*têndo*, having or in having. *têndo*, *tido*, having had.

SUPINE.

The supine is supplied by the prepositions *a* or *para*, and the verb in the infinitive ; as,

*para têr*, to have.

In like manner are conjugated its compounds *contênho*, *detênho*, *mantênho*, &c.

*Remarks upon the auxiliary verb, têr, to have.*

The verb *têr*, to have, is an auxiliary or helping verb, which serves to conjugate other verbs : example, *têr lido*, to have read ; *nós têmos*, *fêito*, we have done ; *êles têm visto*, they have seen, &c.

When 'the verb *têr* is followed by the particle *que*, before an infinitive mood, it denotes the duty, inclination, &c. of doing any thing ; as, *que têndes que fazer?* what have you to do ? *tênho que fazer húma visita*, I must pay a visit ; *êlle tem muito que dizêrvos*, he has a great many things to tell you.

*Of the auxiliary verb havêr.*

This is one of the most useful verbs in Portuguese, since it is not only auxiliary to itself, as *êu héi de havêr*, I must have ; *êu havia de havêr*, I was to have &c. but also to all sorts of verbs ; as *êu héi de cantar*, I will sing, or I must sing, or I am to sing ; *êu héi de hir*, I must go ; *êu havia de fallar*, I was to speak ; *êu héi de escrevêr*, I must write, &c. In which examples you may see that the verb *havêr*, when auxiliary, has generally the particle *de* and the verb of the infinitive mood after it ; and

that then it denotes a firm resolution, possibility, or necessity of doing any thing, therefore it is not to be rendered into English by the verb *to have*; as you may see by the second, third, and fourth future of the indicative mood.

The verb *havér*, with the particle *de*, and the verb *sér*, to be, after it, is an auxiliary both to the passive verbs, and sometimes to the verb *sér* itself; as, *héi de sér feliz*, I shall be happy; *O príncipe ha de sér respeitádo*, the prince ought to be, or must be, respected.

The same verb *havér* is also auxiliary without the particle *de*; but then it is put after the verb to which it is auxiliary; thus, *dárvos-héi* I will give you; *dárlhe-héi*, I will give to him, &c. In which examples you may observe, that the auxiliary verb *havér* is put after the verb and the pronouns conjunctive, *te*, *lhe*, &c. and sometimes it is put after the verbs and the pronoun mixed; as, *mandár volo-héi* I'll send it to you. In the foregoing examples the verb *havér* may be put before the other verb; but then it requires the particle *de*, and has a different meaning; as, in the first example, you may say, *héi de dárvos*, I must give to you. Observe, also, that when the indicative present of the auxiliary verb *havér* is auxiliary to other verbs, as in the foregoing examples, you must cut off the last letters *ei* from the future of the verbs; and say *dárlhe-héi*, or *héi de dárlhe*; but not *daréi lhe-héi*, nor *héi de daréi lhe*. When the preterimperfect *havía* is to be auxiliary to any verb, and it is to be placed after it, you must make use of *hía*, *hías*, *hía*, *híamos*, *héis*, *híão*; and say, *dar-lhe-hía*, *hías*, &c. but not *dar-lhe-havía*, *hávias*, &c. I should give to him, thou shouldst, &c.

To express interrogation put the pronoun personal after the verb, as in English thus *teréi éu?* shall I have? *témos nós?* have we? *tens tu?* hast thou?

*tem elle?* has he? sometimes the pronouns are omitted; as, *que farémos?* what shall we do? *cantarémos?* shall we sing?

*Havér* is sometimes Englished by *to be*; as *que ha de sér de mim?* what is to become of me?

When we speak by negation, we must use the word *naõ* before the verb; as, *naõ ténho*, I have not; *vós naõ conhecéis*, you do not know, &c.

*Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb sér, or estár, to be.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

Sing.	{	<i>eu sou</i> or <i>estou</i>	I am
		<i>tu és</i> or <i>estás</i>	thou art
		<i>elle hé</i> or <i>está</i>	he is
Plur.	{	<i>nós somos</i> or <i>estamos</i>	we are
		<i>vós sois</i> or <i>estais</i>	you are
		<i>elles saõ</i> or <i>estãõ</i>	they are

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu era</i> or <i>estava</i>	I was
		<i>eras</i> or <i>estavas</i>	thou wast
		<i>era</i> or <i>estava</i>	he was
Plur.	{	<i>nós éramos</i> or <i>estávamos</i>	we were
		<i>éreis</i> or <i>estáveis</i>	you were
		<i>eraõ</i> or <i>estávaõ</i>	they were

Preterperfect definite.

Sing.	{	<i>eu fui</i> or <i>estive</i>	I was
		<i>foste</i> or <i>estiveste</i>	thou wast
		<i>fôï</i> or <i>estêve</i>	he was
Plur.	{	<i>fômos</i> or <i>estivemos</i>	we were
		<i>fôstes</i> or <i>estivestes</i>	you were
		<i>fôraõ</i> or <i>estivéraõ</i>	they were



## Preterperfect.

The preterperfect is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *tér*, to have, and its own participle, *sído*, or *estado*.

## Preterpluperfect.

This tense is compounded of the preterimperfect indicative, and the participle *sído* or *estado*.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tinha sido</i> or <i>estado</i>	I had been
		<i>tinhas sido</i> or <i>estado</i>	thou hadst been
		<i>tinha sido</i> or <i>estado</i>	he had been
Plur.	{	<i>tínhamos sido</i> or <i>estado</i>	we had been
		<i>tínheis sido</i> or <i>estado</i>	you had been
		<i>tinhaõ sido</i> or <i>estado</i>	they had been

It may also be conjugated thus ; *fôra*, or *estivêra* ; *fôras*, or *estivêras* ; *fôra*, or *estivêra* ; *fôramos*, or *estivêramos* ; *fôreis*, or *estivêreis* ; *fôraõ*, or *estivêraõ*.

## Future.

Sing.	{	<i>eu serêi</i> or <i>estarái</i>	I shall or will be
		<i>serás</i> or <i>estarás</i>	thou shalt be
		<i>será</i> or <i>estará</i>	he shall be
Plur.	{	<i>serêmos</i> or <i>estarámos</i>	we shall be
		<i>serêis</i> or <i>estaráis</i>	you shall be
		<i>seráõ</i> or <i>estaráõ</i>	they shall be

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	{	<i>sê tu</i> or <i>está</i>	be thou
		<i>sêja</i> or <i>estêja</i> <i>elle</i>	let him be
Plur.	{	<i>sejâmos</i> or <i>estejâmos</i> <i>nós</i>	let us be
		<i>sêde</i> or <i>estái</i> <i>vós</i>	be you
		<i>sêjaõ</i> or <i>estêjaõ</i> <i>êlles</i>	let them be

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

## Present.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu sêja</i> or <i>estêja</i>	that I may be, or that I be
		<i>sêjas</i> or <i>estêias</i>	thou mayst be, or be
		<i>sêja</i> or <i>estêja</i>	he may be, &c.



Plur.	{	<i>que pros sejâmos or estejamos</i>	that we may be
		<i>sejâis, or estejamis</i>	you may be
		<i>sêjão or estêjão</i>	they may be

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu fôra or fôsse</i>	} that I were or might be
		<i>estivêra or estivêsse</i>	
		<i>fôras or fôsses</i>	} thou wert
<i>estivêras or estivêsses</i>			
Plur.	{	<i>fôra or fôsse</i>	} he were
		<i>estivêra or estivêsse</i>	
		<i>que nós fôramos or fôssemos</i>	} that we were
<i>estivêramos or estivêssemos</i>			
Plur.	{	<i>fôreis or fôsseis</i>	} you were
		<i>estivêreis or estivêsseis</i>	
		<i>fôraõ or fôssem</i>	} they were
<i>estivêraõ or estivêssem</i>			

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu seria or estaria</i>	I should or would be
		<i>serias or estarias</i>	thou shouldst be
		<i>seria or estaria</i>	he should be
Plur.	{	<i>seriamos or estaríamos</i>	we should be
		<i>serieis or estarieis</i>	you should be
		<i>seriaõ or estariaõ</i>	they should be

Preterperfect.

It is compounded of the present conjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*, and its own participle *sido*, or *estado*.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tenha sido or estado</i>	that I have been
		<i>têhas sido or estado</i>	thou hast been
		<i>têha sido, &amp;c.</i>	he has been
Plur.	{	<i>tenhâmos sido, &amp;c.</i>	we have been
		<i>tenhâis sido, &amp;c.</i>	you have been
		<i>têhaõ sido &amp;c.</i>	they have been

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér*, and its own participle.

Sing.	{	<i>se eu tivéra or tivésse</i>	} if I had been
		<i>sído or estado</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>tivéras, &amp;c.</i>	thou hadst been
		<i>tivéra, &amp;c.</i>	he had been
		<i>tivéramos, &amp;c.</i>	we had been
		<i>tivéreis, &amp;c.</i>	you had been
		<i>tivéraõ, &amp;c.</i>	they had been

## Second Preterpluperfect.

Compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér*, and its own participle *sído* or *estado*.

Sing.	{	<i>eu teria sído or estado</i>	I should or would have been
		<i>terías, &amp;c.</i>	thou shouldst have been
Plur.	{	<i>teria, &amp;c.</i>	he should have been
		<i>teríamos, &amp;c.</i>	we should have been
		<i>teríeis, &amp;c.</i>	you should have been
		<i>teríaõ, &amp;c.</i>	they should have been

## First Future.

Sing.	{	<i>quando eu fôr or estiver</i>	when I shall be
		<i>fôres or estiveres</i>	thou shalt be
Plur.	{	<i>fôr or estiver</i>	he shall be
		<i>fôrmos or estivermos</i>	we shall be
		<i>fôrdes or estiverdes</i>	you shall be
		<i>fôrem or estiverem</i>	they shall be

## Second Future.

Compounded of the future subjunctive of the verb *tér*, and its own participle.

Sing.	{	<i>quando eu tiver sído or estado</i>	when I shall have been
		<i>tivéres sído, &amp;c.</i>	thou shalt have been
Plur.	{	<i>tiver sído, &amp;c.</i>	he shall have been
		<i>tivermos sído, &amp;c.</i>	we shall have been
		<i>tiverdes sído, &amp;c.</i>	you shall have been
		<i>tiverem sído, &amp;c.</i>	they shall have been

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*sêr or estár* to be

## Preterperfect.

*têr sído or estado* to have been

## PARTICIPLES.

Pret.

*sído* or *estado*, been

Future.

*que há de sér*, or *estár*, that is to be

## GERUNDS.

*sêndo* or *estândo* being*têndo sido* or *estado* having been

## SUPINE.

*para sér* or *estár* to be*Remarks upon the verb sér and estár.*

There is a considerable difference between these verbs, *sér* and *estár*, both in Portuguese and Spanish. In English there is no word to distinguish them, being both rendered into English by *to be*. *Sér* signifies the proper and inseparable essence of a thing, its quality or quantity; *sér homem*, to be a man; *sér bom*, to be good; *sér alto*, to be tall; *sér largo*, to be wide; *sér branco*, to be white, &c. But *estár* denotes a place, or any adventitious quality; as, *estár em Lóndres*, to be in London; *estár de saúde*, to be in health; *estár frio*, to be cold; *estár quente*, to be warm; *estár doente*, to be sick; *estár infadado*, to be angry; *estár allégre*, to be merry, &c.

*Estár* may be used before the gerunds, but not *sér*; therefore you may say, *estou fallando, lendo*, &c. I am speaking, reading, &c. but not *sou fallando*, &c.

*The three Conjugations of regular Active Verbs.*

A regular verb is such as is confined to general rules in its conjugation.

A verb active denotes the action or impression of the subject, and governs a noun which is the object of that action or impression ; as, *amár a virtúde*, to love virtúe ; *recebér cartas*, to receive letters.

The regular Portuguese verbs have three different terminations in the infinitive ; viz. in *ar*, *er*, *ir* ; as, *amár*, to love ; *temér*, to fear ; *admittír*, to admit.

*An easy Method of learning to conjugate the  
Portuguese Verbs.*

I have reduced all the tenses of the Portuguese verbs to eight ; four of which are general, and have the same terminations in all the verbs ; and the other four may be likewise made general by changing some letters, and all the conjugations reduced to one.

The general tenses are, the future indicative, the first and second preterimperfect subjunctive, and the first future subjunctive.

The future indicative is terminated in all the verbs, in

*réi, rás, rá ; rémos, réis, raõ.*

The imperfect subjunctive, in

*ra or sse, ras or sses, ra or sse ; rámos, or ssemos,  
réis or sséis, raõ or ssem.*

The second imperfect, in

*ría, rías, ría ; ríamos, ríeis, ríaõ*

The first future subjunctive, in

*es, mos, des, em.*

I have only given the termination of the second person singular of the future subjunctive, because the first and third of the same number are like their respective infinitives of the three conjugations, which, however, keep both their last consonant



and vowel before the terminations I have marked for the second person singular, and for the whole plural. As to the future indicative, you have only to add *éi* to the respective present infinitive of the three conjugations, in order to form the first person singular; and if you add to the same infinitive present *as*, you will form the second person singular of it, and so of all the rest, by adding to the infinitive present, *a*, *emos*, *eis*, *aõ*.

The imperfect subjunctive has two terminations for every person, both in the singular and plural; but if you cut off the last consonant *r* of the infinitive, and then add to it the terminations above mentioned, you form the imperfect subjunctive, according to its two different terminations. Lastly, if you cut off the last consonant of the infinitive, and add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you will form the second imperfect subjunctive.

The present indicative of the three conjugations is formed by changing the last letters of the infinitive, viz. *ar*, *er*, *ir*, into *o*; as, *ámo*, *enténdo*, *admitto*, from *amár*, *entendér*, *admittír*.

The preterimperfect indicative is formed in the first conjugation, by changing the last consonant of the infinitive, viz. *r*, into *va*, *vas*, *va*, *vámos*, *véis*, *vaõ*; but in the second conjugation it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *ia*, *ias*, *ía*, *íamos*, *íeis*, *íaõ*; and in the third by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *a*, *as*, *a*; *ámos*, *éis*, *aõ*.

The perfect definite in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *éi*, *áste óu*, *ámos*, *ástes*, *áraõ*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *i*, *éste*, *éõ*, *émos*, *éstes*, *éraõ*. In the third conjugation, the same tense



is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into *í, íste, ío, ímos, ístes, íraõ*.

The present subjunctive in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *e, es, e, émos, éis, em*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *a, as, a, ámos, áis, aõ*. In the third conjugation, the same tense is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into the same terminations, *a, as, a, &c.*

As to the imperative mood, you have only to observe, that the second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present indicative, in all the conjugations.

The participles of the preterperfect tense in the first conjugation are formed by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, and *da* for the feminine; and into *dos, das*, for the plural; but when you come to verbs of the second conjugation, you change the termination *r* of the infinitive into *ído, ída, &c.*

In the third conjugation, the last consonant *r* of the infinitive must be changed into *do* for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, &c.

*First Conjugation of the verbs in ar.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

I shall add the pronouns personal, *éu, tu, élle, &c.* no more.

Present.

<i>ámo</i>	I love
<i>ámas</i>	thou lovest
<i>áma</i>	he loves
<i>amâmos</i>	we love
<i>amáis</i>	ye love
<i>âmaõ</i>	they love

Preterimperfect.

<i>amava</i>	I did love
<i>amavas</i>	thou didst love
<i>amava</i>	he did love
<i>amávamos</i>	we did love
<i>amáveis</i>	you did love
<i>amavaõ</i>	they did love

Preterperfect definite.

<i>améi</i>	I loved
<i>amáste</i>	thou lovedst
<i>amôu</i>	he loved
<i>amámos</i>	we loved
<i>amástes</i>	you loved
<i>amáraõ</i>	they loved

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amádo*, and the present indicative auxiliary verb *tér*.

<i>ténho amádo</i>	I have loved
<i>tens amádo</i>	thou hast loved
<i>tem amádo</i>	he has loved
<i>témos amádo</i>	we have loved
<i>têndes amádo</i>	you have loved
<i>tém amádo</i>	they have loved

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amádo* and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

N. B. It may be conjugated thus, *amára*, *amáras*, *amára*, *amáramos*, *amáreis*, *amáraõ*, or,

<i>tínha amádo</i> ,	I had loved
<i>tínhas amádo</i>	thou hadst loved
<i>tínha amádo</i>	he had loved
<i>tínhamos amádo</i>	we had loved
<i>tínheis amádo</i>	you had loved
<i>tínhaõ amádo</i>	they had loved

Future.

<i>amaréi</i>	I shall or will love
<i>amarás</i>	thou shalt love
<i>amará</i>	he shall love

<i>amarémos</i>	we shall love
<i>amaréis</i>	you shall love
<i>amarão</i>	they shall love

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>ânu tu</i>	love thou
<i>âme elle</i>	let him love
<i>amêmos nós</i>	let us love
<i>amáí vós</i>	love you
<i>âmem elles</i>	let them love

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

<i>que êu âme</i>	that I may love
<i>âmes</i>	thou mayest love
<i>âme</i>	he may love
<i>amêmos</i>	we may love
<i>améis</i>	you may love
<i>âmem</i>	they may love

## First Preterimperfect.

<i>que êu amára, or amásse</i>	that I might or could love
<i>amáras, or amásseis</i>	thou mightest love
<i>amára, or amásse</i>	he might love
<i>amáramos, or amássemos</i>	we might love
<i>amáreis, or amásseis</i>	you might love
<i>amáraõ or amássem</i>	they might love

When we find the conjunction *if* before the indicative imperfect, we must use the imperfect of the subjunctive or optative, when we speak by way of wish or desire; as, If I did love, *se êu amásse*, or *amára*, and not *se êu amáva*, if I had loved; if I had, *se êu tivéra*, *tivésse*, and not *sé êu tinha*; and so in all the verbs.

## Second Preterimperfect.

<i>amaría</i>	I should love
<i>amarías</i>	thou shouldst love
<i>amaría</i>	he should love
<i>amaríamos</i>	we should love
<i>amaríeis</i>	you should love
<i>amaríaõ</i>	they should love

## Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

<i>que eu tenha amado</i>	that I have loved.
<i>ténhas amado</i>	thou hast loved.
<i>ténha amado</i>	he has loved
<i>tenhâmos amado</i>	we have loved
<i>tenhâis amado</i>	you have loved
<i>ténhaõ amado</i>	they have loved

## Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

<i>se eu tivéra or tivésse amado</i>	if I had loved
<i>tivéras or tivéssees amado</i>	thou hadst loved
<i>tivéra or tivésse amado</i>	he had loved
<i>tivéramos or tivéssemos amado</i>	we had loved
<i>tivéreis or tivésseis amado</i>	you had loved
<i>tivéraõ or tivéssem amado</i>	they had loved

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

<i>tería amado</i>	I should have loved
<i>terías amado</i>	thou shouldst have loved
<i>tería amado</i>	he should have loved
<i>teríamos amado</i>	we should have loved
<i>teríeis amado</i>	ye should have loved
<i>teríaõ amado</i>	they should have loved

## Future.

<i>quando eu amár</i>	when I shall love
<i>amáres</i>	thou shalt love
<i>amár</i>	he shall love
<i>amármos</i>	we shall love
<i>amárdes</i>	you shall love
<i>amárem</i>	they shall love

## Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *amádo*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

<i>quándo eu tivér amádo</i>	when I shall have loved
<i>tivéres amádo</i>	thou shalt have loved
<i>tivér amádo</i>	he shall have loved
<i>tivérmos amádo</i>	we shall have loved
<i>tivérdes amádo</i>	you shall have loved
<i>tivérem amádo</i>	they shall have loved

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*amár* to love

## Preterperfect.

*tér amádo* to have loved

## PARTICIPLE.

## Present.

*que ama, or amânte* that loves

## Pret.

*amádo, masc. amáda, fem.* loved

## Future.

*que há de amár,* that is to love

## GERUNDS.

*amândo* loving  
*têndo amádo* having loved

## SUPINE.

*para amár* to love

Note, the verbs terminating in the infinitive in *cár* take *qu* in those tenses, where the *c* would otherwise meet with the vowel *e*; and those terminating in the infinitive in *gar* take an *u* in those tenses, where the *g* would otherwise meet with the same vowel *e*; that is to say, in the first person singular of the preterperfect definite, in the third person



singular, in the first and third plural of the imperative, and in the whole present subjunctive, which are the tenses I shall give by way of example in the verbs *peccár* and *pagár*.

*Peccár*, to sin.

Preterperfect definite.

*éu pequêi* I sinned—instead of *peccêi*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*péque* *éle*, let him sin: *pequémos nós*, let us sin; *péquem éles*, let them sin—and not *pécce éle*, &c.

Present subjunctive.

*que éu péque*, *tu péques*, that I may sin—  
and not *que éu pécce*, *pécces*, &c.

*Págar*, to pay.

Preterperfect definite.

*paguêi* I paid

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*págue éle*, *paguêmos nós*, *páguem éles*, let him pay, &c.

Present subjunctive.

*que éu págue*, *págues*, *págue paguêmos*, *paguéis*, *páguem*, that I may pay, &c.—and not *page*, *pages*, &c.

The other tenses are conjugated like *amár*.

Regular verbs in *ar*.

<i>Abafár</i> to choke, or to smother	<i>Agarrár</i> to lay hold of
<i>Abalár</i> to shake	<i>Alagár</i> to overflow
<i>Abanár</i> to fan	<i>Amaldiçoár</i> to curse.
<i>Abastár</i> to satiate	<i>Annulár</i> to annul, or to make void.
<i>Abaxár</i> to bring or let down	<i>Apressár</i> to press or hasten
<i>Abençoár</i> to bless.	<i>Aquentár</i> to warm
<i>Abocanhár</i> to carp	<i>Argumentár</i> to argue
<i>Abominár</i> to abominate	<i>Assoprár</i> to blow
<i>Abotoár</i> to button	<i>Atár</i> to tie
<i>Acabár</i> to finish	<i>Avassalár</i> to subdue, to conquer.
<i>Admoestár</i> to admonish	<i>Azedár</i> to sour
<i>Affrontár</i> to abuse	

*Of the Verbs Passive.*

Before we proceed to the second conjugation, it is necessary to know that the Verbs passive, which express the suffering of an action, are nothing more than the participles of verbs active, conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be.

## EXAMPLE.

## Present tense.

<i>eu sou amado</i>	I am loved
<i>tu és amado</i>	thou art loved
<i>élle hé amado</i>	he is loved
<i>nós somos amados</i>	we are loved
<i>vós sois amados</i>	you are loved
<i>elles são amados</i>	they are loved

and so throughout the other moods and tenses.

*Second Conjugation of the verbs in êr.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>vendo</i>	I sell
<i>vendes</i>	thou sellest
<i>vêde</i>	he sells
<i>vendemos</i>	we sell
<i>vendeis</i>	you sell
<i>vendem</i>	they sell

## Preterimperfect.

<i>vendia</i>	I did sell
<i>vendias</i>	thou didst sell
<i>vendia</i>	he did sell
<i>vendiamos</i>	we did sell
<i>vendieis</i>	you did sell
<i>vendiaõ</i>	they did sell

## Preterperfect definite.

<i>vendi</i>	I sold
<i>vendeste</i>	thou soldest
<i>vendéo</i>	he sold

<i>vendémos</i>	we sold
<i>vendéstes</i>	you sold
<i>vendéraõ</i>	they sold

Preterperfect.

<i>ténho</i>	} <i>vendido</i>	} I have sold, &c.
<i>téns</i>		
<i>tém</i>		
<i>têmos</i>		
<i>têdes</i>		
<i>tém</i>		

Preterpluperfect.

<i>tinha</i>	} <i>vendido</i>	} I have sold, &c.
<i>tinhas</i>		
<i>tinha</i>		
<i>tínhamos</i>		
<i>tínheis</i>		
<i>tinhaõ</i>		

This tense may also be conjugated thus: *vendéra*, *vendêras*,  
*vendêra*, *vendêramos*, *vendêreis*, *vendêraõ*.

Future.

<i>venderéi</i>	} I shall or will sell, &c.
<i>venderás</i>	
<i>venderá</i>	
<i>venderémos</i>	
<i>venderéis</i>	
<i>venderáõ</i>	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>vênde tu</i>	sell thou
<i>vênda êlle</i>	let him sell
<i>vendâmos nós</i>	let us sell
<i>vendêi vós</i>	sell ye
<i>vêndaõ êlles</i>	let them sell

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

<i>que êu vênda</i>	} that I may sell, &c.
<i>vêndas</i>	
<i>vênda</i>	
<i>vendâmos</i>	
<i>vendâis</i>	
<i>vêndaõ</i>	

## Preterimperfect.

<i>que eu vendêra or vendêsse</i>		that I might or could sell,
<i>vendêras or vendêsses,</i>		&c.
<i>vendêra or vendêsse</i>		
<i>vendêramos or vendêssemos</i>		
<i>vendêreis, or vendêsseis</i>		
<i>vendêraõ or vendêssem</i>		

## Second Preterimperfect.

<i>vendería</i>		I should sell, &c.
<i>venderías</i>		
<i>vendería</i>		
<i>venderíamos</i>		
<i>venderíeis</i>		
<i>venderíaõ</i>		

## Preterperfect.

<i>que eu tenha</i>	}	<i>vendido,</i>	}	that I have sold, &c,
<i>têhas</i>				
<i>tenha</i>				
<i>tenhamos</i>				
<i>tenhamis</i>				
<i>têhaõ</i>				

## Preterpluperfect.

<i>se eu tivêra or tivêsse</i>	}	<i>vendido</i>	}	if I had sold, &c.
<i>tivêras or tivêsses</i>				
<i>tivêra or tivêsse</i>				
<i>tivêramos or tivêssemos</i>				
<i>tivêreis or tivêsseis</i>				
<i>tivêraõ or tivêssem</i>				

## Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>eu tería</i>	}	<i>vendido,</i>	}	I should have sold, &c.
<i>terías</i>				
<i>tería</i>				
<i>teríamos</i>				
<i>teríeis</i>				
<i>teríaõ</i>				



Future.

*quando eu vendér* when I shall sell, &c.  
*vendéres*  
*vendér*  
*vendérmos*  
*vendérdes*  
*vendérem*

Second Future.

<p><i>quando eu tivér</i>  <i>tivéres</i>  <i>tivér</i>  <i>tivérmos</i>  <i>tivérdes</i>  <i>tivérem</i></p>	}	<i>vendido</i>	{	when I shall have sold, &c.
---	---	----------------	---	-----------------------------

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

*vendér* to sell

Preterperfect.

*tér vendido* to have sold

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

*que vende* that sell, that sells

Preterite.

*vendido*, masc. *vendida*, fem. Plur. *vendidos*, *vendidas*, sold.

Future.

*que ha de vendér* that is to sell

GERUNDS.

*vendêdo* selling  
*têdo vendido* having sold

SUPINE.

*para vendér* to sell

After the same manner as the verb *vendér*, are conjugated all the other regular verbs of the second conjugation ending in *er*: as the following:

*Acometér*, to attack*Bebér*, to drink*Comér*, to eat*Comprehendér*, to perceive, or  
apprehend*Cometér*, to commit*Concedér*, to grant*Correr*, to run*Devér*, to owe*Escondér*, to hide*Emprendér*, to undertake*Metér*, to put in*Offendér*, to offend*Prometér*, to promise*Respondér*, to answer*Reprehendér*, to reprove*Temér*, to fear*Varrér*, to sweep, &c.*Third Conjugation, of the Verbs ending in ir.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>admúto</i>	I admit, &c.	<i>admittémos</i>
<i>admittes</i>		<i>admittés</i>
<i>admítte</i>		<i>admittém</i>

## Preterimperfect.

<i>admittía</i>	I did admit, &c.	<i>admittíamos</i>
<i>admittías</i>		<i>admittíeis</i>
<i>admittía</i>		<i>admittíaõ</i>

## Preterperfect definite.

<i>admittí</i>	I admitted.	<i>admittímos</i>
<i>admittístes</i>		<i>admittístes</i>
<i>admittío</i>		<i>admittíraõ</i>

## Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *admittído*, and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb, *tér*.

<i>térho admittído,</i>	I have admitted.
<i>téns admittído, &amp;c.</i>	thou hast, &c.

## Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle *admittído*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

<i>tínha admittído, &amp;c.</i>	I had admitted
<i>tínhas admittído, &amp;c.</i>	thou hadst, &c.

It may also be conjugated thus; *admittíra*, *admittíras*, *admittíra*, *admittíramos*, *admittíreis*, *admittíraõ*.

## Future.

<i>admittiréi</i>	I shall or will admit
<i>admittirás</i>	
<i>admittirá</i>	
<i>admittirémos</i>	
<i>admittiréis</i>	
<i>admittiráõ</i>	

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>admitte tú</i>	admit thou
<i>admitta elle</i>	let him admit
<i>admittâmos nós</i>	let us admit
<i>admitti vós</i>	admit ye
<i>admittaõ elles</i>	let them admit

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

## Present.

<i>que eu admitta</i>	that I may admit, &c.
<i>admittas</i>	
<i>admitta</i>	
<i>admittâmos</i>	
<i>admittâis</i>	
<i>admittaõ</i>	

## First Preterimperfect.

<i>que eu admittira</i> or <i>admittisse</i>	that I might admit, &c.
<i>admittiras</i> or <i>admittisses</i>	
<i>admittira</i> or <i>admittisse</i>	
<i>admittiramos</i> or <i>admittissemos</i>	
<i>admittireis</i> or <i>admittisseis</i>	
<i>admittiraõ</i> or <i>admittissem</i>	

## Second Preterimperfect.

<i>admittiría</i>	I should or would admit, &c.
<i>admittirías</i>	
<i>admittira</i>	
<i>admittiríamos</i>	
<i>admittiríeis</i>	
<i>admittiríaõ</i>	

## Preterperfect.

Composed of the participle, *admittido*, and the present subjunctive of the verb *tér*.

<i>que eu tenha admittido</i>	that I have admitted
<i>ténhas admittido, &amp;c.</i>	thou hast admitted, &c.

## Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér* and the participle *admittido*.

*se eu tivéra admittido* If I had admitted  
*tivéras, &c.* thou hadst admitted, &c.

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér* and the participle *admittido*.

*eu tería admittido* I should have admitted  
*terías, &c.* thou shouldst, &c.

## First Future.

*se eu admittír* If I shall admit, &c.  
*admittíres*  
*admittír*  
*admittírmos*  
*admittírdes*  
*admittírem*

## Second Future.

It is composed of the first future subjunctive of the verb *tér* and the participle *admittido*.

*se eu tivér admittido* If I shall have admitted  
*tivéres, &c.* thou shalt, &c.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*admittír* to admit

## Preterperfect.

*tér admittido* to have admitted

## PARTICIPLES.

## Present.

*admittido*, for the masc. *admittida*, for the fem. admitted

## Future.

*que há de admittír* that is to admit

## GERUNDS.

*admittíndo* admitting  
*ténho admittido* having admitted

## SUPINES.

*para admittír* to admit

Conjugate after the same manner the following verbs :

<i>Abrir</i> , to open	<i>Luzir</i> , to shine
<i>Conduzir</i> , to conduce	<i>Nutrir</i> , to nourish
<i>Introduzir</i> , to introduce	<i>Reduzir</i> , to reduce, to bring to
<i>Induzir</i> , to induce	<i>Traduzir</i> , to translate
<i>Produzir</i> , to produce	<i>Deduzir</i> , to deduct, &c.

### *Of the Irregular Verbs in ar.*

There are in each conjugation some verbs which do not conform to the common rule, and on that account are called irregulars.

There are but two of the first conjugation, which in some of their tenses depart from the rule of the verb *amar*, viz. *estar* and *dár*. We have already conjugated the first, and the second is conjugated in the following manner.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

##### Present.

<i>dôu</i>	I give	<i>dâmos</i>	we give
<i>dás</i>	thou givest	<i>dâis</i>	you give
<i>dá</i>	he gives	<i>daõ</i>	they give

##### Preterimperfect.

*dava* I did give, &c. (as in regular verbs of the first conjugation)  
*davas*, &c.

##### Preterperfect definite.

<i>dêi</i>	I gave	<i>dêmos</i>	we gave
<i>dêste</i>	thou gavest	<i>dêstes</i>	you gave
<i>dêu</i>	he gave	<i>dêraõ</i>	they gave

##### Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *dádo* and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *tér*; as *tênho dádo*, &c. I have given, &c.

##### Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle *dádo* and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *tér*; as *eu tinha dádo*, &c. I had given, &c.



## Future.

*daréi* I shall or will give, &c. (as in the verb *amár*)  
*darás*, &c.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	<i>demos nós</i> , let us give
<i>dá tu</i> , give thou	<i>dái vós</i> , give thou
<i>dé elle</i> , let him give	<i>dém elles</i> , let them give

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

## Present.

*que eu dê* that I may give, &c.  
*dês*  
*dê*  
*demos*  
*dêis*  
*dém*

## Preterimperfect.

*que eu déra* or *désse* that I might give, &c.  
*déras*, or *désses*  
*déra* or *désse*  
*déramos* or *déssemos*  
*dereis* or *désseis*  
*déraõ* or *déssem*

## Second Imperfect.

<i>daría</i> I should give, &c.	<i>daríamos</i>
<i>darías</i>	<i>daríeis</i>
<i>daría</i>	<i>daríaõ</i>

The preterperfect, preterpluperfect, and the second preterpluperfect, are composed of the participle *dádo*, and the auxiliary verb *têr*, as in the regular verbs.

## Future.

*quando eu dér* when I shall give, &c.  
*déres*  
*dér*  
*dérmos*  
*dérdes*  
*dérem*

## Second Future.

Is composed of the participle *dádo*, &c. as the regular verbs.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

*dár*, to give, &c. as in the regular verbs.*Of the Irregular Verbs in er.*

I begin with *fazér*, *podér*, and *sabér*, because they occur oftenest in discourse.

*Fazér* to do or make.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>fáço</i> I do	<i>fazémos</i> we do
<i>fazes</i> thou dost	<i>fazéis</i> you do
<i>fáz</i> he does	<i>fázem</i> they do

Imperfect.

<i>fazia</i> , I did or did make, &c.	<i>fazíamos</i>
<i>fazias</i>	<i>fazíeis</i>
<i>fazia</i>	<i>fazião</i>

Preterperfect definite.

<i>fiz</i> I made, &c.	<i>fizémos</i>
<i>fizeste</i>	<i>fizestes</i>
<i>fêz</i>	<i>fizerao</i>

Preterperfect.

*têno feito* I had done, &c.  
*têns feito*, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

*tinha feito* I had done, &c.  
*tinhas feito*, &c.

Future.

*farêi* I shall do, &c. (according to the regular verb.)  
*farás*, &c.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>fáze tu</i> do thou	<i>façâmos nós</i> let us do
<i>fáça êlle</i> let him do	<i>fazêi vós</i> do you
	<i>fáçaõ êlles</i> let them do

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*que eu faça* that I may do, &c. (according to the regular verbs.)  
*faças*  
*faça, &c.*

## Preterimperfect.

*que eu fizera* or *fizesse* that I might do, &c.  
*fizéras* or *fizesses*  
*fizera* or *fizesse*  
*fizéramos* or *fizéssemos*  
*fizéreis* or *fizésseis*  
*fizeraõ* or *fizéssem*

## Second Imperfect.

*faría* I should do, &c. *faríamos*  
*farías* *faríeis*  
*faría* *faríaõ*

## Future.

*quando eu fizer* when I shall do, &c.  
*fizéres*  
*fizer*  
*fizérmos*  
*fizerdes*  
*fizérem*

## Second Future.

*quando eu tiver feito* when I shall have done  
*tiveres feito, &c.*

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*fazer,* to do.

## GERUNDS.

*fazendo* doing or in doing.

## PARTICIPLE.

*feito* made or done.

After the same manner are conjugated *desfazer*, to undo; *contrafazer*, to counterfeit; *refazer*, to make again.

*Podér* to be able.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>póssô</i>	I can or am able	<i>podémos</i>	we can
<i>pódes</i>	thou canst	<i>podéis</i>	you can
<i>póde</i>	he can	<i>pódem</i>	they can

Imperfect.

*podia* I could or was able, &c.  
*podias*, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

<i>púde</i>	I could	<i>pudémos</i>	we could
<i>pudéste</i>	thou couldst	<i>pudéstes</i>	you could
<i>póde,</i>	he could	<i>pudéraõ</i>	they could

Preterperfect.

*ténho podido*, &c. I have been able, &c.

Future.

*poderéi* I shall be able, &c.  
*poderás*, &c.

There is no Imperative.

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present.

<i>que eu póssa</i>	that I may be able
<i>póssas</i>	thou mayest be able, &c.
<i>póssa</i>	
<i>possâmos</i>	
<i>possáis</i>	
<i>póssaõ</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>que eu pudera</i> or <i>pudésse</i>	that I might be able
<i>pudéras</i> or <i>pudésses</i>	thou mightest be able, &c.
<i>pudera</i> or <i>pudésse</i>	
<i>pudéramos</i> or <i>pudéssemos</i>	
<i>pudéreis</i> or <i>pudésseis</i>	
<i>pudéraõ</i> or <i>pudéssem</i>	

## Second Imperfect.

*podería* I should be able, &c.  
*poderías, &c.*

## Future.

*quando eu pudér* when I shall be able, &c.  
*pudéres*  
*pudér*  
*pudérmos*  
*pudérides*  
*pudérem*

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*podér* to be able.

## GERUNDS.

*podéndo* being able

## PARTICIPLE.

*puído*, been able

*Sabér*, to know.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>sêi</i>	I know	<i>sabémos</i>	we know
<i>sábes</i>	thou knowest	<i>sabéis</i>	you know
<i>sábe</i>	he knows	<i>sábem</i>	they know

## Imperfect.

*sabía* I did know  
*sabías* thou didst know, &c.  
*sabía, &c.*

## Preterperfect definite.

<i>sóube</i>	I knew, &c.	<i>soubémos</i>
<i>soubéste</i>		<i>soubéstes</i>
<i>sóube</i>		<i>soubéraõ</i>

## Preterperfect.

*ténho sabido* I have known, &c.



## Future.

*saberéi* I shall or will know, &c. (according to the  
*saberás, &c.* regular verbs.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

		<i>saibâmos nós</i>	let us know
<i>sábe tu</i>	know thou	<i>sabéi vós</i>	know you
<i>sáiba elle</i>	let him know	<i>sáibaõ elles</i>	let them know

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

## Present.

<i>que eu sáiba</i>	that I may know
<i>sáibas</i>	thou mayest know, &c.
<i>sáiba</i>	
<i>saibâmos</i>	
<i>saibáis</i>	
<i>saibaõ</i>	

## Imperfect.

<i>que eu soubéra</i> or <i>soubésse</i>	that I might know, &c.
<i>soubéra</i> or <i>soubésse</i>	
<i>soubéra</i> or <i>soubésse</i>	
<i>soubéramos</i> or <i>soubéssemos</i>	
<i>soubéreis</i> or <i>soubésseis</i>	
<i>soubéraõ</i> or <i>soubéssem</i>	

## Second Imperfect.

<i>sabería</i>	I should know, &c.	<i>saberíamos</i>
<i>saberías</i>		<i>saberíeis</i>
<i>sabería</i>		<i>saberíaõ</i>

## Future.

<i>quando eu soubér</i>	when I shall know, &c.
<i>soubéres</i>	
<i>soubér</i>	
<i>soubérmos</i>	
<i>soubérdes</i>	
<i>soubérem</i>	

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*sabér* to know

## GERUND.

*sabêndo* knowing

## PARTICIPLE.

*sabido* (for the masc.) *sabida* (for the feminine) known

Of the Irregular Verb trazer, to bring.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>trágo</i>	I bring	<i>trazêmos</i>	we bring, &c.
<i>trazes</i>	thou bringest	<i>trazêis</i>	
<i>tráz</i>	he brings	<i>trázem</i>	

## Imperfect.

*trazia,* I did bring  
*trazias,* &c. thou didst bring, &c. (according to the regulars)

## Preterperfect definite.

<i>trôuxe</i>	I brought	<i>trouxêmos</i>
<i>trouxêste</i>	thou broughtest, &c.	<i>trouxêstes</i>
<i>trôuxe</i>		<i>trouxêraõ</i>

## Preterperfect.

*têno trazerido* I have brought, &c.  
*tens trazerido,* &c.

## Future.

<i>trarêi</i>	I shall or will bring, &c.	<i>trarêmos</i>
<i>trarás</i>		<i>trarêis</i>
<i>trará</i>		<i>traráõ</i>

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>tráze tu</i>	bring thou	<i>tragâmos nós</i>	let us bring
<i>trága êlle</i>	let him bring	<i>trazêi vós</i>	bring you
		<i>trágaõ êlles,</i>	let them bring

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

## Present.

<i>que êu trága</i>	that I may bring, &c.
<i>trágas</i>	
<i>trága</i>	
<i>tragâmos</i>	
<i>tragâis</i>	
<i>trágaõ</i>	

Imperfect.

*que éu trouxéra* or *trouxésse* that I may bring, &c.  
*trouxéras* or *trouxésse*  
*trouxéra* or *trouxésse*  
*trouxéramos* or *trouxéssemos*  
*trouxéreis* or *trouxésseis*  
*trouxéraõ* or *trouxéssem*

Second Imperfect.

*éu traría* I should bring, &c. *traríaamos*  
*traríaas* *traríaeis*  
*traría* *traríaõ*

Future.

*quándo éu trouxér* when I shall bring, &c.  
*trouxéres*  
*trouxér*  
*trouxérmos*  
*trouxérdes*  
*trouxérem*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

*trazér* to bring

GERUND.

*trazéndo* bringing

PARTICIPLE.

*trazído* masc. *trazída* fem. brought

*Conjugation of the Irregular Verb vêr, to see.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>vêjo</i>	I see	<i>vêmos</i>
<i>vês</i>	thou seest	<i>vêdes</i>
<i>vê</i>	he sees, &c.	<i>vêm</i>

Imperfect.

*vía* I did see, &c.  
*vías*  
*vía* &c.

## Preterperfect definite.

<i>ví</i>	I saw &c.	<i>vimos</i>
<i>vístc</i>		<i>vístes</i>
<i>vío</i>		<i>viraõ</i>

## Preterperfect.

<i>ténho visto</i>	I have seen, &c.
<i>téns visto &amp;c.</i>	

## Future.

<i>veréi</i>	I shall see, &c.
<i>verás, &amp;c.</i>	

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>vê tu</i>	see thou
<i>vêja elle</i>	let him see
<i>vejâmos nós</i>	let us see
<i>vêde vós</i>	see you
<i>vêjaõ elles</i>	let them see him

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

<i>que eu vêja</i>	that I may see, &c.	<i>vejâmos</i>
<i>vêjas</i>		<i>vejâis</i>
<i>vêja</i>		<i>vêjaõ</i>

## Imperfect.

<i>que eu víra or visse</i>	that I might see, &c.
<i>víras or visses</i>	
<i>vira or visse</i>	
<i>víramos or vissemos</i>	
<i>víreis or visseis</i>	
<i>viraõ or vissem</i>	

## Second Imperfect.

<i>eu vería</i>	I should see, &c.	<i>veríamos</i>
<i>verías</i>		<i>veríes</i>
<i>vería</i>		<i>veríaõ</i>

## Future.

<i>quando eu vir</i>	when I shall see, &c.
<i>víres</i>	
<i>vír</i>	
<i>virmos</i>	
<i>virdes</i>	
<i>virem</i>	

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*vêr* to see

## GERUND.

*vêndo* seeing

## PARTICIPLE.

*visto, vista* seen

In like manner are conjugated the compounds *antevêr*, *prevêr*, and *revêr*.

The verb *provêr*, when it signifies *to provide for*, or, *to take care of*, is conjugated in the present indicative thus :

<i>êu provênho</i> , I take care of, &c.	<i>provimos</i>
<i>provêns</i>	<i>provêndes</i>
<i>provém</i>	<i>provém</i>

But when it signifies *to make provision*, it is conjugated thus :

<i>êu provêjo</i> , I make provision, &c.	<i>provêmos</i>
<i>provês</i>	<i>provêis</i>
<i>provê</i>	<i>provem</i>

*Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb dizêr, to say.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>digo</i> , I say, &c.	<i>dizêmos</i>
<i>dizes</i>	<i>dizêis</i>
<i>diz</i>	<i>dizem</i>

## Preterimperfect.

*dizia*, I did say, &c.  
*dizias*, &c.

## Preterperfect definite.

<i>disse</i> , I said, &c.	<i>dissêmos</i>
<i>dissêste</i>	<i>dissêstes</i>
<i>disse</i>	<i>dissêraõ</i>



## Preterperfect.

*ténho ditto*, I have said, &c.*téns ditto*, &c.

## Future.

*diréi* I shall or will say, &c.*dirás*, &c.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>dize tu</i>	say thou
<i>diga elle</i>	let him say
<i>digámos nós</i>	let us say
<i>dizéi vós</i>	say you
<i>digaõ elles</i>	let them say

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

*que eu diga* that I may say, &c.  
*digas*, &c.

## Imperfect.

*que eu disséra* or *dissésse* that I might say, &c.  
*disséras* or *dissésseis*  
*disséra* or *dissésse*  
*disséramos* or *disséssemos*  
*disséreis* or *dissésseis*  
*disséraõ* or *disséssem*

## Second Imperfect.

*diria* I should say, &c.  
*dirias*, &c.

## Future.

*quando eu dissér* when shall I say, &c.  
*disséres*  
*dissér*, &c.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*dizér* to say

## GERUND.

*dizéndo* saying

## PARTICIPLES.

*ditto, ditto* said

Observe, that the compounds *desdizér*, to unsay, and *contradizér*, to contradict, are in all points conjugated like *dizér*.

*Conjugation of the Irregular Verb, querêr, to be willing.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>quéro</i>	I will, or am willing
<i>quêres</i>	thou art willing
<i>quér</i>	he is willing, &c.
<i>querémos</i>	
<i>queréis</i>	
<i>quérem</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>quería</i>	I was willing, &c.
<i>querías, &amp;c.</i>	

Preterperfect definite.

<i>quíiz</i>	I have been willing, &c.
<i>quízeste</i>	
<i>quíiz</i>	
<i>quízémos</i>	
<i>quízestes</i>	
<i>quízéraõ</i>	

Future.

<i>quereréi</i>	I shall be willing, &c.
<i>quererás, &amp;c.</i>	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>quêras tu</i>	be thou willing
<i>quêra elle</i>	let him be willing
<i>queirâmos nós</i>	let us be willing
<i>queirâis vós</i>	be you willing
<i>quêraõ elles</i>	let them be willing

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

<i>que eu quêira</i>	that I may be willing, &c.
<i>quêras, &amp;c.</i>	

## Imperfect.

<i>que eu quizéra</i> or <i>quizésse</i>	that I were willing
<i>quizéras</i> or <i>quizésseis</i>	thou wert willing
<i>quizéra</i> or <i>quizésse</i>	he were willing
<i>quizéramos</i> or <i>quizéssemos</i>	we were willing
<i>quizéreis</i> or <i>quizésseis</i>	you were willing
<i>quizéraõ</i> or <i>quizéssem</i>	they were willing

## Second Imperfect.

<i>eu querería</i>	I should or would be willing, &c.
<i>quererías, &amp;c.</i>	

## Future.

<i>quândo eu quizér</i>	when I shall be willing, &c.
<i>quizéres, &amp;c.</i>	

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>querér</i>	to be willing
---------------	---------------

## GERUND.

<i>querêndo</i>	being willing
-----------------	---------------

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>querído</i>	been willing
----------------	--------------

*Quer* is sometimes a conjunction, when repeated in a sentence, and when it is rendered into English by *whether* and *or*; as, *quer vós o tenhâis feito, quer naõ*, whether you have done that or no. But when it is not repeated, and is joined to the particle *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by *at least*; as, *hum se quer*, one at least; and sometimes by *however*, when joined to the particle *que*; as *cómo quer que seja*, however it be. In all which cases, it is not to be confounded with the third person singular of the indicative of the verb *querér*.

The verb *querér* is sometimes used with the particle *se* instead of the verb *devér*; as, *as cousas naõ se querem feitas á prêssa*, things must not be done in a hurry.

*Of the Irregular Verb valêr, to be worth.*

I shall give no other tenses of this verb than the present indicative, the imperative, and the present of the subjunctive, none but these being irregular.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>válho</i>	I am worth, &c.
<i>váles</i>	
<i>vále</i> or <i>val</i>	
<i>valêmos</i>	
<i>valéis</i>	
<i>válem</i>	

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>vále tu</i>	be thou worth
<i>válha elle</i>	let him be worth
<i>valhâmos nós</i>	let us be worth
<i>valéi vós</i>	be you worth
<i>válhaõ elles</i>	let them be worth

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<i>que eu válha</i>	that I may be worth, &c.
<i>válhas</i>	
<i>válha</i>	
<i>valhâmos</i>	
<i>valháis</i>	
<i>válhaõ</i>	

*Of the Irregular Verb perdêr, to lose.*

This verb changes the *c* before *o* of the present indicative into *d* in the other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except the imperative and present subjunctive. It is conjugated in the following manner :

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>pêro,</i>	I lose, &c.	<i>perdêmos</i>
<i>pêrdes</i>		<i>perdéis</i>
<i>pêrde,</i>		<i>perdem</i>

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>pérde tu</i>	lose thou
<i>pérca elle</i>	let him lose
<i>percâmos nós</i>	let us lose
<i>perdei vós</i>	lose you
<i>pércaõ elles</i>	let them lose

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<i>que eu pérca</i>	that I might lose, &c.
<i>pérças</i>	
<i>pérca, &amp;c.</i>	

The compounds of the verb *tér*, as, *conténho*, I contain; *deténho*, I detain, &c. are conjugated in like manner.

Some verbs of this conjugation are only irregular in the participle passive; as *escríto*, from *escrevêr*; *absólto*, from *absolvêr*.

Those that have the *j* before *o* in the present indicative change the *j* into *g* in all tenses and persons, in which the *j* would otherwise meet with the vowels *i* or *e*; as, *elegêr*, to elect; *eu eléjo*, *tu eléges*, &c. I elect, &c.

## Imperfect.

*elegía*, &c.

## Preter-def.

*elegí elegêste*, &c. I elected, &c.

The verbs ending in *éyo* in the present indicative, change that termination into *ía* in the imperfect, and into *i* in the preter-definite, and are so conjugated.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>eu léyo</i>	I read, &c.	<i>lémos</i>
<i>lés</i>		<i>lédes</i>
<i>lé</i>		<i>lém</i>

## Imperfect.

<i>eu lia</i>	I did read, &c.
<i>lias</i> , &c.	



Preter definite.

*eu li* I read, &c.  
*léste, &c.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

		<i>leámos nós</i>	let us read
<i>lé tu</i>	read thou	<i>léde vos</i>	read you
<i>léa elle,</i>	let him read	<i>léaõ elles</i>	let them read

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*que eu léa* that I may read, &c.  
*léas*  
*léa, &c.*

You may observe that they lose the *y* through all the other moods and tenses. The verb *crér*, to believe, is conjugated in the same manner.

*Of the Irregular Verbs in ir.*

*Ir, to go.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present tense.

<i>vôu</i>	I go	<i>vâmos</i>	we go
<i>vás</i>	thou goest	<i>ídes</i>	you go
<i>vái</i>	he goes	<i>vaõ</i>	they go

Preterimperfect.

<i>hía</i>	I did go, &c.	<i>híamos</i>
<i>hías</i>		<i>híeis</i>
<i>hía</i>		<i>híaõ</i>

Preterperfect definite.

<i>fúi</i>	I went	<i>fómos</i>	we went
<i>fóste</i>	thou wentest	<i>fóstes</i>	you went
<i>fói</i>	he went	<i>fóraõ</i>	they went

Preterperfect.

<i>têno</i>	} <i>ído</i> {	I have gone, &c.
<i>têns, &amp;c.</i>		

## Preterpluperfect.

*tinha* } *ído* } I had gone, &c.  
*tinhas* }

## Future.

*iréi* I shall or will go, &c.  
*irás, &c.*

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

		<i>vâmos nós,</i>	let us go
<i>vâi tu</i>	go thou	<i>íde vós</i>	go ye
<i>vá êlle</i>	let him go	<i>vaõ êlles</i>	let them go

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

*que êu vá* that I may go, &c.  
*vás*  
*vá*  
*vâmos*  
*vâdes*  
*vaõ*

## First Preterimperfect.

*que êu fôra or fôsse* that I might go, &c.  
*fôras or fôsses*  
*fôra or fôsse*  
*fôramos or fôssemos*  
*fôreis or fôsseis*  
*fôraõ or fôssem*

## Second Preterimperfect.

*iría* I should go, &c.  
*irías, &c.*

## Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ído* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

## Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ído* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ido* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

Future.

<i>quando eu fór</i>	when I shall go, &c.
<i>fôres</i>	
<i>fôr</i>	
<i>fôrmos</i>	
<i>fôrdes</i>	
<i>fôrem</i>	

Second Future.

<i>quando eu tivér</i>	{ <i>ido</i> }	when I shall have gone,
<i>tivéres, &amp;c.</i>		&c.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

*ir* to go

GERUND.

*indo* going

PARTICIPLE.

*ido* gone

*Vir*, to come.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>vénho</i> I come, &c.	<i>vimos</i>
<i>véns</i>	<i>víndes</i>
<i>vém</i>	<i>vém</i>

Imperfect.

<i>vínha</i> I did come, &c.	<i>vínhamos</i>
<i>vínhas</i>	<i>vínheis</i>
<i>vínha</i>	<i>vínhaõ</i>

Preter definite.

<i>vím</i> I came, &c.	<i>viémos</i>
<i>viéste</i>	<i>viéstes</i>
<i>véio</i>	<i>viéraõ.</i>

## Preterimperfect.

*ténho vindo* I have come, &c.  
*téns vindo*, &c.

## Future.

*viréi* I shall come, &c.  
*virás*, &c.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

		<i>venhâmos nós</i>	let us come
<i>vém tu</i>	come thou	<i>vinde vós</i>	come you
<i>venha elle</i>	let him come	<i>venhaõ elles</i>	let them come

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*que eu vénha*

## Imperfect.

*que eu viêra*, or *viêsse*

## Second Imperfect.

*viria*, *virias*, &c.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*vir* to come

## GERUND.

*vindo* coming

## PARTICIPLE.

*vindo* come

The compounds of *vir*; as *convir* to be convenient; *sobrevir*, to come unlooked for, are conjugated in the same manner.

*Of the Irregular Verbs*, *mentír*, to lie, *sentír*, to feel; *servír*, to serve; *ferír*, to wound.

These verbs change the *i* of the first person singular of the present tense, indicative, into *e* in the

other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except in the imperative and the present subjunctive. They are conjugated thus :

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>eu minto</i>	<i>tu mētes</i>	<i>elle mēte, &amp;c.</i>
<i>eu sinto</i>	<i>tu sētes</i>	<i>elle sēte, &amp;c.</i>
<i>eu sirvo</i>	<i>tu sēves</i>	<i>elle sēve, &amp;c.</i>

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>mēte tu</i>	<i>minta elle</i>	<i>mintamos nós</i>	<i>mentí vós</i>	<i>mentaõ elles</i>
<i>sēte tu</i>	<i>sinta elle</i>	<i>sintamos nós</i>	<i>sentí vós</i>	<i>sintaõ elles</i>
<i>sēve tu</i>	<i>sirva elle</i>	<i>sirvamos nós</i>	<i>serví vós</i>	<i>sirvaõ elles</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<i>minta</i>	<i>mintas, &amp;c.</i>
<i>sinta</i>	<i>sintas, &amp;c.</i>
<i>sirva</i>	<i>sirvas, &amp;c.</i>

The compounds, *desmentir assentir, consentir, dissentir, presentir*, are conjugated like *mentir* and *sentir*; and also the verbs *afferir, referir, conferir, deferir, differir, inferir*.

*Of the Irregular Verbs affligir, to afflict; corrigir, to correct, fingir, to feign; ungir, to anoint; compungir, frigir, dirigir, tingir, cingir, &c.*

These verbs change the *g* of the infinitive mood into *j* in those tenses where the *g* would otherwise meet with the vowel *o*, as in the first person singular of the present indicative *afflijo*; or *a* as in the third person of the imperative in both numbers, in the first plural of the same tense, and in the present subjunctive.

*Of the Irregular Verb seguir, to follow.*

This verb changes the *e* of the infinitive mood into *i* in the first person singular of the present indi-



cative, *eu sigo*, I follow : in the present subjunctive *que eu siga*, that I may follow ; and in the imperative where it is conjugated thus : *sêgue tu, siga elle, sigamos nós, segui vós, sigaõ elles*.

Observe that the *u* is lost in those tenses where it would otherwise meet with the vowels *o* and *a*, as you see in the examples ; and this observation applies also to the verbs *distinguír*, to distinguish ; *extinguír*, to extinguish, &c.

The compounds are *perseguír*, to persecute ; *consequír*, to obtain ; *prosequír* to pursue.

*Of the Irregular Verb ouvir, to hear.*

This verb changes the *v* of the infinitive mood into *ç* in the first person singular of the present indicative, *eu ouço*, I hear, *tu ouves*, &c. in the present subjunctive and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus : *ouve tu, ouça elle, ouçamos nós, ouvi vós, ouçaõ elles*, hear thou, &c.

*Of the Irregular Verb dormir, to sleep.*

This verb changes the *o* of the infinitive mood into *u* in the first person singular of the present indicative, thus *eu durmo tu dormes, elle dorme*, &c. I sleep, &c. In the present subjunctive, *que eu durma*, &c. that I may sleep ; and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus ; *dorme tu, durma elle, durmamos nós, dormi vós, durmaõ elles*, sleep thou, &c.

*Of the Irregular Verb fugír, to fly away.*

This verb is irregular in the present indicative, and is thus conjugated : *fújo, fôges, fôge, fugimos, fugís, fôgem*, I run away, &c. It is also irregular in the imperative mood where it is conjugated thus : *fôge tu, fúja elle, fujamos nós, fugi vós, fújaõ elles*. Finally, it is irregular in the present subjunctive ; *que eu fúja, fújas*, &c.

It keeps the *u* in all other tenses and moods, as also the *g*.

The verb *surgír*, to arrive, or to come to an anchor, has the same irregularity, and makes *súrto*, in the participle passive.

The verbs, *subír*, *cubrír*, *encubrír*, *descubrír*, *acudir*, *bullír*, *sumír*, *consumír*, *cuspir*, *construír*, *tossír* &c. have the same irregularity in regard to the letter *u*.

*Of the Irregular Verb pedír to ask.*

This verb is irregular in the first person singular of the present indicative and subjunctive, as well as in the imperative, in which it changes the *d* into *ç*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

<i>eu péço</i> I ask, &c.	<i>nós pedímos</i>
<i>tu pédes</i>	<i>vós pedís</i>
<i>elle péde</i>	<i>elles pédem</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

		<i>peçámos nós</i>	let us ask
<i>péde tu</i>	ask thou	<i>pedí vós</i>	ask you
<i>péça elle</i>	let him ask	<i>péçaõ elles</i>	let them ask

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<i>que eu péça</i> that I may ask, &c.	<i>peçámos</i>
<i>péças</i>	<i>peçáis</i>
<i>péça</i>	<i>péçaõ</i>

In like manner is conjugated the verb *medír*, to measure : *eu méço*, *tu médes*, &c.

*Of the Irregular Verb vestír, to dress.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>eu vésto</i>	I dress, &c.	<i>vestímos</i>
<i>véstes</i>		<i>vestís</i>
<i>véste</i>		<i>véstem</i>

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	<i>vistamos nós</i>	let us dress
<i>veste tu</i>	dress thou	<i>vestí vós</i>
		dress you
<i>vista ella</i>	let him dress	<i>vistaõ elles</i>
		let them dress

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>que eu vista</i>	that I may dress, &c.	<i>vistámos</i>
<i>vistas</i>		<i>vistáis</i>
<i>vista</i>		<i>vistaõ</i>

In all other tenses and moods it keeps the letter *e*; and in like manner is conjugated the verb *despír*.

*Of the Irregular Verb sortír, to furnish, or stock.*

*Feyjó* says, that the *o* of this verb is to be changed into *u* in those tenses where the *t* is followed by *e* or *a*, and that it is to be kept when the *t* is followed by *i*; but in the *Fábula dos Planétas* we read, *surtío efféyto*, it took effect: and in *Andrade, 2 part. Apologet.* we read, *naõ sortiraõ efféyto*, where the verb *sortiraõ* is in the same tense, viz. in the preterperfect definite; therefore nothing can be determined about the irregularity of this verb.

*Of the Irregular Verb carpír, to weep.*

This verb is defective, and is only used in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by *i*; as *carpímos, carpís*, we weep, you weep. Preterimperfect, *carpia, carpías, &c.* I did weep, &c.

*Of the Irregular Verb parír, to bring forth young.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>eu páiro</i>	I bring forth, &c.	<i>parímos</i>
<i>páres</i>		<i>parís</i>
<i>páre</i>		<i>párem</i>

## Imperfect.

*paría, &c.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>pâre tu</i>	bring thou forth, &c.	<i>pairâmos</i>
<i>pâira</i>		<i>parí</i>
<i>élla</i>		<i>pâiraõ</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>que êu pâira</i>	that I may say, &c.	<i>pairâmos</i>
<i>pâiras</i>		<i>pairáís</i>
<i>pâira</i>		<i>pâiraõ</i>

*Of the Irregular Verb repetir, to repeat.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>repito</i>	I repeat, &c.	<i>repetimos</i>
<i>repêtes</i>		<i>repetís</i>
<i>repête</i>		<i>repêtem</i>

Imperfect.

*repêlia, repêlias, &c.*  
 Preterperfect definite.  
*repeti, repetiste, &c.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>repête tu</i>	repeat thou, &c.	<i>repitâmos, &amp;c.</i>
<i>repêta</i>		<i>êlle</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>que êu repêta</i>	that I may repeat, &c.
<i>repêtas, &amp;c.</i>	

Imperfect.

*repêтира, or repêtisse* that I might repeat.

*Of the Irregular Verbs sahir, to go out, and cahir, to fall.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>sáyo</i>	I go out, &c.	<i>sahimos</i>
<i>sáhes</i>		<i>sahís</i>
<i>sáhe</i>		<i>sahem</i>

Preterimperfect.

*sahia, sahias, &c.*

Preterperfect definite.

*sahí, sahíste, &c.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	<i>sahâmos nós</i>
<i>sáhe tu</i>	<i>sahí vós</i>
<i>sáya elle</i>	<i>sáyaõ elles</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*que eu sáya, sáyas, &c.*

This is the common way of writing the irregular tenses of the verb *sahír* as well as those of the verb *cahír*, viz. *eu cáyo, tu cáhes, &c.* I fall, &c. according to *Feyjó*,

*Of the Irregular Verb, ordír, to warp in a loom.*

*Feyjó* says that this verb changes the *o* into *u* in those persons where it would otherwise meet with the syllables *da, de, do,*

*Of the Irregular Verb advertír, to warn.*

*Advertír* is irregular in the following tenses, only by changing *vír* into *ver*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>advírto</i>	I warn, &c.	<i>advertímos</i>
<i>advértas</i>		<i>advertís</i>
<i>advérte</i>		<i>advertém</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>advérte tu</i>	warn thou, &c.	<i>advértamos nós</i>
<i>advírta elle</i>		<i>advertí vós</i>
		<i>advírtaõ elles</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>que eu advírta</i>	that I may warn, &c.	<i>advirtâmos</i>
<i>advirtas</i>		<i>advirtáis</i>
<i>advírta</i>		<i>advírtaõ</i>



Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *pôr*, to place.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>pônho</i>	I put, &c.	<i>pómos</i>
<i>põem</i>		<i>pôndes</i>
		<i>põem</i>

Preterimperfect.

<i>púnha</i>	I did put, &c.	<i>púnhamos</i>
<i>púnhas</i>		<i>púnheis</i>
<i>púnha</i>		<i>púnhaõ</i>

Preterperfect definite.

<i>púz</i>	I put, &c.	<i>puzémos</i>
<i>puzéste</i>		<i>puzéstes</i>
<i>póz</i>		<i>puzéraõ</i>

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *tér*, and the participle *pósto*.

Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle *pósto*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

Future.

<i>poréi</i>	I shall or will put, &c.	<i>porémos</i>
<i>porás</i>		<i>poréis</i>
<i>porá</i>		<i>poráõ</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>põem</i>	put thou, &c.	<i>ponhámos nós</i>
<i>pónha</i>	<i>elle</i>	<i>pónde vós</i>
		<i>pónhaõ elles</i>

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present.

*que eu pónha* that I may put, &c.  
*tu pónhas*, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

*que eu puzéra* or *puzésse* that I might put, &c.  
*tu puzéras*, or *puzésses*, &c.

## Second Preterimperfect.

*eu poría,* I should put, &c.  
*tu porías,* &c.

## Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle *pósto*, and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Second Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle *pósto*, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Future.

*quando eu pusér,* when I shall put, &c.  
*tu puséres,* &c.

## Second Future.

Composed of the participle *pósto*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*pór* to put

## GERUND.

*pôndo,* putting

## PARTICIPLE PASSIVE.

*pósto* put

After the same manner are conjugated the verbs derived from *por*; as *compór*, to compose; *dispór* to dispose; *propór*, to propose, &c.

Some verbs are irregular only in the participle passive; as *abérto*, from *abrír*; *escrito*, from *escrevér*, &c.

---

*Of Verbs Neuter.*

Verbs neuter are those which make a complete

sense of themselves, and do not govern any case after them, like the verb sactive ; as *dormir*, to sleep ; *andar*, to go ; *tremér*, to tremble, &c. There are, however, some verbs neuter which may govern an accusative ; as *dormir hum sono profundo*, to sleep soundly ; *eu fui andando meu caminho, e não disse huma palavra*, I went my way, and said not a word. Verbs neuter may also be defined as those which, in their compound tenses, are seldom conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be ; as, I sleep, I tremble, I speak, &c. We may indeed say, *eu tenho dormido*, I have slept ; *eu tenho tremido*, I have trembled ; but not, I am slept, &c. I said *seldom*, because sometimes verbs neuter may be conjugated with the verb *sér* ; as, *sér bem fallado*, to have a good name.

It is necessary to be acquainted with the nature of a verb neuter, to avoid mistakes in the participle, as may be seen in the Syntax of Participles.

---

### Of Reciprocal Verbs.

The term Reciprocal is given to such Verbs as return the action upon the agent, and are conjugated through all their tenses with the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, se, &c.*

#### EXAMPLE.

INDICATIVE	Present.
<i>eu me arrependo</i>	I repent, &c.
<i>tu te arrependes</i>	
<i>elle se arrepende, &amp;c.</i>	

#### Imperfect.

<i>eu me arrependia,</i>	I did repent, &c.
--------------------------	-------------------

and so of the rest.

Yet, it is to be observed that the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, &c.* may be placed either before or after the verb, in the indicative, and consequently we may say, *eu me lembro*, or *eu lembro-me*, I re-

member ; *me lembréi*, or *lembréi-me*, I remembered, &c. But in the imperative they should be placed after the verb, as in the following

## EXAMPLE.

<i>lêmbra-te tu</i>	remember thou, &c.	<i>lembrêmo-nos nós</i>
<i>lêmbre-se elle</i>		<i>lembrái-vos vós</i>
		<i>lêmbrem-se elles</i>

In which example you will observe also, that the first person plural, which in the other verbs is like the first person plūral of the present subjunctive, has the last consonant, *s*, cut off ; and so from *lembrêmos* we cut off the *s* to make *lembrêmo-nos* ; and from *arrepêdâmos* we make *arrepêdâmo-nos*, &c. In regard to the infinitive, we may say, *hé necessário arrepêdêr-se dos peccâdos*, it is necessary to repent of sins ; *he necessário lembrâr-se*, it is necessary to remember ; and not *se arrepêdêr*, or *se lembrâr*. In like manner we may say, *lembrândo-me*, remembering, and not *me lembrândo*. But the present infinitive may be preceded by the particle *pará* (which forms the Portuguese supine), and then the pronoun conjunctive may be placed either before or after it ; and we may say, *para lembrâr-se*, or *para se lembrâr*, to remember, or in order to remember.

In the subjunctive mood, you must put the pronoun conjunctive before the present ; but you must carefully observe, that the pronouns conjunctive must be placed before it when preceded by the particles *se*, if, *que*, that ; thus we may say, *que eu me lembrásse*, *se eu me lembrásse*, that I might remember, &c. but not *que eu lembrásse me*, &c. But when the first preterimperfect is not preceded by any particle, then you must place the pronoun conjunctive after it ; as, *arrepêderame eu disso*, I wish I repented it.

In the second preterimperfect we may place the pronouns conjunctive either before or after it, there-



fore you may say *arrependeria-me se*, &c. or *eu me arrependeria se*, &c. I should repent if, &c.

In the future you must always place the pronouns conjunctive before it; thus, *quando eu me lembrar*, when I shall remember: but not *quando eu lembrar-me*.

Note, all the verbs active may become reciprocals.

EXAMPLE.

<i>eu me amo</i>	I love myself
<i>tu te amas</i>	thou lovest thyself
<i>elle se ama</i>	he loves himself
<i>nós nos amamos</i>	we love ourselves, &c.

*Conjugation of the Reciprocal Verb ir-se, to go away.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>eu me vou</i>	I go away
<i>tu te vás, &amp;c.</i>	thou goest away, &c.

Preterimperfect.

<i>eu me hia</i>	I did go away
<i>tu te hias, &amp;c.</i>	thou didst go away, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

<i>eu me fui,</i>	I went away
<i>tu te foste, &amp;c.</i>	thou wentest away, &c.

Preterperfect.

<i>eu me tenho ido</i>	I am gone away, or I have gone away.
<i>tu te tens ido, &amp;c.</i>	thou hast gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>eu me tinha ido</i>	I was gone away, or I had gone away.
<i>tu te tinhas ido, &amp;c.</i>	thou hast gone away, &c.

Future.

<i>eu me iréi, &amp;c.</i>	I shall or will go away
<i>tu te irás, &amp;c.</i>	thou shalt go away

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>vai-te,</i>	go thou away
<i>vá-se</i>	let him go away
<i>vámo-nos</i>	let us go away
<i>íde-vos</i>	go away, get away, or get you gone
<i>vão-se</i>	let them go away



## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present.

*que eu me vá* that I may go away  
*que tu te vás, &c.* that thou mayest go away, &c.

## First Preterimperfect.

*eu me fôra, or me fôsse* I went away  
*te fôras, or te fôsses, &c.* thou wentest away, &c.

## Second Preterimperfect.

*eu me iria* I would, &c. go away  
*tu te irias* thou wouldst, &c.

## Preterperfect.

*que eu me tenha ido* that I have gone away, &c.

## Preterpluperfect.

*que eu me tivêra, or me tivêsse ido* that I had gone away

## Second Preterpluperfect.

*eu me teria ido* I should have gone away, &c.

## Future.

*quando eu me fôr* when I shall go away, &c.

## Second Future.

*quando eu me tivêr ido* when I shall have gone away, &c.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*ir-se* to go away

## Préterperfect.

*têr-se ido,* to have gone away

## PARTICIPLES.

## Present.

*que se vá* that is gone away

## Preterit.

*ído* gone away

## Future.

*que há de ír-se* that is to go, away

## GERUNDS.

*índo-se* going away  
*têndo-se ído* having gone away

## SUPINE.

*para ír-se* to go, or in order to go away

Observe, that in the compound tenses the pronouns *me, te, &c.* are placed before the auxiliary verb.

2dly. This verb is also used in speaking of vessels to signify their being leaky; as *vái-se a cùba*, the tub leaks. It is also used before the gerunds; as, *o inverno vái-se acabándo*, the winter is drawing towards an end; *élles vão-se preparándo*, they are preparing themselves: in which examples and in the like, the verb is to be rendered into English by the verb *to be* itself, and without addition of the adverb *away*; and sometimes it is placed before the present infinitive; as, *ír-se deitár*, to go to bed.

*Of the Reciprocal Verb vír-se, to come away.*

This verb is to be conjugated like the verb *vir*; but you must place the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, &c.* according to the observations made above.

*Of the Reciprocal Verb avír-se, to agree.*

This is a compound verb, which is to be conjugated by putting the particle *a* before the verb *vír* in all its tenses and moods; attending to

the observations already made concerning the pronouns conjunctive; and also in regard to the reciprocal verb *havér-se*, to behave; in the conjugation of which, no more is necessary than to add the pronouns conjunctive to the verb *havér*.

*Impersonal Verbs.*

There are three sorts of verbs impersonal, which have only the third person singular.

The first are properly impersonals of themselves; as,

<i>succéde</i>	it happens
<i>básta</i>	it is enough, or it suffices
<i>chóve</i>	it rains
<i>trovéja</i>	it thunders

The second are derived from verbs active, followed by the particle *se*, which renders them impersonal; as, *áma-se*, they love; *díz-se*, they say; *nóta-se*, it is noted. They are also called passive impersonals.

The third, which have a great affinity with reciprocal verbs, are conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, *me*, *te*, *lhe*, *nos*, *vos*, *lhes*; as *dóe me* *dóe te*, *dóe lhe*, &c.

The Impersonal Verbs of themselves are,

<i>convém</i>	it is convenient
<i>succéde</i>	it happens, or it falls out
<i>está-me bem</i>	it becomes me
<i>básta</i>	it is enough
<i>há-se</i>	it is necessary
<i>chovísca</i>	it misles
<i>chóve</i> , or <i>cáhe pédra</i>	it hails
<i>géa</i>	it freezes
<i>néva</i>	it snows
<i>fuzúla</i> , or <i>relampaguéa</i>	it lightens
<i>impórta</i>	it matters, it concerns
<i>paréce</i>	it seems

and the like, which are conjugated with the third persons singular of each tense ; as,

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

*chóve* it rains

Imperfect.

*chová* it did rain

Preterperfect definite.

*chovéo* it rained

Preterperfect.

*tem chovído* it has rained

Preterpluperfect.

*tinha chovído* it had rained

Future.

*choverá* it shall or will rain

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*chóva* let it rain

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present.

*que chóva* that it may rain

Imperfect.

*que chovéra, or chovésse* that it might rain

Second Imperfect.

*chovería* it should rain

Future.

*quando chovér* when it shall rain

Second Future.

*quando tiver chovído* when it shall have rained

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*chovér* to rain

The particle *se* which composes the second sort of impersonal verbs, may be placed either before or after them ; as, *diz-se*, they say ; *sábe-se*, it is known ; *sabia-se*, it was known : *logo se sôube*, it was immediately known ; *se diz*, it is said, &c. but sometimes they make no use of the particle *se*, and only put the verb in the third person plural ; as, *dizem*, instead of *se diz*, they say.

In like manner all the verbs active may become impersonal.

In regard to these verbs, observe, that when the noun that follows them is in the singular number, you must put the verb in the singular ; if the noun be in the plural, you must put the verb in the plural.

## EXAMPLE.

*Lôuva-se o capitão*, they praise the captain.  
*Lôuva-se os capitães*, they praise the captains.  
*Vê-se hum hómem*, they see a man.  
*Vêm-se homens*, they see men.

When *he* is used after the word *se*, then *he* is to be rendered into English by *his* or *her* ; as, *lôuva-se-lhe o valôr*, they praise his or her courage.

The third sort of impersonal verbs are such as are conjugated with the pronouns personal, *me*, *te*, *he*, &c. with the third person singular.

## EXAMPLE.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present.

<i>desagrada-me</i>	I am displeased, or it displeases me
<i>desagrada-te</i>	thou art displeased
<i>desagrada-lhe</i>	he or she is displeased
<i>desagrada-nos</i>	we are displeased
<i>desagrada-vos</i>	you are displeased
<i>desagrada-lhes</i>	they are displeased

## Imperfect.

<i>desgradava-me</i>	I was displeased
----------------------	------------------



## Preterperfect definite.

*desagradóu-me* I was displeased

## Future.

*desagradár-me-há* I shall be displeased

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

*que me desagrade* that I may be displeased

## Imperfect.

*que me desagradára* or *me desagradásse* that I were displeased

## Second Imperfect.

*desagradár-me-hia* I should be displeased

Conjugate after the same manner,

*succéde-me*, it happens to me

*dóe-me*, it grieves or it pains me

*paréce-me*, it seems to me

*hé-me preciso*, it behoves me

*agrada-me*, it pleases me

*lémbro-me*, I remember

Many of these impersonal verbs have the third person singular and plural ; as,

*dóe me a pérna*, my leg pains me

*dóem me os ólhos*, I have sore eyes

*o vósso vestido paréce-me nóvo*, your coat appears new to me

*os vóssos sapátos me parécem muito compridos*, your shoes seem to me too long

*Of the Verb sêr, to be.*

The verb *sêr* is also used as an impersonal, as will be seen in the following examples : *hé tempo de levantár-se*, it is time to get up ; *éra tempo de hir*, it was time to go, &c. and particularly when it is conjugated with the adjectives *preciso* or *necessário* ; as, *he preciso* or *necessário fazer isto*, this must be done ; *éra preciso* or *necessário escrevêr*, it was necessary to write ; *eu iria, se fósse preciso*, I would go, if it

should be necessary ; *hé preciso que eu vá*, I must go ; *hé preciso que eu léya*, I must read ; *hé preciso que elle coma*, he must eat ; *seria preciso que eu fósse*, I should go. You see by the last examples, that when the verb *sér* and the adjective are before the conjunctive mood, with the participle *que*, the conjunctive is rendered in English by the infinitive ; but if the verb *sér* is followed by the relative *or* particle *que*, it must then be rendered in English in the following manner ; as, *eu hé que ténho feito aquillo*, 'tis I who have done that ; *tu hé que téns*, &c. 'tis thou who hast, &c. *elle hé que tem*, &c. 'tis he who, &c. *nós hé que témos*, &c. 'tis we who have, &c. *vós hé que téndes*, &c. 'tis you who have, &c. *elles hé que tém*, &c. 'tis they who have, &c. *a léy hé que o mánda*, 'tis the law that prescribes it ; *élla hé que o cré*, 'tis she who believes it ; *elles hé que o fizéraõ*? is it they have done it ? *eu hé que o fiz*, 'twas I who did it ; *entáõ hé que eu tómo as mínhas medidas*, 'tis then I take my measures ; *entáõ hé que eu vi*, 'twas then I saw, or *only* then I saw. You may observe that *que* is not relative in the last examples, and that it is left out in English.

*Of the Verb havêr, when it is impersonal.*

It is to be thus conjugated.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

*há*, or *naõ há* there is, or there is not, or there are, or there are not

Imperfect.

*havía* there was, or there were

Preterperfect definite.

*hóuve* there was or there were

## Preterperfect.

*tem havido* there has been, or there have been

## Preterpluperfect.

*tinha havido* there had been

## Future.

*haverá* there shall be

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*hája* let there be

## OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

*que hája* that there may be

## Imperfect.

*que houvéra* or *houvésse* that there were

## Second Imperfect.

*haveria* there would be

## Preterperfect.

*que tenha havido* if there had been

## Preterpluperfect.

*se tivésse havido* if there had been

## Future.

*quando houver* when there will or shall be

## Second Future.

*quando tiver havido* when there shall have been

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*haver* there to be

## Preterit.

*tér havido* there to have been

## GERUNDS.

*havendo* there being

*tendo havido* in there having been

Those who learn Portuguese are greatly at a loss how to render the following expressions, *there is not* ;

*is there?* although there is nothing more easy. I have explained them at large in the following conjugation.

*Conjugation of the Verb impersonal there is, há, when it marks the place, through all its tenses.*

There is of it	<i>há la disso</i>
There is not of it	<i>naõ há lá disso</i>
Is there of it?	<i>há lá disso?</i>
Is there not of it?	<i>naõ há lá disso?</i>
There was of it	<i>havía lá disso</i>
There was not of it	<i>naõ havia lá disso</i>
Was there of it?	<i>havía lá disso?</i>
Was there not of it?	<i>naõ havia lá disso?</i>
There was of it	<i>houve lá disso</i>
There was not of it	<i>naõ houve lá disso</i>
Was there of it?	<i>houve lá disso?</i>
Was there not of it?	<i>naõ houve lá disso?</i>
There shall be of it	<i>haverá lá disso</i>
There shall not be of it	<i>naõ haverá lá disso</i>
Shall there be of it?	<i>haverá lá disso?</i>
Shall there not be of it?	<i>naõ haverá lá disso</i>
That there may be of it	<i>que hája la disso</i>
That there may not be of it	<i>naõ hája lá disso</i> [ <i>disso</i>
That there were of it	<i>que houvêra or houvêsse lá</i>
That there were not of it	<i>naõ houvêra or houvêsse lá</i>
There would be of it	<i>havería lá disso</i> [ <i>disso</i>
There would not be of it	<i>naõ havería lá disso</i>
Would there not be of it?	<i>naõ havería lá disso?</i>
If there had been of it	<i>se tivêsse havido lá disso</i>
If there had not been of it	<i>se naõ tivêsse havido lá disso</i>
Had there been of it?	<i>teria havido lá disso?</i>
Had there not been of it?	<i>naõ teria havido lá disso?</i>
There would have been of it	<i>teria havido lá disso</i>
There would not have been of it	<i>naõ teria havido lá disso</i>
Would there have been of it?	<i>teria havido lá disso?</i>
Would there not have been of it?	<i>naõ teria havido lá disso?</i>
When there will be of it	<i>quando houvêr lá disso</i>
When there will not be of it	<i>quando naõ houvêr lá disso</i>



When there will have been of it	<i>quândo tivér havído lá disso</i>
When there will not have been of it	<i>quândo não tivér havído lá disso</i>
Will there have been of it?	<i>terá havído lá disso?</i>
Will there not have been too much of it?	<i>não terá havído lá disso?</i>
For there having been too much of it	<i>por tér havído lá demasiada- mente disso</i>
In there having been too little of it	<i>têndo havído lá muito pouco disso</i>

Most sentences beginning with the word *some*, and the verb *to be*, are expressed in Portuguese by the impersonal *há*; as, some friends are false, *há amigos fâlsos*; some Christians are unworthy of that name, *há Christãos que não são dignos de tal nôme*.

Observe, that *há* comes before a substantive even of the plural number.

The impersonal *há*, is besides used to denote a quantity of time, space, and number; as, *há dez ânnos que morréo*, he has been dead these ten years; or, he died ten years ago; *há trinta milhôens d'âlmãs em França*, there are thirty millions of souls in France; *de Páris a Lóndres há 120 légoas*, Paris is 120 leagues from London.

The question of space is asked thus, *quânto há de Páris a Lóndres?* how far is Paris from London.

*Of the impersonal Verb há-se, it is necessary, or must.*

This verb answers to the Italian *bisogna*, and to the French *il faut*, and always requires after it the particle *de*, and the infinitive. It denotes the necessity of doing something, and is Englished by *must*, and sometimes by the verb *to be*, through all its tenses, with the words *necessary*, *requisite*, *needful*, &c. and as it denotes the necessity of doing something in general, without specifying who *must*, therefore the agent coming before *must* may be



either *I* or *we*, *he*, or *she*, or *any body*, according to the subject of the sentence: as,

*Há-se de fazer aquillo*, one, or we, or you, or he, or somebody must do that.

*Há-se de hir*, I or you, or we, or somebody must go.

Sometimes the verb coming after this impersonal, is Englished by the passive voice; as, *há-se de fazer isto*, this must be done.

It is very often joined with *mistér*; as, *há-se de mistér dinhéiro para demândas*, one must have money to go to law; *há-se de mistér hum bóm amigo para fazer fortuna no múnido*, to push one's fortune in the world, one must have a good friend.

In the conjugation of this verb, you must use the verb *to be* with the word *necessary*, as I have already said.

#### EXAMPLE.

Present, *há-se*, it is necessary. Imperfect, *havía-se*, it was necessary; and so through all the tenses and moods.

Sometimes the infinitive that follows the particle *de* is placed between this impersonal and its particle *se*; as, *há-de achár-se*, it will be found; and sometimes the infinitive precedes the impersonal, and this follows the particle *se*; as, *achár-se-há*, it will be found; in this case you must not join the particle *de* to it. Observe, that the infinitive may be also placed between the imperfect tense of this impersonal verb and its particle *se*; as, *havía de achár-se*, it was to be found; but when the infinitive precedes both the impersonal and its particle *se*, then you must put the particle *se* before the impersonal, and make use of the imperfect *hía*, and not *havía*; thus we must say, *achár-se hía*, and not *achár-se havia*.

*Of the Defective Verbs carpír, to weep, and soêr, to be wont.*

The verb *carpír* is used only in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by an *i*; as, *carpĩmos, carpís*, we weep, you weep. Preterimp. *carpía, carpías*, &c. I did weep, &c.

The verb *soêr* is only used in the third persons of the present indicative of the preterimperfect of the same mood, and in the gerund; as, *êlle sóe*, he is wont; *êlles sóem*, they are wont. Imperf. *êlle soía*, he was wont; *êlles sóiaõ*, they were wont. Gerund, *soêndo*, being wont.

## CHAP. VI.

### OF THE PARTICIPLES.

THE participle is a tense of the infinitive, which serves to form the preterperfects and preterpluperfects of all the verbs; as, *ténho amádo*, I have loved; *tinha amádo*, I had loved.

*Amádo* is a participle, and all the verbs in *ar* form the participle in *ádo*; as, *amádo, cantádo*, &c.

*Amádo* is likewise a noun adjective. Example. *Hómem amádo, molhér amáda; livros amádos, létras amádas.*

Some participles are frequently abridged; as, *envólto*, or *envolvído*, *corrúpto*, or *corrompido*, *enxúto* or *enxugádo*; and several others, which the use of authors will point to you.

The regular verbs ending in *er* or *ir* form the participle in *ido*; as, *vendído, recebído, luzído, nutrído*, &c.

There are three sorts of participles ; namely, active, passive, and absolute.

The active participles are composed of the verb *tér* ; as, *ténho amádo, tínha amádo, &c.*

The passive participles are preceded by the verb *sér*, to be ; as, *sóu amádo, séndo louvâdo, &c.*

The passive participles are of the same nature as those called *absolute* in Latin ; and you must observe, that *having* and *being* are often left out in Portuguese.

#### EXAMPLE.

*Féito isto*, having done this.

*Díto isto*, having said so.

*Acabáda a céa*, after he or they have supped.

The auxiliary and participle are not always immediately joined together in compound tenses ; as, *Nós temos, com a graça de Déos, vencido os nóssos inimigos*, we have, by the grace of God, overcome our enemies.

## C H A P. VII.

### OF THE ADVERBS.

THE adverb is that which gives more or less force to the verb.

The adverb has the same effect with the verb as the adjective with the substantive : it explains the accidents and circumstances of the action of the verb.

There are a great many sorts ; as, adverbs of time, place, quantity, &c.

Adverbs of time ; as, at present, *presentemente* ; now, *agóra* ; yesterday, *óntem* ; to day, *hóje* ; never,

*nunca*; always, *sémpre*; in the mean time, *entretánto*.

Adverbs of place; as, where, *ónde*; here, *aqui*; from whence, *dónde*; there, *ali*; from hence, *dáquí*; above, *em cima*, below, *em báxo*; far, *lónge*; near, *pérto*.

Adverbs of quantity; as, how much, *quánto*, how many, *quántos*; or *quántas*; so much, *tánto*; much, *muíto*; little, *póuco*.

A great many adverbs are formed from adjectives, changing *o* into *aménte*; *sánto*, *santaménte*, holily; *rico*, *ricaménte*, richly; *dóuto*, *doutaménte*, learnedly.

From adjectives in *e* or *l* we likewise form adverbs, by adding *ménte* to them; as,

*Constánte*, *constantéménte*, constantly.

*Diligénte*, *diligentéménte*, diligently.

*Prudénte*, *prudentéménte*, prudently.

*Fiél*, *fielménte*, faithfully.

In order to assist the memory of those who are learning the Portuguese language, I have here collected a large number of adverbs, which, by frequent repetition, may be easily retained, especially those terminated in *ménte*.

A COLLECTION OF ADVERBS.

<i>Abundantéménte</i> , abundantly	<i>Adéos</i> , farewell	
<i>Com razaõ</i> , justaménte, justly	<i>Admiravelménte</i>	} admirably
<i>Absolutaménte</i> , absolutely	<i>Maravilhosaménte</i>	
<i>A Escachapérnas</i> , or a cavalleíro, a-straddle	<i>A's mël maravílhas</i>	
<i>Agóra</i> , or <i>por hóra</i> , now at this time	<i>Astutaménte</i> , cunningly	
<i>Já</i> , <i>para já</i> , now, immediately	<i>Atreiçoadaménte</i> , treacherously	
<i>Com condiçãõ</i> , upon condition	<i>De maravílha</i> , very seldom	
<i>De páрте</i> , aside	<i>A miúdo</i> , often	
<i>De travéz</i> , askew, asquint;	<i>Assím</i> , so	
as, <i>olhár de travéz</i> , to look askew, or asquint <i>askance</i>	<i>Taõ</i> , so	
<i>Actualménte</i> , actually	<i>A'préssa</i> , in haste	
<i>De propósito</i> , purposely	<i>Facilménte</i> , easily	
	<i>A'o avéssõ</i> , or <i>ás avéssas</i> , the wrong side outward	



<i>De improviso</i> , or <i>improvisamente</i> , unawares	<i>A'manhã</i> , to-morrow
<i>Antigamente</i> , anciently	<i>A'manhã pela manhã</i> , to-morrow morning
<i>Quasi</i> , pretty near, almost	<i>Depois d' a' manhã</i> , after to-morrow
<i>Então</i> , then	<i>Ultimamente</i> , lastly
<i>Dêsde então</i> , since that time	<i>Cómo</i> , as
<i>Dêsde quando?</i> since when?	<i>Cómo?</i> how?
<i>De quando ha?</i> from what time? how long?	<i>Cêdo</i> , soon
<i>De quando em quando</i> , now and then, ever and anon	<i>Târde</i> , late
<i>Quando bem</i> , or <i>quando quando</i> albeit, although it should be	<i>Primêiro que</i> , before that
<i>Quando muito</i> , at the most	<i>Primêiro que tudo</i> , before all, or in the first place
<i>Quando menos</i> , at least	<i>Fôra</i> , abroad, out
<i>Cá</i> , here, or hither	<i>Já</i> , already
<i>Lá</i> , there	<i>De salto</i> , at one jump
<i>Alí</i> , there, in that place	<i>De quando em quando</i> , from time to time
<i>Ahí</i> , {	<i>A'ntes</i> , before
	there expresses the place where stands the person spoken to; as <i>ahí onde estás</i> , there where you are
<i>Acolá</i> , there	<i>Depois</i> , afterwards
<i>Tráz</i> , or <i>detráz</i> , behind	<i>Juntamente</i> , together
<i>Para trás</i> , backward	<i>Enteiramente</i> , entirely
<i>I'sto hé</i> , to wit	<i>A'o redôr</i> , or <i>em tôrno</i> , about
<i>Em vez</i> , instead	<i>De bálde</i> , in vain
<i>Também</i> , also	<i>Loucamente</i> , madly
<i>Tânto que</i> } as soon as	<i>Muito</i> , very
<i>Lôgo que</i> }	<i>Atrevidamente</i> , boldly
<i>De pensádo</i> , wilfully	<i>Felicemente</i> , happily
<i>Acáso</i> , by chance	<i>Vergonhósamente</i> , shamefully
<i>Fixamente</i> , stedfastly	<i>Nunca</i> , never
<i>Finalmente</i> , finally	<i>Nunca mais</i> , never since
<i>Livremente</i> , freely	<i>Lôgo</i> , immediately
<i>Muito</i> , much	<i>Ainda</i> , yet; as, <i>ainda não veio</i> , he is not come yet
<i>Deprêssa</i> , quickly	<i>Ainda</i> , even; as, <i>seria vergonha ainda o fallar nisso</i> , it were a shame even to speak of it
<i>Aquí</i> , here	<i>Nem se quer</i> , even
<i>Até aquí</i> , as far as here, or till now, or hitherto	<i>Vilmente</i> , basely
<i>D'aquí</i> , <i>em diante</i> , henceforward, or hereafter	<i>Mal</i> , ill
<i>Bem</i> , well	<i>Máis</i> , more
	<i>Mênos</i> , less
	<i>Até</i> , until, or even
	<i>Sim</i> , yes



<i>Naõ</i> , no, not	<i>Quãdo</i> , when
<i>Onde</i> , where	<i>Nãda</i> , nothing
<i>De cõr</i> , by heart	<i>Verdadeiramẽte</i> , truly
<i>A's vêzes</i> , sometimes, from time to time	<i>Dẽtro</i> , within
	<i>Devagãr</i> , softly

## CHAP. VIII.

## OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS are a part of speech indeclinable, most commonly set before a noun, a pronoun, or verb.

Every preposition requires some case after it, as you will see in the following collection ;

## Genitive.

- Antes do dia*, before day-break  
*Diãte de Deos*, before God  
*Dẽtro da igrẽja* within the church  
*De trãz ao palãcio*, behind the palace  
*Debãxo da mẽsa*, under the table  
*Em cima da mẽsa*, upon the table  
*Alẽm*, besides  
*Alẽm dos mãres*, on that side of the seas  
*Alẽm dẽsso*, besides that, moreover  
*Alẽm de que*, idem  
*Aquem*, or *dãquem dos mãres*, on this side of the seas  
*Ao redõr*, or *em contõrno da cidãde*, round about the city  
*Pẽrto de Lõndres*, near London  
*Acẽrca da quẽlle negõcio*, concerning that affair  
*Fõra da cãsa*, out of the house  
*Fõra de perĩgo*, out of danger  
*Fõra de si*, out of one's wits

*This preposition governs also a nominative ; as, fõra seu irmãõ*, except his brother, or his brother excepted.

- De frõnte de mĩnha cãsa*, over-against my house.  
*De frõnte da igrẽja*, facing the church  
*Despõis de cẽa*, after supper

## Dative.

- Quãto aquillo*, with respect to that  
*Pegãdo à murãlha*, close to the wall

*Dêsde o bico do pé até a cabeça*, from top to toe

Accusative.

*Perânte o juíz*, before the judge.

*E'ntre*, between, among, or amongst

*E'ntre os hómens*, among men

*Sóbre a mēsa*, upon the table

*Confórme*, or *segúndo a léy*, according to the law

*Por amór de Déos*, for God's sake

*Pelo mún-do*, through the world

*Pela rúa*, through the streets

*Pelas térras*, through the lands

*Por grânde que séja*, let it never be so great

*Côntra éllés*, against them

*Tráz do tēmplo*, behind the temple

*Durânte*, during ; as, *durânte o invérno*, during the winter

We shall be more particular about prepositions when we examine their construction.

## CHAP. IX.

### OF THE CONJUNCTIONS.

A CONJUGATION is an indeclinable part of speech which serves to join the members and parts of speech together, in shewing the dependency of relation and coherency between the words and sentences.

Some conjugations are copulative, which join, and, as it were, couple two terms together ; as, *e*, and : *Portuguézes e Inglêses*, Portuguese and English.

Some are disjunctive, which shew separation or division ; as, *nem*, nor, neither ; *ou*, either, or. Example ; *nem êste, nem aquêlle*, neither this, nor that ; *ou êste, ou aquêlle*, either this or that ; *nem máis, nem ménos*, neither more nor less ; *quer o faça, quer não, tudo para mim hé o mēsmo*, it is all one to me whether he does it, or no ; *quer séja verdáde, quer não*, whether it be true, or not ; *nem se quer hum*, not even one.

The adversative denote restriction, or contrariety ;

as, *mas*, or *porém*, but ; *contúdo*, yet, however ; *mas antes*, or *péllo contrário*, nay.

The conjunctions conditional suppose a condition, and serve to restrain and limit what has just been said ; as, *se*, if ; *com condiçám que*, *com isto que*, *dádo caso que*, provided that, or upon condition that, or in case that, &c.

The concessive, which shew the assent we give to a thing ; as, *embóra*, or *séja embóra*, well and good ; *está feito*, done, agreed.

The causal shew the reason of something ; as, *porqué*, for, or because, or why.

The concluding denote a consequence drawn from what is before ; as, *lógó* or *por consequência*, therefore, then, or consequently.

The transitive, which serve to pass from one sentence to another ; as, *além disso*, moreover, or besides that ; *sóbre túdo*, or *em súmma*, after all, upon the whole, in the main ; *a propósito*, now I think of it, or now we are speaking of that.

There are others of a different sort ; as, *se quér*, or *ao ménos*, at least ; *aindaque*, although ; *de sórte que*, so that ; *antes quero pedir que furtár*, I'll rather beg than steal ; *antes morreréi que dizér-volo*, I'll rather die than tell you ; *já que*, since, &c.

To the above-mentioned parts of speech grammarians have added *Interjections*, which are particles serving to denote some passion or emotion of the mind ; but there is another sort, which may be called demonstrative ; as, *aquí* and *lá* ; Ex. *éste hómem aquí*, this man ; *aquélle molhér lá*, that woman, &c. and some others continuative, because they denote continuation in the speech ; as, *com efféito*, in effect ; *álem disso*, besides ; *óra vejámos*, now let us see ; *finalmente fômonos embóra*, and so, sir, we went away. To which we may add those invented to imitate the sounds of dumb creatures, and the noise which is occasioned by the clashing of bodies against one another ; as, *sáz*, *tráz*, thwick-thwack, &c.

*Interjective Particles.*

Of Joy.

*Ha, ha, ha!* Ha, ha, ha!*Oh que gósto!* Oh joy!

Of Grief.

*Ay!* Alas! ah!*Ay de mim!* Woe is me! lack!*Méu Déos!* My God!

Of Pain.

*Ay!* Ay!*Oh!* Oh!

To encourage.

*A'nimo!**O'ra vámos!* } Come, come on!

To call.

*O, olá,* Ho, hey, hip!

Of admiration or surprise.

*O, O lá, ahi!* Lack-a-day!*A'pre!* Heyday!

Of aversion.

*Irra!**Náda!* } Away, away with, fye!*Fóra!* }

For making people go out of the way, or stand away.

*Gúardem-se,* or *arrédem-se!* Have a care, clear the way, or stand away!

For shouting.

*Viva!* Huzza!

Of silence.

*Calávicos!* Hush! Peace!

Of cursing and threatening.

*Ai, guái!* Woe!

For derision.

*Ah!* Ah! oh! oh! oh!

Of wishing.

*O'provéra a Déos!* Would to God!



*Oxalá!* or *hah!* O that!

*O se!* Would!

The interjection *O* serves for different emotions of the mind, as admiration, grief, wish, &c. and sometimes is used ironically, but differently uttered, according to the emotion which it expresses.

*Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language.*

An <sup>to</sup>	<i>António</i>	Anthony
Seb <sup>am</sup>	<i>Sebastião</i>	Sebastian
B <sup>mo</sup> P <sup>e</sup>	<i>Beatíssimo Pádre</i>	The most blessed Father
Cap <sup>m</sup>	<i>Capitão</i>	Captain
Comp <sup>a</sup>	<i>Companhia</i>	Company
Corr <sup>o</sup>	<i>Carrêio</i>	Post
D.	<i>Dom or Dona</i>	Don or Dona
D <sup>r</sup> , D <sup>or</sup>	<i>Doutór</i>	Doctor
D <sup>s</sup>	<i>Déos</i>	God
D <sup>o</sup> , D <sup>a</sup>	<i>Ditto, ditta</i>	Said
Ex <sup>mo</sup> , Ex <sup>m</sup>	<i>Excellentíssimo, ma</i>	Most excellent
V. E.	<i>Vossa excellência</i>	Your Excellence
V. S.	<i>Vossa senhoria</i>	Your Lordship
V. A.	<i>Vossa altêsa</i>	Your Highness
V. M. or V <sup>mcc</sup>	<i>Vossa mercê</i>	You
V. P.	<i>Vossa paternidade</i>	Your Paternity
V. Mag <sup>de</sup>	<i>Vossa magestade</i>	Your Majesty
S.	<i>Santo</i>	Saint
Fran <sup>co</sup>	<i>Francisco</i>	Francis
G <sup>de</sup>	<i>Guárde</i>	Save
J. H. S.	<i>Jesús</i>	Jesus
M <sup>s</sup> a <sup>s</sup>	<i>Muitos annos</i>	Many Years
M <sup>e</sup>	<i>Mestre</i>	Master
S <sup>or</sup> , S <sup>ra</sup>	<i>Senhór, óra</i>	Sir, Lady
R <sup>mo</sup>	<i>Reverendíssimo</i>	Most Reverend
P <sup>a</sup>	<i>Para</i>	For
Q <sup>e</sup>	<i>Que</i>	That
Q <sup>do</sup>	<i>Quando</i>	When
Q <sup>m</sup>	<i>Quem</i>	Who
Q <sup>to</sup>	<i>Quanto</i>	How much
Supp <sup>te</sup>	<i>Supplicante</i>	Petitioner
Gen <sup>al</sup>	<i>General</i>	General
Tent <sup>e</sup>	<i>Tenênte</i>	Lieutenant
V. G.	<i>Vérbe grátia</i>	For Example

And many others that must be learned by use.



## P O R T U G U E S E

## G R A M M A R .

## P A R T II.

## C H A P. I.

## O F T H E D I V I S I O N O F S Y N T A X .

**S**YNTAX is a Greek word, by the Latins called *construction*; and it signifies the right placing and connecting of words in a sentence. It is divided into three sorts; the first, of Order or Arrangement; the second, of Concordance; the third of Government. The Syntax of Order or Arrangement, is the fit disposition of words in a sentence. The Syntax of Concordance, is when the parts of speech agree with one another, as the substantive with the adjective, or the nominative with the verb. The Syntax of Government, is when one part of speech governs another.

For the sake of those who, perhaps, have not a grammatical knowledge of their own language, I shall lay down some general rules of Portuguese construction.

*Of the Order of Words.*

1. The nominative is that to which we attribute the action of the verb, and is generally ranged in the first place ; it may be either a noun or pronoun, as, *Francisco escreve*, Francis writes ; *eu fállo*, I speak.

2. When the action of the verb is attributed to many persons or things, these all belong to the nominative, and are ranged in the first place, together with their conjunction ; as, *Pédro e Páulo lém*, Peter and Paul read.

3. The adjectives belonging to the nominative substantive, to which the action of the verb is attributed, are put after the substantive, and before the verb ; as, *os estudántes morigerádos e diligéntes estudáõ*, the obedient and diligent scholars study.

4. If the nominative has an article, this article always takes the first place.

5. Sometimes an infinitive is put for a noun, and stands for a nominative ; as *o dormir faz bem*, sleeping does one good ; and sometimes a verb with its case ; as, *he ácto de humanidáde ter compaixão dos afflictos*, to have compassion on the afflicted is an act of humanity.

6. The nominative is sometimes understood ; as, *ámo*, where you understand *eu* ; and so of the other persons of the verb.

7. After the nominative you put the verb ; and if there is an adverb, it is to be placed immediately after the verb, whose accident and circumstances it explains ; as, *Pédro áma pôr extrémo a gloria*, Peter is extremely fond of glory.

8. The cases governed by the verb are put after it ; they may be one, or many, according to the nature of the action ; as, *eu ámo a Pédro*, I love Peter. *Fáço presénte de hum livro a Páulo*, I make a present of a book to Paul.

9. The preposition is always put before the case it governs ; as, *pérto de casa*, near the house.

10. The relative is always placed after the antecedent ; as, *Pédro o qual estúda*, Peter who studies.

## II. Of Concordance.

1. The adjectives agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case ; as, *hómem virtuóso*, a virtuous man ; *bélla molhér*, a handsome woman ; *sumptuósos palácios*, &c. sumptuous palaces, &c.

2. When two or more substantives singular come together, the adjective belonging to them must be put in the plural ; as, *tánto el réy cómo a rainha montádos a cavállo parécem bem*, both the king and the queen look well when they ride.

3. If the substantives happen to be one in the singular and the other in the plural, or to be of different genders, the adjective common to both agrees in number and gender with the last ; as, *élle tinha os ólhos e a bóca abérta*, or *élle tinha a bóca e os ólhos abértos*, his eyes and mouth were opened. *As lagóas e ríos estávaõ congeládos*, the ponds and rivers were frozen.

4. But when there is one or many words between the last noun and the adjective, that adjective (common to all) agrees with the noun masculine, though the last noun be feminine ; and if the nouns are in the singular, then the adjective common must be put in the plural number and masculine gender ; as, *o ríto e a lagóa estávaõ cogeládos* ; the pond and river were frozen. *O trabálho, a indústria, e a fortúna unídos* ; pains, industry, and fortune joined together.

5. Every verb personal agrees with its nominative, expressed or understood, both in number and person.

6. The relative *qual* with the article agrees entirely with the antecedent ; but without the article

and denoting an absolute quality, it agrees with what follows; as, *aquélle, coração o qual*, &c. that heart which, &c. *Considerándo quâes seriaõ as condições*, &c. considering which would be the conditions, &c.

7. The question and answer always agree in every thing; as, *a que senhõra perténce vme<sup>ce</sup> ? elle respondéo, perténço á rainha*: To what lady do you belong, sir? he answered, I belong to the queen.

### III. *Of the Dependence of the Parts of Speech on one another.*

1. The nominative being the basis of the sentence, the verb depends on it, as the other cases depend on the verb. The adjective depends on the substantive that supports it; and the adverb on the verb whose accidents it explains.

2. The genitive depends on a substantive, expressed or understood, by which it is governed.

3. The accusative depends either on a verb accusative, or on a preposition.

4. The ablative depends on a preposition by which it is governed; as, *párto de Rõma*, I go from Rome.

5. The dative and vocative have, strictly speaking, no dependence on the other parts: the dative is common, as it were, to all nouns and verbs; the vocative only points out the person to whom you speak.

I now come to the Construction of the several parts of speech.



## CHAP. II.

## OF THE SYNTAX OF ARTICLES.

BEFORE we come to the syntax of the articles, remember that *o, a, os, as,* are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns, but not when joined to the verbs.

Those who understand Latin will quickly perceive the difference, if they take notice that every time they render *o, a,* by *illum, illam, illud;* or by *eum, eam, id;* and *os, as,* by *illos illas, illa;* or by *eos, eas, ea;* they are relative pronouns.

1. The article is used before the names of the species or things which can be spoken of; therefore nouns of substances, arts, sciences, plays, metals, virtues, and vices, having no article before them in English, require the article in Portuguese; as,

*O ouro e a prata não podem fazer feliz ao homem,*  
gold and silver cannot make the happiness of man.

*A virtude não hé compativel com o vicio,* virtue cannot agree with vice.

*A philosophia he húma sciência muito nóbre,* philosophy is a very noble science.

*Joguemos as cartas,* let us play at cards.

2. The article is not placed before a substantive which is followed by the adjective of number that stands for a surname, or meet with a proper or Christian name; as, *Joseph Primeiro,* Joseph the First.

3. When a book or some part of it, as chapter, page, &c. is quoted, the adjective of number may come either before or after the substantive; but if it comes after, the two words are construed without the article; as, *livro priméiro, capítulo segundo,* &c. book i. chapter ii. If the adjective of number



comes before the substantive, it takes the article ; as, *o priméiro livro*, the first book.

4. *O* placed before *que* signifies *what* or *which* ; as, *fáça o que quisér*, let him do what he likes ; *o que eu fiz*, which I did.

5. The article is never made use of before proper names of men, women, gods, goddesses, saints.

6. The article is not used in Portuguese before the pronouns possessive relative ; as, *de quem he ésta casa ? he minha, hé tua, &c.* whose house is this ? it is mine, it is thine, &c.

7. When a mount's, mountain's or hill's name, is preceded by the word *monte*, it takes neither article nor preposition ; as, *o Monte Atlánte*, Mount Atlas ; *os Montes Pirenéos*, the Pirenean Mountains ; but after the word *serra*, a ridge of hills, it takes the article ; as, *a Serra da Estrélla*, Mount-Strella ; *Serra do Potósi*, Mount Potosi ; however, they say, also, *Serra Lióa*.

8. The noun of the measure, weight, and the number of the things that have been bought, requires the articles ; as, *o tréigo vénde-se a tánto o alqueire*, wheat sold so much a peck, three quarts and one pint.

*A manteíga vénde-se a tánto o arrátel*, butter cost so much a pound.

*Os óvos véndem-se a tánto a dúzia*, eggs are sold so much a dozen.

9. No article is used with proper names of persons and planets, except *a térra*, the earth ; *a sól*, the sun ; *a lúa*, the moon.

10. When proper names are used in a determinate sense, that is, when they are applied to particular objects, then they take the article ; *o Déos dos Christãos*, the God of Christians ; *o Archimédes de Inglaterra*, the Archimedes of England. The proper names of renowned poets and painters keep also the article ; as, *o Camóens*, *o Pope*, *o Tássó*, *o Ticiáno*, &c.

11. The indefinite article *de* is used before nouns following one of this, *sôrte*, *espécié*, *género*, and any other noun of which they express the *kind*, *character*, *quality*, and *nature*: which sort of nouns are usually Englished by an adjective, or even by the substantive itself placed adjectively, and making together, as it were, but a word compound; as, *Dor de cabeça*, the head ach; *húma sôrte de fruto*, a sort of fruit; *fallár de tólo*, a foolish speech.

Sometimes the English adjective may be made an adjective in Portuguese, as in the last example *húm fallár tólo*, a foolish speech; but not unfrequently the Portuguese express the English adjective by a substantive of the same signification with *de* before the other noun, though they have an adjective of the same nature as the English adjective; as, *o diábo de minha molhér*, my devilish wife; and sometimes the adjective is used by them substantively, or the substantive is understood; as, *o velháco de meu filho*, my rascally son; *a velháca de sua mãy*, his or her rascally mother. Finally they also make use of the definite article; as, *o diábo do hómem*, or *da molhér*, the devilish man or woman; *a póbre da molhér*, the poor woman, &c.

12. Nouns are used without article in the following cases:

1st. At the title of a performance, and in the middle of sentences, where they characterise in a particular manner the person or thing spoken of, in which case the English use especially the particle *a*; as,

*Discúrso sôbre as obrigacôens da religião natural*, a discourse concerning the obligations of natural religion.

*Priméira páрте*, the first part.

*O Conde de Clermont, príncipe do Sângue, morréo*, &c. the count of Clermont, a prince of the blood, died, &c.

*O S<sup>to</sup> Antonio ; não de noventa peças*, the St. Anthony ; a ninety gun ship.

2ndly. In sentences of exclamation ; as,

*As más bellas flôres são as que menos duraõ ; qualquér chûva as desmáia, o vênto as murcha, o sól as queima, e acába de secár ; sem fallár núma infinidade de inséctos que as perséguem e deítaõ a perdér ; natural e verdadeíra imágem da belléza das senhôras !*  
the most beautiful flowers last but a very short time ; the least rain tarnishes them, the wind withers them, the sun scorches them, and completes the drying of them ; without mentioning an infinite number of insects that spoil and hurt them : a natural and true image of ladies' beauty !

3dly. When they meet with a noun of number in an indefinite sense ; as, *mil soldádos de cavállo cóntra cem infântes*, a thousand horse against an hundred foot.

*Tênho lido dous poétas*, I have read two poets, that is, any two out of all that ever existed.

But before a noun of number, in a definite sense, it would take the article ; as,

*Tênho lido os dous poétas*, I have read both poets ; because this plainly indicates a definite two, of whom some mention has been made already.

*Os cem infântes que combatêraõ contra os mil de cavállo, que, &c.* the hundred foot that fought with the thousand horse, that, &c.

4thly. After the verb *sér*, when it signifies *to become*, and after *sér tomádo por*, to be accounted ; *passár por*, to pass for ; as, *élle será doutór com o témpo*, he will become a doctor in time ; *élle passa por marinheíro*, he passes for a sailor.

When the adjective is used substantively, it must have the neuter article *o* before it :

*O vérde offênde menos a vísta que o vermélho*, green hurts the eye less than red.

There are also some adverbs preceded by the



neutral article *o*; as the following, *o melhor que eu pudér*, the best I can; *o menos que fôr possível*, the least possible.

Articles are repeated in Portuguese before as many nouns (requiring the article) as there are in the sentence; as,

*O ouro, a prata, a saúde, as honras, e os deleites não podem fazer feliz ao homem que não tem sciência nem virtúde*, gold, silver, health, honours, and pleasures, cannot make a man happy without wisdom and virtue.

The article *o* is put before the word *senhór*, sir, or my lord; as,

*O senhór duque*, my lord duke; *o senhór presidente*, my lord the president; *os senhores*, the gentlemen; *dos senhores*, of the gentlemen.

The feminine article *a* must be prefixed to *senhóra*, my lady, or madam; as, *a senhóra duquesa*, or *condessa de*, &c. my lady duchess, or countess of, &c.

The article is never used in Portuguese as it is in English, before *máis*, more, or *ménos*, less, in the following sentences: *quânto máis vivêmos, tanto máis aprendêmos*, the longer we live, the more we learn; *quânto máis hum hydrópico bebe, máis séde tem*, the more an hydropic drinks, the more thirsty he is; *quânto máis hum homem he póbre, quânto ménos cuidádos tem*, the poorer people are, the less care they have, &c.

Sometimes the English particle *to*, before infinitives, is rendered in Portuguese by the article *o*; as, *he fácil o dizêr, o vêr*, &c. it is easy to say, to see, &c.

In a word, *the natural associators with articles* are those *common appellatives* which denote the several genera and species of beings, or those words which, though indefinite, are yet capable, through the article, of becoming definite. Therefore *Apollonius* makes it part of the pronoun's definition, to refuse

coalescence with the article; and it would be absurd to say *o éu*, the I; or *o tu*, the thou; because nothing can make those pronouns more definite than they are.

N. B. When the adjective *hum*, *húma*, is used as an article in Portuguese, it respects our primary perception, and denotes individuals as unknown; but the articles, *o a*, respect our secondary perception, and denote individuals as known. To explain by an example: I see an object pass by, which I never saw till then; what do I say? *Alí vái hum póbre com húma bárba comprída*, there goes a beggar with a long beard. The man departs, and returns a week after; what do I say then? *Alí vái o póbre da bárba comprída*, there goes the beggar with the long beard.

### CHAP. III.

#### OF THE SYNTAX OF NOUNS; AND FIRST, OF THE SUBSTANTIVES.

WHEN two or more substantives come together, without a comma between them, they all govern each the next in the genitive, the first governing the second, the second the third in the same case, and so on (that is, the first is always followed by the preposition *de*, or by the article before the next noun); but that genitive can never come in Portuguese before the noun that governs it, as in English:

*A philosophia de Newton*, Newton's philosophy.

*As guardas do príncipe*, the prince's guards.

*A porta de casa*, the house-gate.



*Eis aquí a casa ao companheiro do irmão de minha molhér,* here is my wife's brother's partner's house.

When two substantives singular are the nominative of a verb, this must be put in the plural; as, *mêu irmão e meu pái estão no câmpo*, my brother and my father are in the country.

If the nominative is a collective name, the verb is always put in the singular; as, *tôda a cidade assistio*, all the city was present.

#### OF THE SYNTAX OF ADJECTIVES.

Of adjectives, some are put before the noun, and some after; and others may be put indifferently, either before or after.

The pronouns adjective possessive, *mêu, teu, seu,* &c. and adjectives of number, come before the substantive as in English. Ex. *Mêu pái*, my father; *a sua casa*, his house; *dúas peçôas*, two people; *o primeiro homem*, the first man.

But when the adjective of number stands for a surname, or meets with a proper or Christian name, it comes after the substantive, without the article; as, *João, V.* John the fifth.

*These following Adjectives come after the Substantive.*

1st. Verbal adjectives and participles; as, *hum homem divertído*, a comical, a merry man; *huma molhér estimáda*, a woman esteemed.

2dly. Adjectives of names of nations; as, *hum mathemático Inglês*, an English mathematician; *hum alfaiáte Francéz*, a French taylor; *música Italiána*, Italian music.

3dly. Adjectives of colour; as, *hum vestído negro*, a black suit of clothes; *hum capóte vermélho*, a red cloak, &c.

4thly. Adjectives of figure; as, *húma mésa redonda*, a round table; *hum câmpo triangular*, a triangular field, &c.

5thly. Adjectives expressing some physical or natural quality; such are *quente*, hot; *frío*, cold; *húmido*, wet; *corcovado*, hunch-backed, &c.

Most other adjectives are placed before or after the substantive; as, *sânto*, holy; *verdadeiro*, true, &c.

If the substantive has three or more adjectives belonging to it, they must absolutely be put after it with the enclitic *e* before the last, which must likewise be observed, even when there be but two adjectives; for the Portuguese don't say, *húma desagradável enfadónha obra*, &c. but *húma obra desagradável e enfadónha*, &c. a disagreeable, tedious work.

Of adjectives, some always require after them either a noun or verb, which they govern; as, *digno de louvôr*, praise-worthy; *digno de sér amado*, worthy to be loved; *capáz de ensinár*, capable to teach; and these have always the particle *de* after them.

Some will be used absolutely without being ever attended by any noun or verb; as, *prudênte*, wise; *incurável*, incurable, &c.

Others may be construed both with and without a noun, which they govern; *élla he húma molhér insensível*, she is a woman without any sensibility; *élla he insensível ao amôr*, she is insensible, and a stranger to the passion of love.

The following adjectives, which require the preposition *de* before the next infinitive, govern the genitive case. Observe, that some of them require in English the preposition *at* or *with* before the next noun.

*Digno*, worthy: as, *élla he digno de louvôr*, he is worthy of praise. This adjective is sometimes followed by *que*; as *digna que séu nôme fôsse*, &c. her name deserved to be, &c.

*Indigno*, unworthy ; as, *indigno da estimação que faço d'elle*, unworthy of the esteem which I have for him.

*Capáz*, capable ; *incapáz*, incapable ; as, *capáz*, or *incapáz de servir a própria pátria*, capable or incapable of serving one's country.

*Notádo*, charged ; as, *notádo de avaréza*, charged with avarice.

*Conténte*, glad ; as, *estou conténte do succésso que elle téve*, I am glad or overjoyed at his success.

*Cançado*, tired ; as, *cançado de estudár*, tired of studying.

*Dezejóso*, greedy ; as, *dezejóso de glória*, greedy of glory, &c. as likewise adjectives signifying fulness, emptiness, plenty, want, desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance, or forgetting.

All adjectives signifying inclination, advantage and disadvantage, profit or disprofit, pleasure or displeasure, due submission, resistance, likeness, govern the dative case ; as, *insensível ás affrontas*, insensible of affronts ; *sér inclinádo a algúma còusa*, to be inclined to something ; *nocivo á saúde*, hurtful to health.

These adjectives signifying dimensions, as, *álto*, high, tall ; *lárgo*, wide, broad ; and *comprído*, long, come after words of the measure of magnitude, both in English and Portuguese ; but they are preceded by *de* in Portuguese ; as, *dés pés de lárgo*, ten feet broad ; *séis pés de comprído*, six feet long, &c. they also turn the adjective of the dimension into its substantive, with the word of the measure before : but the word of the dimension is always preceded by *de* ; as *séis pés de altúra*, six feet high ; *déz pés de largúra*, ten feet broad.

The adjectives signifying experience, knowledge, or science, require *em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, after them ; as, *versádo, nos livros*, versed in books ; *expérto na medicina*, expert in medicine.

The cardinal nouns require the genitive case after them ; as, *hum dos dóus*, one of the two.

The ordinal nouns, as well as the collective and proportional, likewise require the genitive after them ; as, *o primeiro dos réys*, the first of the kings, *húma dúzia de óvos*, a dozen of eggs, &c.

*Of the Syntax of Comparatives and Superlatives.*

The comparative is not made of the positive in Portuguese, as in Latin and English, but by adding *máis*, more, or *ménos*, less which govern *que*, signifying *than* ; as, *o tódo hé mayór que a páрте*, the whole is greater than the part ; *o séu amánte hé máis bello, máis móço, e máis rico que élla*, her lover is handsomer, younger and richer than she is ; *éu ácho-o agóra ménos bello do que quándo o compréi*, I now find it less handsome than when I bought it.

The simple comparatives *máis*, and *ménos*, meeting with a noun of number, are attended by *de* ; as, *aínda que élle tivésse máis de cem hómens*, though he has above an hundred men ; *élle tem máis de vinte ánnos*, he is above twenty.

When the comparison is made by *so as*, *as much as*, they must be rendered by *cómo*.

EXAMPLE.

*O méu livro hé tão bello cómo o vósso*, my book is as handsome as yours ; *hum príncipe não hé tão poderóso cómo hum réy*, a prince is not so powerful as a king.

They put sometimes *muito* and *pouco* before the simple comparatives *máis* and *ménos* ; as, *élle hé muito máis grande*, he is taller by much ; *élle hé pouco máis grande*, he is taller by little, &c.



## CHAP. IV.

## OF THE SYNTAX OF PRONOUNS.

WE have sufficiently explained the pronouns in the first part ; and to avoid any further repetition, I shall only observe, that,

1st. The English make use of the verb *to be*, put impersonally through all its tenses in the third person, before the pronouns personal, *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they* ; it is I ; it is he, &c. In Portuguese the verb *to be*, on this occasion, is not impersonal ; as they express, it is I, by *sou eu* ; it is thou, *és tu* ; it is he, *he élla* ; it is we, *sómos nós* ; it is ye, *sóis vós*, it is she, *he élla* : it is they, masc. *são elles* ; it is they, fem. *são ellas* ; and in like manner through all the tenses ; as, it was I, *era eu* ; it was we, *éramos nós*, &c.

2ndly. The Portuguese seldom make use of the second person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends, or speaking to God, or a father and mother to their children, or to servants ; thus, you are in the right of it, is expressed by *vm<sup>ce</sup> tem razáo*, instead of *téndes razáo* ; *cómo está vm<sup>ce</sup> ?* how do you do ? In the plural they say *vm<sup>ces</sup>*.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *vm<sup>ce</sup> V. S. V. E.* &c. it does not agree in gender with *vm<sup>ce</sup> V. S.* &c. but with the person we speak to, or we speak of, thus we say to a lady or woman ; *vm<sup>ce</sup> he muito bella*, you are very beautiful ; and to a man, *vm<sup>ce</sup> he muito bom*, you are very good.

3dly. *Nos* is generally used by the king, a governor, or a bishop, in their writings, and then it signifies in English *we* ; as, *nós mandámos*, or *mandámos*, we command ; but *nos* before or after a verb in Por-



tuguese signifies *us* in English ; as, *elle nos disse*, he told us ; *dá-nos tempo*, give us time.

4thly. *Vós* is also applied to a single person, but only speaking to inferiors, or between familiar friends, to avoid the word thou, *tu*, which would be too gross and unmannerly.

5thly. The pronouns conjunctive are joined to verbs, and stand for the dative and accusative cases, as, *déu me*, he gave me ; *ama-me*, love me ; but the pronouns personal are used instead of them when they are preceded by a preposition, and not immediately followed by a verb ; *elle falléu contra mim*, he spoke against me.

6thly. When *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are joined to the present infinitive mood, they change the last *r* of it into *lo*, *la*, &c. thus ; *para ama-lo*, to love him ; *para vé-la*, or, *vé las*, to see her, or them, &c. and when they are joined to the preterperfect indicative of the verb *fazer*, and some others that have that tense ending in *iz*, they change the last *z* of them into *lo*, *la*, &c. as *fi-lo*, I did it ; *elle fé-lo*, he did, or made it, &c. but when they are joined to the future indicative of any verb with the auxiliary verb *haver*, then they change the terminations *rêi*, *rás*, &c. of the futures into *lo*, *la*, &c. as *fá-lo-hei*, I'll do it ; *ama-lo-hei*, I'll love him, &c.

#### *Remarks on the Pronouns.*

1st. *Him*, or *it*, which follow the verb in English, must be expressed in Portuguese as in the following examples :

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it must be expressed in Portuguese by *o* before or after the verb. Exam. I call him or it, *eu o chamo*, or *eu chamo-o*.

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or

*lo* after it, making an elision of the last consonant of the verb. Exam. Thou callest him *or it*, *tu o chãmas*, or *tu chãma lo*.

When *him* or *it* is joined with the third person singular of a verb, it may be expressed by *o* before or after the verb. Ex. He calls him *or it*, *êlle o chãma*, or *êlle chãma-o*.

When *him* or *it* is with a verb in the first person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision, as in the second case. Ex. We call him *or it*, *nôs o chamãmos* or *nôs chamãmo-lo*.

When *him* or *it* is after a verb in the second person plural, it is expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision, &c. Ex. You call him *or it*, *vos o chamãis*, or *vos chamãi-lo*.

When *him* or *it* follows the verb in the third person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *no* after it. Examp. They call him *or it*, *êlles o chãmaõ*, or *êlles chãmaõ-no*.

2ndly. *Her* or *it* after a verb in English is expressed in Portuguese by *a*, according to the rules just now proposed.

3rdly. *Them* after a verb is expressed in Portuguese by *os* for the masculine, and by *as* for the feminine, according to the gender and the rules proposed.

4thly. The words *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, must always be put after the gerunds, but not before the infinitives. Examp. Seeing him, we must not say, *o vêndo*, but *vêndo-o*, because *vêndo* is a gerund. To see him, instead of saying *para vêr-o*, you must say *para o vêr*, because it is in the infinitive.

5thly. The words *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, must always be put after the verbs. Examp. To see him, you must say *para vê-lo*, or *para o vêr*, and not *para ol ver*. The same words must follow also the adverb *êi* ;

as, *éi-lo aquí*, here he is; *éi-lo alí*, there he is; *éi-los aquí*, here they are; *éi-la alí*, there she is; *éi-las alí*, there they are. They follow likewise the persons of the verbs: *éu fi-lo*; *tu fizéste-lo*; *élle fé-lo*; *nos fizémo-lo*, &c. I made it, &c.

I have here been speaking of the words *o, a, os, as, lo, la, los, las*, and not of the articles *o, a, os, as*; because when those words precede, and sometimes when they follow the verbs, they are not articles, but pronouns relative. They are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns.

## CHAP. V.

### OF THE SYNTAX OF VERBS.

THE verbs through every tense and mood (except the infinitive) ought to be preceded by a nominative case, either expressed or understood, with which they must agree in number and person. The nominative is expressed when we say, *éu ámo, tu cántas*; understood when we say, *cánto dígo*, &c.

The Portuguese, as well as English, use the second person plural, though they address themselves but to a single person.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Méu amígo, vós não tēdes razáo*, my friend, you are in the wrong.

And if we would speak in the third person, we must say, *vem<sup>ce</sup> tem razáo*, sir, you are in the right.

The verb active governs the accusative; as, *ámo a virtúde*, I love virtue.

The verb passive requires an ablative after it ; as, *os doutos são envejados pelos ignorantes*, the learned are envied by the ignorant.

There is in Portuguese another way of making the passive, by adding the relative *se* to the third person singular or plural ; as, *ama se Déos*, God is loved.

When there are two nominatives singular before a verb, it must be put in the plural number.

When a noun is collective, the verb requires the singular, not the plural ; as, *a gente está olhando*, the people are looking.

#### *Syntax of the Auxiliary Verbs.*

The verb *tér* is made use of to conjugate all the compound tenses of verbs ; as, *ténho amado, tinha amado*, I have loved, I had loved.

*Tér* signifies also to possess, to obtain ; as *ténho dinheiro*, I have money ; *tem muita capacidade*, he has a great deal of capacity.

*Havér*, in account books and trade, expresses credit or discharge.

*Havér* is also taken impersonally in Portuguese, and signifies in English *there be* ; as *ha muito ouro no México*, there is a great quantity of gold in Mexico.

*Havér-se*, made reciprocal, is the same as *to behave, to act* ; as *houve-se o governador com tal prudência, que, &c.* the governor behaved with such wisdom, that, &c.

We have already observed the difference betwixt *sér* and *estár*.

The verb *estár* is also used to conjugate the other verbs, chiefly expressing action ; as *estou lendo, estou escrevendo*, I am reading, I am writing.

*Estár*, with the preposition *em*, in or with, *no na nos, nas*, signifies *to be present in a place* ; as *estou no campo*, I am in the country.



*Estár*,\* with the preposition *para* denotes the inclination of doing what the following verb expresses, but without a full determination ; as, *estóu para ir me para Lóndres*, I have a mind to go and live in London.

*Estár*, with the preposition *por*, and the infinitive of the verb following, means, that the thing expressed by the verb is not yet done ; as, *ísto está por escrevêr*, this is not yet written ; *ísto está por alimpár*, this is not yet cleaned ; *estár por alguém* signifies to agree with one, or to be of his opinion.

N. B. See in the Third Part the different significations of the verbs *estár* and *havêr*.

When *sêr* signifies the possessive of one thing, it governs the genitive ; as, *a rúa hé d' el-réy*, the street belongs to the king ; *ésta casa hé de méu páy*, this house belongs to my father.

*Em sêr* is taken for a thing to be whole or entire, without any alteration or mutilation ; as, *as fazendas estão em sêr*, the goods are not sold.

### *Of the Syntax of Verbs active, passive, &c.*

When two verbs come together, with or without any nominative case, then the latter must be in the infinitive mood ; as, *quer vm<sup>ce</sup> aprendêr a fallár Inglês?* will you learn to speak English?

All verbs active govern the accusative ; but if they are followed by a proper name of God, man, or woman, or any noun expressing their qualities or title, then it governs the dative case ; as, *conhêço a séu páy*, I know his father ; *Acháraõ a João no camínho*, they found John in the road.

All verbs of gesture, moving, going, resting, or doing, as also the verbs that have the word that goes before, and the word that comes after, both belonging to one thing, require the nominative after them ; as, *Pédro vái errádo*, Peter goes on wrong ;



*opóbre dorme descançado*, the poor sleeps without care. Also the verb of the infinitive mood has the same case, when verbs of wishing and the like come after them ; as *tódos dezêjaõ sér ricos*, every body wishes to be rich ; *antes quisera ser dóuto que parecêlo*, I had rather be learned than be accounted so.

After verbs the Portuguese express *yes* and *no* by *que sim* and *que não*. Example, *crêyo que sim*, I believe *yes* ; *crêyo que não*, I believe *not* ; *digo que sim*, I say *yes* ; *cuído que não*, I think *not* ; *apósto que sim*, I lay *yes* ; *queréis apostár que não?* have you a mind to lay *not* ?

Verbs signifying *grief*, *compassion*, *want*, *remembrance*, *forgetting*, &c. will have the genitive ; as, *pésame múito da mórte de séu irmão*, I am very sorry for the death of your brother ; *élle mórre de fome*, he perishes by hungèr ; *lémbre-se do que me disse*, remember what you said to me ; *compadeçi-me das súas disgráças*, I pitied him for his misfortunes ; *esqueci-me de túdo isto*, all this I forgot.

The reciprocals of jeering, boasting, and distrusting, govern also the genitive ; as, *jactár-se*, *gloriár-se*, *picár-se*, *envergonhár-se*, &c.

All the verbs active govern the dative only when the substantive represents a person ; as, *éu conhêço a vm<sup>ce</sup>*, &c. I know you, &c.

The following verbs belong to this rule of the dative :

*Jogár*, to play ; as, *jogár cártas*, to play at cards ; *jogár aos céntos*, to play at picquet ; *jogár ao xadréz*, to play at chess, &c.

*Obedecér*, *desobedecér* *agradár*, *comprazér* ; as, *éu obedêço a Déos e el-réy*, I obey God and the king ; *comprazéo em túdo aos soldádos*, in all he pleased the soldiers.

*Mandár*, when it signifies to command an army, company, &c. requires the accusative, but, when other things, the dative ; as, *élle mandáva a cavallaría*, he commanded the horse ; *o governadór man-*

*dôu a tódos os moradóres que se retirássem para súas casas*, the governor ordered all the inhabitants to retire into their houses.

*Ir*, to go ; as, *vôu a París*, I go to Paris.

*Assistír, ajudár, socorrér*, to help ; *assistír ao officio divino*, to assist at divine service.

*Saudár*, to salute or greet ; as, *élle saúda a tódos*, he salutes every body.

*Fallár*, to speak ; *satizfazér*, to satisfy ; *servir*, to serve ; *favorecér*, to favour ; *ameaçár*, to threaten.

The verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying, pardoning, will have the person in the dative case.

The impersonals *acontecér, succedér, importár, pertencér*, and the like to these, will have often two datives, of person ; as, *a mim me succedéo*, it happened to me ; *a élle lhe convém*, it suits him, or it is convenient for him ; *a élle não lhe importa*, it does not concern him, &c.

All the active verbs require the accusative ; and the Latin verbs which govern the accusative of the thing, and the dative of the person, govern generally the same in Portuguese ; as, *escrevêi o que digo a vósso irmão*, write to your brother what I say.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying, will have an accusative of the doer or sufferer, and sometimes verbs neuter will have an accusative of the thing ; as, *gozár saúde*, to enjoy health ; *pêço este favôr*, I ask this favour ; *élle toca muito bem flauta*, he plays very well on the flute ; *curár húma doença*, to cure a sickness.

Verbs passive, and the greatest part of the reciprocals require the ablative, with *de, do, da, dos, das, por*, or *péllo, pélla, péllos, péllas* ; as *fuí chamado por el-réy*, I was called by the king ; *retirêi-me da cidade*, I retired from the city ; *élle fôí amado do povo*, he was loved by the people. Except *acostár-se*, which requires a dative, preceded by *a* ; *encostár-se*, which sometimes will have a dative, and some-

times an ablative, preceded by *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, or *nas*; *metér-se*, which requires an ablative; *sentár-se*, *introduzír-se*, &c. which must have the ablative with the preposition *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*.

The verbs joined with a noun which they govern, must have the infinitive with *de*; as, *ténho vóntade de rír*, I am inclined to laugh.

The price of any thing bought or sold, or bartered, will have the accusative with *por*.

The verb *pór se*, when it signifies *to begin*, must have the infinitive, with the particle *a*; as, *pór-se a chorár*, to begin to cry.

Verbs of plenty, filling, emptying, loading, unloading, will have the ablative; as, *ésta terra abúnda de trigo*; this country abounds with corn; *éle está carregádo de misérias*, he is loaded with calamities.

Verbs denoting custom, help, beginning, exhortation, invitation, require the infinitive with the particle *a*; as, *ajudár a semeár*, to help to sow, *convidóu me a ceár*, he invited me to supper.

Verbs that signify distance, receiving, or taking away, will have the ablative; as, *a Madéira dista de Marrócos 320 milhas*, Madeira lies 320 miles from Morocco.

Verbs signifying receiving, or taking away, generally require the ablative of the person; but they sometimes require an accusative: particularly the verb *recéber*, when it signifies *to welcome*, or *to entertain*: as, *éle recébe tódos com muito agrádo*, he gives his company a hearty reception, he makes them very welcome.

Verbs denoting obligation, govern the following infinitive with the preposition *a*; as, *éu o obrigarei a fazer isto*, I will oblige him to do it.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. will have the ablative with *com*; as, *pelejóu máis de húma hora com seu irmão*, he quarrelled more than one hour with his brother.



After the verb substantive *sér*, to be, *para* is made use of as well as *a* : the first is employed to denote the use or destination of any thing ; as, *ésta péna he para escrevêr*, this pen is to write with. But the particle *a* is used to denote only the action ; as, *elle fôí o priméiro a fugír*, he was the first to run away.

Verbs of motion to a place always govern the dative ; as, *vôu á comédia*, I go to the play. Though the verb *voltár*, to return, may also have an accusative, with the preposition *para*. But verbs of motion from a place govern the ablative with *de*, *do*, *da*, *dos*, *das* ; as, *vénho do câmpo*, I come from the country. If the motion is through a place, then they govern the accusative, with *por* ; as, *passaréi por Lóndres*, I will come by the way of London.

#### *Of the Use and Construction of the Tenses.*

Although I have spoken at large upon the tenses in the First Part, I would further observe,

1. That the infinitive and the auxiliary verb *havêr*, are used together with the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, instead of the future indicative ; as, *ouvir-lo-hei*, I will hear him : and then the *r* of the infinitive is changed into *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las* ; sometimes the infinitive and the auxiliary verb *havêr*, are used with the pronouns conjunctive *me*, *te*, *se*, &c. instead of the same future ; as, *dar-lhe-hei*, I will give him ; *agastar-se-há*, he will be angry.

2. That when we find the particle *if*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *se*, before the imperfect indicative, we must generally use the imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese ; example, *se éu tivésse*, if I had ; *se éu pudésse*, if I could. But sometimes the imperfect indicative is used ; as, *disse-lhe que se queria*, &c. ; he told him that if he was willing, &c.

3. That the first imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese is also used in a sense that denotes the present, especially in sentences of wishing ; as, *quizéra que Domingo fizésse bom tempo*, I wish it would be fine weather on Sunday. But if the same tense is preceded by *ainda que*, although, then it must be rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive, or by the imperfect indicative ; as, *eu não a quizéra, ainda que tivésse milhôens de séu*, though she was worth several millions, I would not have her ; *ainda que elle consentísse nisso, não se podia fazer*, although he would consent to it, that could not be done. Lastly, when the first imperfect subjunctive is preceded by *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive ; as, *se elle viesse*, if he should come.

The English are apt to put the first imperfect of the subjunctive where the Portuguese make use of the second ; as, I had been in the wrong, *não tería tido razão* ; and though they may say *não tivéra tido razão*, they may not say *não tivésse tido razão*, to express the English of, *I should have been in the wrong*, or *I had been in the wrong*.

Note, that to express in Portuguese, *though that should be*, we must say, *quando isso fôsse*, and not *sería*.

The Portuguese use the future tense subjunctive after the conjunction *if*, when they speak of a future action, but the English, the present indicative : example, to-morrow, if I have time, *amanhã se tivér tempo*, and not *se ténho* ; if he comes, we shall see him, *nós o verémos, se elle viér*.

A conjunction between two verbs obliges the last to be of the same number, person, and tense as the first : example, the king wills and commands, *el réi quer e ordéna* ; I see and I know, *eu véjo e conhêço*.

Sometimes the present is made use of, instead of the preter definite in narrations, as, *no mesmo tempo que húa andándo, o encóntra, o déspe, e o áta a húma*



*árvore*, as he was going, he meets him, strips him, and ties him to a tree.

When the Portuguese use the infinitive with a third person in the plural, they add *em* to it, and it is generally preceded by *por*, for, and *para*, in order to, that, or to the end that; as, *élles fôraõ enforcádos por furtárem*, they were hanged for robbing; *para sérem enformádos*, that, to the end that they may be informed; *para podérem dizér*, that they may be able to say.

Observe, that when the Portuguese put *por* before the first future subjunctive, they speak of a time past; as, *por fallárdes*, because you have spoken. But when they put *para* before it, then they speak of a time to come; as, *para fallármós*, to give us an opportunity for speaking, in order to speak.

### Of Moods.

All the tenses of the indicative mood may be employed without any conjunction before them; but they admit also of some. Besides the conjunction *que*, those that may be made use of are *se*, *cómo*, and *quándo*; with some distinction in respect to *se*, because this conjunction is seldom used before the future tense, and then it is governed by a verb signifying ignorance, doubt, or interrogation; as, *naõ séi se haõ de aír*, I do not know whether they will come? *estôu em dávida se os inimígos passaráo o río*, I doubt whether the enemy will pass the river; *naõ pergúnto se partirá*, I do not ask whether he will set out.

The optative or subjunctive in Portuguese has always some sign annexed; as, *oxalá*, *prouvéra a Deos*, *ó se!* would to God, I pray God, God grant; &c.; *que para*, *que*, &c. that, &c.

The particle *que* is not expressed in the present tense of this mood; but it is understood in sen-

tences of wishing or praying ; as, *Déos o faça bom*, let God amend him.

When *que* is between two verbs, the last is not always put in the subjunctive, because, though some say *créyo que vénha*, I believe he comes ; I think it is better to say *créyo que vem* ; but when there is a negation, the verb following *que* must be put in the subjunctive ; as, *naõ créyo que vénha*, I do not believe he will come, *naõ créyo que vénha taõ cédo*, I do not believe he will come so soon.

When the verbs *crér*, to believe, *sabér*, to know, are used interrogatively, and followed by the particle *que*, the next verb is put in the indicative, when the person that asked the question makes no doubt of the thing which is the object in question ; as, if knowing that peace is made, I want to know if the people whom I converse with know it too, I should express myself thus, *sabéis vós que está feita a paz ?* do you know that peace is made ? But if I have it only by a report, and doubt of it, and want to be informed of it, I must ask the question thus, *sabéis vós que a paz estêja feita ?* and not *sabéis vós que está feita a paz ?*

Observe also, that the present subjunctive of *sabér* is elegantly used when it is attended by a negative, and the particle *que* in this phrase, *naõ que êu saiba*, not that I know of.

All the verbs used impersonally with the particle *que* require the subjunctive ; as, *he preciso que êlle v nha*, he must come ; *convém que isto se faça*, it is convenient that this be done. You must only except such sentences as express any positive assurance, or certainty ; as, *he certo que vem*, it is certain that he comes ; *sei que está em casa*, I know he is at home.

From these observations it follows, that all the verbs not expressing a positive assurance, or believing, but only denoting *ignorance*, *doubt*, *fear*, *astonishment*, *admiration*, *wishing*, *praying*, *pretension*,

or *desire*, govern the subjunctive mood after *que*; as, *duvido que possa*, I doubt if it be in his power; *têmo que mórta*, I am afraid he will die; *admíro-me que consinta nisso*, I wonder he agrees to it, &c.; to all which they add *oxalá*, an Arabic word, signifying *God grant*, which is used in Portuguese before all the tenses of the optative or conjunctive, as well as *práza a Déos*, may it please God; or, *prouvéra a Déos*, might it please God.

When *que* is relative, and there is a verb in the imperative or in the indicative, with a negative or interrogation before it, it governs likewise the subjunctive; as *naõ ha cousa que máis me inquiete*, there is nothing that disturbs me more; *ha cousa no mundo que me possa dar tanto gôsto?* is there any thing in the world that may give me more pleasure? *allegáilhe tantas razões que o possaõ persuadir*, give him so many reasons that he may be persuaded.

The present subjunctive is sometimes rendered into English by the second preterimperfect subjunctive, when it is followed by a verb in the future tense; as, *ainda que eu trabalhê, nunca hêi de cansar*, though I should work, I never should be tired.

The Portuguese use specially the same present subjunctive for the future; as in these sentences, and others like:

*Naõ duvido que vénha*, I do not doubt but he will come.

*Duvido que o faça*, I doubt that, or whether he will do it.

Therefore avoid carefully those faults which foreigners are so apt to make, in considering rather the tense which they want to turn into Portuguese, than the mood which the genius of the language requires.

The present indicative is also used for the future, as well as in English: example, *jantáis hõje em casa?* do you dine at home to-day?



*Of the Particles governing the Optative or Subjunctive.*

The conjunction *que*, that, generally requires the subjunctive after it; but *ântes que*, *primêiro que*, before that, always requires it.

*Que* makes all the words to which it is joined become conjunctives, as, *para que*, to the end that, *bem que*, *âinda que*, &c. *Pôsto que*, although; *atê que*, till; *quândo*, *cômo quérquê*, which commonly govern the subjunctive. But *com que assim* governs the indicative; as, *com que*, or *com que assim virá amanhã*, so he will come to-morrow.

In Portuguese to express *though*, or *although*, if it is by *âinda que*, you may put either the subjunctive or indicative after it: example; *âinda que seja hómem honrádo*, though he is an honest man; *âinda que elle faz aquillo*, though he does that. But if you render *although* or *though* by *naõ obstante*, then you must use the infinitive; example, though he is an honest man; *naõ obstante sér elle hómem honrádo*; though he does this, *naõ obstante fazer elle isto*.

The impersonal verbs generally govern the subjunctive with *que*; but with this distinction, when the impersonal is in the present tense or future, of the indicative mood, then it requires the present subjunctive mood; but when the impersonal, or any other verb taken impersonally, is in any of the preterites indicative, then it governs the imperfect, perfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, according to the meaning of the sentence; as, *impórta muito que el-réy véja tudo*, it is of great moment that the king may see all; *foi conveniênte que o príncipe fôsse com elle*, it was convenient that the prince should go with him.

The present subjunctive is likewise construed, when the particle *por* is separated from *que* by an adjective; as, *por grânde*, *por admirável*, *por dóuto que seja*, though he be great, admirable, learned.

An imperative often requires the future of the subjunctive ; as *succéda o que succeder*, or *séja o que fór*, happen what shall happen, at all events.

The imperfect subjunctive is repeated in this phrase, and others like, *succedésse, o que succedésse*, let happen what would.

The future of the subjunctive mood follows generally these, *lôgo que, quándo, se, cómo, &c.* ; as, *lôgo que chegar irémos a passeár*, as soon as he comes, we will go and take a walk ; *quándo viér, estarémos prómptos*, when he comes we shall be ready.

Observe that *quándo* and *lôgo que* may also be construed with the indicative mood ; as, *quándo el-réy vé tudo, não o engánaõ*, when the king sees every thing, he is not deceived ; *lôgo que chegôu, falléi com élle*, as soon as he came, I spoke with him.

#### *Of the Infinitive Mood.*

In Portuguese there is not a general sign before the infinitive, as in English the particle *to* ; but there are several particles used before the infinitive, denoting the same as *to* does in English, and they are governed by the preceding verbs or nouns. These particles are the following : *a, para, de, com, em, por, até, despóis de* ; and the article *o*, when the infinitive serves as a nominative to another verb ; as, *o dizér e o fazér são dúas cóusas*, saying and doing are two different things.

*A* coming between two verbs, denotes the second as the object of the first ; as, *a tardança das nôssas esperanças nos ensína a mortificár os nôssos dezéjos*, the delay of our hopes teaches us to mortify our desires ; *élle coméça a discorrér*, he begins to reason.

*Para* denotes the intention or usefulness ; as, *a adversidade sérve para experimentár a paciência*, adversity serves to try one's patience. *Para* after an adjective denotes its object ; as, *está prómpto para obedécér*, he is ready to obey.



*De* is put between two verbs, if the first governs the genitive or ablative; and when the substantive or adjective governs either of these two cases, *de* must go before the following verbs, or infinitive; as, *vénho de vér a méu páy*, I have just seen my father; *he témpo de hír-se*, it is time to go away; *el-réy foi servído de mandar*, the king has been pleased to order.

The infinitive is on several occasions governed by prepositions or conjunctions; as, *sem dizér palavra*, without speaking a word; where you may observe it is expressed in English by the participle present; as *núnca se cânça de jugár*, he is never weary of playing; *divérte-se em caçár*, he delights in hunting; *élle está doénte por trabalhár demasiádaménte*, by working too much he is sick; *pérde o séu témpo em passéar*, he loses his time in walking; *héi-de ir-me sem me despedír?* shall I go away without taking my leave?

The infinitive is also used passively; as *naõ há qué dizér, que vér, &c.*; there is nothing to be said, seen, &c.

The gerund of any verb active may be conjugated with the verb *estár*, to be, after the same manner as in English; as, *estóu escrevéndo*, I am writing; *élle estava dormíndo*, he was asleep, &c.

## C H A P. VI.

### OF THE SYNTAX OF PARTICIPLES AND GERUNDS.

THE participle in the Portuguese language generally ends in *do*, or *to*; as, *amádo, vísto, dito, &c.*

The active participles that follow the verb *tér*, to have, must end in *o*; as,

*Ténho vísto el réy*, I have seen the king.

*Tenho visto a rainha*, I have seen the queen.

*Eu tinha amado os livros*, I had loved books.

*Eu tinha levado as cartas*, I had carried the letters.

We meet with authors who sometimes make the participles agree with the thing of which they are speaking ; as, in *Camoens*, Canto 1, Stanza xxix.

*E porque como vistes, tem passados.*

*Na viagem tão ásperos perigos,*

*Tantos climas, e céos experimentados, &c.*

And Canto 2, Stan. lxxvi.

*São offerecimentos verdadeiros,*

*E palavras, sincéras, não dobradas,*

*As que o réy manda a os nobres cavaleiros,*

*Que tanto mar e terras tem passadas.*

If it be a verb neuter, the participle ought always to terminate in *o* : example,

*El-réy tem jantado*, the king has dined ; *a rainha tem ceado*, the queen has supped ; *os vossos amigos tem rido*, your friends have laughed ; *minhas irmãs, tem dormido*, my sisters have slept.

When the active participle appears to precede an infinitive, it must be terminated in *o* ; as *o juiz lhe tinha feito cortar a cabeça*, the judge has caused his head to be cut off.

The passive participles which are joined with the tenses of the verb *sér*, to be, agree with the substantive that precedes the verb *sér* ; *o capitão foi louvado*, the captain was praised ; *a virtude he estimada*, virtue is esteemed ; *os preguiçosos são censurados*, the lazy are blamed ; *as vossas jóyas fóraõ vendidas*, your jewels were sold.

The Portuguese generally suppress the gerunds *having* and *being* before the participles ; as, *dito isto*, having said so ; *acabado o sermaõ*, the sermon being ended. This manner of speaking is called by grammarians *ablatives absolute*.

The participle of the present tense in Portuguese has singular and plural, but one termination serves for both genders ; as *hum homem teménte a Déos*, a

man fearing God; *húma molhér teménte a Déos*, a woman fearing God; *hómens teméntes a Déos*, people fearing God.

There are many participles which are used substantively; as, *ignoránte*, *amánte*, *ouvínte*, *estudánte*, &c.; an ignorant, a lover, an auditor or hearer, a scholar, &c.

It is better to place the nominative after the gerund than before; as *estándo el-réy na comédia*, the king being at the play.

## CHAP. VII.

### OF PREPOSITIONS.

A PREPOSITION is a part of speech, which is put before nouns, and sometimes before verbs, to explain some particular circumstance.

Prepositions may be divided into separable and inseparable. An inseparable preposition is never found but in compound words, and signifies nothing of itself. A separable preposition is generally separated from other words, and signifies something of itself.

The inseparable prepositions are,

*Ab* and *abs*; as *abrogár*, to abrogate; *Abstér-se*, to abstain.

*Arce*, or *archi*; as, *arcebíspo*, an archbishop; *archidúque*, an archduke.

*Ad*; as, *adventício*, adventitious.

*An*; as *ambíguo*, ambiguous; *ampáro*, protection, shelter.

*Circum*; as, *circumstância*, circumstance.

*Co*; as, *cohabitár*, to live together, to cohabit.

*Des*, serves to express the contrary of the word it is joined to; as, *desacérto*, mistake; *desfazér*, to

undo ; *desenganár*, to undeceive ; are the contrary of *acérto*, *fazér*, and *enganár*.

*Dis* ; as, *dispór*, to dispose ; *distinguir*, to distinguish ; *distribuir*, to distribute.

*Ex* ; as, *extrahír*, to extract.

*In*, has commonly a negative or privative sense, denoting the contrary of the meaning of the word it precedes ; as, *incapáz*, unable ; *infeliz*, unhappy ; *inacção*, inaction, &c. ; but sometimes it is affirmative, as in Latin.

Observe, that *in* before *r* is changed into *ir* ; as, *irregular*, irregular ; *irracional*, irrational : before *l*, into *il* ; as *illegítimo*, illegitimate ; before *m*, *in* is changed into *im* ; as, *immaterial*, immaterial.

*Ob* ; as, *obviar*, to obviate.

*Pos* ; as, *pospór*, to postpose, or to postpone.

*Pre* ; as, *precedér*, to go before ; *predecessór*, an ancestor.

*Pro* ; as, *propór*, to propose ; *prometér*, to promise.

*Re*, is a participle borrowed from the Latins, which generally denotes iteration, or backward action ; as, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *repercutír*, to reperate, or strike back.

*So* ; as, *socorrér*, to help to succour.

*Sor* ; as, *sorrír* to smile.

*Sos* ; as, *sostér*, to support.

*Soto* ; as, *sotopór*, to put or lay under.

*Sub* ; or *sob* ; as, *subaltérno*, subaltern ; *subscrevér*, to subscribe ; *sobpéna*, *sobcolór*, &c.

The Arabic article *al*, which is common to all genders and both numbers, is found in the beginning of almost all the words that remain in the Portuguese language from the Arabic, and it is the surest way to distinguish them. But the Portuguese articles are added to the Arabic nouns, without taking off their article, *al*, as *a almofáda*, the cushion ; *o Alcoraõ*, the Koran, &c.



The Greek preposition *anti* enters into the composition of a great many Portuguese words, which cannot be set down here. It is enough to observe, that it signifies generally opposite; as in *Antipodas*, Antipodes; *antipápa*, antipope; and sometimes it signifies before; as in *antilóquio*, a preface, a speaking first; but in this last sense it is derived from the Latin preposition *ante*.

### *Of Separable Prepositions.*

It is absolutely impossible ever to attain to the knowledge of any language whatever, without thoroughly understanding the various relations denoted by the prepositions, and the several cases of nouns which they govern; both which relations and cases being arbitrary, vary and differ much in all languages. This only instance will evince it: the English say, *to think of a thing*; the French, *to think to a thing*; the Germans and Dutch, *to think on*, or *upon a thing*; the Spaniards and Portuguese, *to think in a thing*, &c. Now it will avail an Englishman but little to know that *of* is expressed in Portuguese by *de*, if he does not know what relations *em* and *de* denote in that language; since the Portuguese say, *to think in a thing*, and not *of a thing*; therefore we will treat here of each of them, and of their construction separately.

1st. *A*, or rather *ao*, *as*, *aos*, (at, in, on, &c.) denote the place whither one is going; as,

*Eu vou a Lóndres*, I go to London.

*Voltár a Portugál*, to return, or go back to Portugal.

*A*, in this sense, is a preposition, but in the following observations, it is a particle.

2ndly. *A* denotes time; as, *chegár a témpo*, to arrive in time; *a todo o témpo*, at all times.

3rdly. *A* denotes the mode of being, or of doing of people; as also their posture, gesture, or action; as

*Estár á sua vontáde*, to be at one's ease.

*A direita*, on the right hand ; *á esquérda*, on the left hand.

*Vivér á sua vontáde*, to live to one's mind, as one likes.

*Andár a pé ou a cavállo*, to go on foot, or on horseback.

*Montár a cavállo*, to ride on horseback.

*Corrér á rédea sólta*, to ride full speed.

*Trajár á Francésa*, to dress after the French mode.

*Vivér á Inglêsa*, to live after the English fashion.

*Andár a grândes pássos*, to walk at a great rate.

*Andár a pássos léntos*, to walk very slowly.

4thly. *A* denotes the price of things ; as, *a oito velins*, at eight shillings. It denotes also the weight : but as the nouns signifying weight are generally used in the plural number, *s* is added to *a*, when it is placed before nouns of the feminine gender, and when it precedes nouns of the masculine gender : thus, *ás ônças*, by the ounce ; *aos arráteis*, by the pound, &c. *A* denotes also the measure ; as, *medir a pálmos*, to span or measure by the hand extended.

When *a* is preceded by *daquí*, and followed by a noun of time, it denotes the space of time after which something is to be done : as, *el-rey partirá daqui a tres días*, the king will set out three days hence.

5thly. *A* denotes the tools used in working, as likewise the games one plays at ; as, *abrir ao buril*, to grave ; where *o* is added to *a* ; *trabalhár á candéa*, to do any thing by candle-light ; *á agúlha*, with the needle.

*Andár á véla*, to sail, or to be under sail.

*Jogár a péla*, to play at tennis.

*Jogár as cártas*, to play at cards ; here *s* is added to *a*, the noun being of the feminine gender and plural number.

*Jogar aos céntos*, to pay at piquet; here *os* is added to *a*, as preceding a noun signifying a game, of the masculine gender and plural number.

6thly. *A* signifies sometimes *as*. Examp. *Está isto a seu gosto?* Is this as you like it? And sometimes it signifies *after*; as, *a seu modo*, after his or her way. It signifies also *in*; as, *ao princípio*, in the beginning; but then *o* is added to it.

7thly. *A* is also put before infinitives, preceded by another verb; as *ensinar a cantar*, to teach to sing. It is also placed between two equal numbers, to denote order; as, *dóus a dóus*, two by two; *quátro a quátro*, four by four: and sometimes it is preceded by a participle or adjective, and followed by an infinitive mood.

8thly. *A* is a particle of composition, with many nouns, verbs, and adverbs, of which it often increases the meaning; as, *adinheirádo*, very rich, that has a great deal of money; but it generally expresses in verbs the action of the nouns they are composed of; as, *ajoelhár*, to kneel down, which is formed from *a* and *joélho*, knee; *abrandár*, to appease; *alargár*, to enlarge; from *brándo*, soft; *largo*, wide, &c.

9thly. *A*, when it is preceded by the verb *sér*, and followed by the pronouns personal, signifies *in the stead of*; as, *se eu fôsse a vós, faria aquilo*, If I were you (in your place), I would do that.

10thly. When *a* is placed before *cása*, and the sense implies *going to*, it is Englished by *to*, but the word *cása* is left out; as, *élle fôí a cása do governadór*, he went to the governor's. You must observe, that *a* in this sense is a preposition.

11thly. *A'o pé* signifies *near*; as, *pónde hum ao pé do outro*, place, put, or set them near one another. Sometimes *mésmo* comes before *ao pé*, to express still more the nearness of a thing, and *mésmo ao pé* is Englished by *hard by, just by, &c.*; as, *a sua cása está mésmo ao pé da minha*, his house is just by mine.



12thly. When the noun *respeito* is preceded by *a*, it is used in the same sense as *em comparaçãõ*, but requires one of these particles, *do, da, dos, das*, after it, and signifies *in comparison of, in regard to, in respect of*; as, *isto he náda a respeito do que pôsso dizér*, this is nothing to other things that I can say.

13thly. When *a* comes before a verb neuter, it marks a dative; and after a verb active, an accusative case.

*A* before the verb *propósito* is used in familiar discourse; as, *a propósito, esquecíme de dizér-vos o ótro dia*; now I think on't, I forgot to tell you the other day.

14thly. *Ao revéz*, or *as avéssas*, are also used as prepositions, attended by, *de, do, da, &c.*; and it signifies *quite the reverse, or, contrary*; as, *élle faz túdo ao revéz*, or *as avéssas do que ouvéra de ser, ou do que lhe dizem*, he does every thing quite the reverse of right, or contrary to what he is bid.

15thly. *A* before *tróco* signifies *provided that*. It is also used before the word *tíro*, as, *a tíro de péça*, within cannon-shot.

16thly. *Cára a cara, córpo a córpo*, signify face to face, body to body. *Tomár húma cóusa a boa ou a má páрте*, signifies to take a thing well or ill.

Such are the chief relations denoted by the particle *a*. The others must be learned in construing and reading good Portuguese books.

1st. *De*, or rather *do, da, dos, das*, (of, from, &c.) denote, first, the place one comes from; as, *sahír de Lóndres*, to go out of London; *vir de França, das Índias, &c.*; to come from France, from the Indies, &c.

2nd. *De* between two nouns denotes the quality of the person expressed by the first noun; as, *hum hómem de hónra*, a man of honour: or the matter which the thing of the first noun is made of; as,

*Húma estátua de mármore*, a statue of marble.



*Húma pónite de madeira ou de pédra*, a wood or stone bridge.

Observe, that two nouns so joined with *de* are commonly Englished by two nouns likewise, but without a preposition, or rather by a compound word, whose first noun (whether substantive or adjective) expresses the matter and quality, manner, form, and use of the other; as a stone bridge, *húma pónite de pédra*; a dancing-master, *hum méstre de dança*.

3rd. *De, do, da, dos, das*, are used after the participles of the preterite, with *sér*; as *sér amádo, ou bem visto do póvo, dos sábios, &c*; to be beloved by the people, by the learned, &c.

*Do* serves for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, and *de* for both.

4th. *De* sometimes signifies *by*; as, *de nóite*, by night; *de día*, by day.

5th. *De* before *em*, and many nouns of time denotes the regular interval of the time after which something begins again; as, *eu vou vélo de dóus em dóus días*, I go to see him every other day; and before nouns of place and adverbs repeated with *em* or *para* between, *de* denotes the passing from one place or condition to another; as, *corrér de rúa em rúa*, to run from street to street; *de mal para péor*, worse and worse.

6th. *De* after some verbs, signifies *after* or *in*; as *élle portóu-se d'êsta sórte*, he behaved in or after this manner.

7th. *De* is used before an infinitive, and is then governed by some preceding noun or verb; as *capáz de ensinar*, capable of teaching; *digno de ser amádo*, worthy to be loved, &c.; *procurár de fazer*, to endeavour to do; *authoridade de pregár*, the power or authority of preaching, &c.

8th. *De* is sometimes Englished by *on*; as, *pór-se de jóelhos*, to kneel down *on* one's knees.

*De* between two nouns denotes the use which

a thing is designed for ; as, *azéite de cándéa*, lamp-oil ; *árma de fogo*, a fire-arm, *moínho de vénto*, a windmill.

This relation is expressed in English by two nouns, making a compound word : the first of which signifies the manner, form, and use, denoted by the Portuguese preposition ; as *cadeira de braços*, an arm-chair, or elbow-chair ; *véla de céra*, a wax-candle, &c.

10. *De* denotes sometimes the quality of things ; as, *méyas de tres fíos*, stockings with three threads. Sometimes it denotes also the price ; as, *pánno de dezóito xelins*, eighteen shilling cloth.

11. *De* is sometimes Englished by *upon* ; as, *vivér* or *sustentár se de péixe*, to live upon fish. Sometimes it is Englished by *with* ; as, *morrér de frío*, to starve with cold.

12. *De* sometimes signifies *for* or *out of* ; as, *sal-tár de alegria*, to leap for joy ; *de modésto*, out of modesty.

13. *De* signifies sometimes *at* ; as, *zombár de alguém*, laugh at one.

14. *De* is sometimes left out in English ; as, *go-zár de húma cósua*, to enjoy a thing.

15. *De*, followed by two nouns of number and the preposition *até* between them, is Englished by *between* ; as, *hum hómem de quarénta até cincoénta ánnos*, a man between forty and fifty.

16. *De*, preceded by the preposition *diánte*, is left out in English ; as, *diánte de mim*, before me ; *diánte de Déos*, before God.

17. *De*, when it is placed before *casa*, and the sense implies *coming from*, is Englished by *from* ; but the word *cása* sometimes is left out in English, and sometimes not ; as, *vénho de cása* (meaning my house) I come from home, from my house : but *vénho da cása da Senhora C.* must be rendered in English thus, *I am returning from Mrs. C.'s.*

Finally, *de* is used before several words ; as, *de braços*, lying all along on the ground ; *de madrugada*, soon in the morning ; *de véras*, in earnest, seriously ; *de veráo*, in summer ; *hómem de palavra*, a man as good as his word ; *de costas*, backwards, or on one's back ; *andár de pé*, to be sickly without being bed-ridden ; and many others, which must be learned by use.

#### *A'ntes.*

III. *Antes*, before, shows a relation of time, of which it denotes priority ; and is always opposite to *depóis*, after ; as, *antes da criação do mundo*, before the creation of the world.

*Priméiro* is also a preposition ; as, *élle chegou priméiro que eu*, he arrived before me.

#### *Diánte.*

IV. *Diánte*, before, shows a relation of place, and it is always opposite to *de trás*, behind. It signifies also sometimes *em* or *na presença* ; as, *ha árvores diánte de sua casa*, there are trees before his house ; *pónde aquillo diánte do fogo*, set or put that before the fire ; *prégár diánte del-réi*, to preach before the king.

*Diánte* is also sometimes an adverb, and may be used instead of *adiánte* ; as, *ir diánte* or *adiánte*, to go before ; but in the following phrase you must say, *náo vádes tanto adiánte*, and not *diánte*, don't go so far ; *por diánte* is to be Englished by *on* in the following phrase, *íde por diánte*, go on.

#### *Depóis.*

V. *Depóis*, after, denotes posteriority of time, and is used in opposition to *antes* ; as, *depóis do dilúvio*, after the deluge : *depóis do méio dia*, afternoon.

*Depóis* also is used with an infinitive ; as, *feito aquillo*, or *tendo feito aquillo*, or *depóis de fazer*



*aquillo*, after having done that ; and it is also made a conjunction with *que*, governing the indicative ; as, *depóis que téve feito aquillo*, after he had done that.

*Detrás.*

VI. *Detrás*, behind, denotes posteriority both of place and order, and it is said in opposition to *díante* ; as, *a sua casa está detrás da vóssa*, his house is behind yours ; *élle vínha detrás de mim* ; he walked after me.

*Em.*

VII. *Em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas* (in, into, within, &c.) denote a relation both of time and place. The many various significations in which these prepositions are used, must be accurately observed, and much regard had to them in practice.

*No* and *na* are sometimes rendered into English by *a* ; as, *dúas vézes no dia*, *na semana*, &c. twice a day, a week, &c.

*No*, *na*, &c. are always used before nouns denoting the place wherein something is kept ; as, *está no gabinete*, it is in the closet ; *na papeléira*, in the bureau ; *nas gavetas*, in the drawers ; *na rua*, in the street, &c. but sometimes they are Englished by *upon* ; as, *cahir no chão*, to fall upon the ground.

*Em*, *no*, *na*, &c. signifies commonly *in* ; as, *em Londres*, in London ; *está na graça del-réy*, he is in favour with the king ; but in some cases it has a very particular meaning ; as, *estár em córpo*, which signifies literally *to be in body* ; but the true sense of it is, *to be without a cloak* ; so that the body is more exposed to view without an upper garment. *Estár em pérnas*, literally, *to be in legs*, signifies *to be bare-legged* ; that is, the legs exposed without stockings. *Estár em camisa* is said of one that has only the shirt on his back.

When this preposition *em* is before an infinitive, then it is an English gerund ; as, *consiste em fallár bem*, it consists in speaking well ; but when it is



found before a gerund, it signifies *as soon as* ; as, *em acabando iréi*, as soon as I have done, I will go

*Nos nossos tempos* is Englished by *now-a-days*.

*Em* is used in sentences that imply a general sense ; as *E'lle está em miserável estado*, he is in a wretched condition ; and not *no miserável* ; but if the sentence implies a particular sense, you must make use of *no*, *na*, &c. as, *no miserável estado em que elle está* in the wretched condition wherein he is ; and not *em miserável*. You must observe in this last example and the like, that *em* is to be used before *que*, and not *no*, *na*, &c. which are to be placed only before *qual* ; therefore you must not say, *no miserável estado no que elle está* ; but *no miserável estado no qual elle está*.

*Em*, construed with pronouns without an article, makes a sort of adverb, rendered into English by a preposition and a noun ; thus in this sentence, *nós irémos em côche* we shall go in a coach, *em côche* is an adverb of manner, which shows how we shall go : but *no côche* denotes something besides ; as if a company were considering how they shall ride to a place, somebody would say, *vós iréis na cadeirinha, e nós no côche*, you shall go in the chair, and we in the coach ; *no côche* would be said in opposition to *na cadeirinha*, and both respectively to some specified chair and coach ; or else they should say, *vós iréis em cadeirinha, e nós em côche*. But in this other sentence, *eu deixéi o meu chapéo no côche*, I left my hat in the coach, it would be improper to say *em côche*, because some particular coach is meant, that which has drove me here or there, or which has been spoken of.

We say *de verão*, *no verão*, or *em o verão* ; *de inverno*, *no inverno*, &c. in summer, in winter, &c.

*Em* is also rendered into English by *at* ; as, *em todo o tempo*, at all times.

*Em* is used, and never *no*, *na*, &c. before proper names of cities and authors ; as *éle está em Lóndres*, he is in London ; *nós lémos em Cícero*, we read in Cicero. But they say *no Pórto*, in Oporto.

*Em*, and *no*, *na*, &c. are construed with the names of kingdoms ; as, *em* or *na*, *Inglaterra*, in England : but *no*, *na*, is most commonly construed with names of provinces ; as, *no Alentéjo*, *na Beira*, &c. in Alentejo, in Beira, &c.

*Em* is sometimes rendered into English by *into* : as, *Narciso fôí transformádo em flór*, Narcissus was metamorphosed into a flower : and sometimes by *to* ; as *de rua em rua*, from street to street.

*No*, *na*, are sometimes rendered into English by *against* ; as, *dar co' a cabeça na paréde*, to dash one's head against the wall.

*No*, *na*, &c. are also rendered into English by *in*, and sometimes by *into* ; as *ter hum menino nos braços*, to hold a child in one's arms ; *entregár alguma cousa nas mãos de alguém*, to deliver a thing into somebody's hands.

*Em* is used before the word *travéz*, as in this phrase, *por-se de mar em travéz com alguém*, to fall out together.

*Em* before a noun of time, denotes the space of time that slides away in doing something ; as, *el-réy foi a Hanóver, em tres días*, the king went to Hanover in three days ; that is, he was no longer than three days in going.

*Em* is sometimes used after the verb *hír*, to go ; as, *vái em quátro mèses que eu aquí cheguéi*, it is now going on four months since I came hither.

*Em* before *quáto*, and sometimes without it, is rendered into English by *while* or *whilst* ; as, *em quáto vós fazéis aquillo, eu faréi isto*, while you do that, I shall do this ; but if they are followed by a noun of time with an interrogation, then they must be rendered into English by *in how much*, or *many* ; as, *em quáto tempo?* in how much time ? Ob-

serve, that *em quânta mim, a ti, a elle, &c.* are rendered into English by *for what concerns me, thee, him, &c.*

*No* serves for the masculine, *na* for the feminine, and *em* for both.

*Em* signifies *as*; as, *em sinal da sua amizade*, as a token of his friendship; *em prémio*, as a reward.

The prepositions *em, no, na, &c.* and *dentro*, have very often the same signification, therefore they may sometimes be used one instead of the other; as *está na gavêta*, or *dentro da gavêta*, it is in the drawer; *está na cidade*, or *dentro da cidade*, he is in town.

*Em* before the words *favôr, utilidade, consideraçãm, razãõ*, and the like, signifies *in behalf of, for the sake of, on account of, &c.* as, *em razãõ das bellas aççõens que elle tem feito*, in consideration of the great things he has performed.

Observe, that they very often make an elision of the last vowels, *o, a*, of the preposition *no, na*, when there is a vowel in the beginning of the next word; *n' ágoa*, instead of *na ágoa*; they also cut off the *e* of the preposition *em*, and change the *m* into *n*, as you may see in *Camoens*, Canto 2, Stanza xxxii. *n' algúm pôrto*, instead of *em algum porto*, wherein you must observe that *n'* is to be Englished by *to* or *into*.

### Com.

VII. This preposition signifies *with*, and it denotes conjunction, union, mixing, assembling, keeping company; as, *casár húma donzella com hum hómem honrado*, to marry a maid with an honest man; *hir com alguém*, to go with one; *com a ajuda de Déos*, by God's help, &c.

Observe that most of the adverbs formed of the adjectives are turned in Portuguese by the preposition *com* and the substantive; as, *atrevidamente*, boldly, *com atrevimêto*, with boldness; *elegante-*



*mênte*, elegantly ; *com elegância*, with elegance ; *cortezmênte*, politely, *còm cortezia*, with politeness, &c.

The last consonant *m* is very often cut off, even before the noun of number *hum*, one ; and so they say, *cum*, instead of *com hum*, as may be seen in *Camoens*, Cant. 2, Stanza xxxvii.

*With me*, *with thee*, *with himself*, &c. are rendered into Portuguese by *commigo*, *contigo*, or *convôco*, *consigo* *convôco*, *convôco*, *consigo*.

When *com* is preceded by *para*, it signifies *towards*, and sometimes *over*, in English ; as, *sejámos piedôsos para com os pôbres*, let us be merciful towards the poor. *Ter grânde podêr para com alguêm*, to have great influence over somebody's mind.

*Com* before the word *capa* is used metaphorically, and then it signifies *under colour* or *pretext*.

### *Para.*

VIII. *Para* is rendered into English by *for* ; but it signifies also *to*, when it is found before the infinitive, and denotes the intention, or purpose in doing something ; as, *êste livro he para mêu irmão*, this book is for my brother ; *êsta penna he para escrever*, this pen is to write ; *Dêos nos fêz para amálo*, God made us for to love him ; *o comêr he necessário para conservár a vida*, eating is necessary for preserving life.

*Para que* is rendered into English by *for what* ; as, *para que he isto?* for what is this ? and sometimes by *that*, or *in order that* ; as, *para que vénha vêrme*, that he may come and see me. But *porquê* signifies *why*, *for what*, *upon what account*, as, *porquê não vîndes?* why don't you come ? but when it is not followed by an interrogation, it signifies *because*.

*Para* serves likewise before the verbs, to denote what one is able to do in consequence of his present disposition ; as, *êlle hé bastantemênte fôrte para andâr a caválo*, he is strong enough to ride ; *elle tem bas-*



*tánte cabedal para sustentár-se*, he has means enough to maintain himself; *a occasiãõ he muito favorável para nos não servir-mos d'ella*, the occasion is too favourable to let it slip.

*Para* expresses also the capacity or incapacity of doing any thing; as, *élle hé hómem para isto*, he is the proper man wanted for this; *hé hómem para pouco*, he is good for little; *hé hómem para náda*, he is good for nothing.

This preposition is also used to denote the end or motive of doing any thing; as, *trabálho para o bem público*, I work for the public good; *hum hospitál para os póbres*, an hospital for the poor.

*Para* is a preposition of time; as *isto me bástá para tódo o áнно*; this is sufficient to me for all the year; *estãõ unidos para sêmpre*, they are united for ever; *para dõus mêses éra muito pouco*, for two months it was too little.

*Para* is sometimes preceded by the adverb *lá*, and followed by a noun of time, and then it is Englished by *against* or *towards*; as, *lá para o fim da semana*, against the end of the week, or towards the end of the week.

*Para* is sometimes Englished by *considering*, or *with respect to*; as, *éste menino está muito adiantado para a idade que tem*, or *para o pouco tempo que aprênde*, this child is very forward for his age, or considering the little time he has learned; *para Inglês fállá demasiadamente*, he talks too much considering that he is an Englishman.

*Para* signifies sometimes *just or ready to*; as, *élle está para partír*, he is just going away, he is ready to go.

*Para* is also used before the word *gráças*; as, *élle não hé para gráças*, he takes no jest; *élle não está para gráças*, he is out of humour, or he is in an ill humour.

*Para ónde?* signifies *whither? to what place?*

*Para que?* or *para que fim?* signifies *to what end* or *purpose?* *Para cima* signifies *upward*.

*Para húma e óutra parte*, signifies *to both sides*, *places*, or *parts*.

*Para* is also Englished by *towards*, and is said of places; as, *para o oriénte*, *towards*, or *to the east*.

*Para ónde quer que*, signifies *whither*, or *to what place thou wilt*, *any where*.

*Para óutra parte*, signifies *towards another place*.

*Para comigo*, *towards me*.

*Para o diante*, signifies *for the time to come*.

*De mim, para mim*, signifies *for what concerns me*.

*Para* is used by *Camoens*. Cant. 2, Stanza xxiv. before the preposition *de trás*, and signifies *backwards*.

*Para* between two nouns of number is Englished by *or*, and sometimes by *and*; as, *hum hómem de quaréнта para cincoéнта ánnos*, a man between forty and fifty; *dista quátro para cinco légoas*, it is about four or five leagues distant.

### *Por.*

IX. *Por, péllo, pélla, péllos*, or *péllas*, signifies *for*; as, *por amor de vós*, for your sake; *por seis semanas*, for six weeks; *palávra por palávra*, word for word.

*Polo* and *pola* instead of *pello* and *pella*, are out of use.

*Por* sometimes denotes that the thing is not yet done; as, *ésta óbra está por acabár*, this work is not yet finished.

*Por*, by, for, over, through; as, *alcancéi-o por empénho*, I obtained it by protection; *eu vou por dinhéiro*, I am going for money; *passéio péllos câmpos*, I walk through the fields; *por tódo o reino*, all over the kingdom.

When *por* is before an infinitive, and followed by a negative, in the latter part of the sentence, it is Englished by *although* or *though*; as, *por ser devóta*,

or *por devôta que seja, não deixa de ser molhér*, though she is a religious woman, yet she is a woman; *por ser pôbre*, or *por pôbre que seja, não deixa de ser sobérba*, though she has no fortune, she is nevertheless, or for all that, proud. Here the negative with the verb *deixár* are rendered into English by the verb *to be*, and the particles *nevertheless, yet, &c.* Sometimes the words *nem por isso* are used before the verb *deixár*, but the sense is the same.

*Por* followed by an adjective and the particle *que* with a verb in the subjunctive mood, is rendered into English by *never so*; as, *por grande que elle seja*, let him be never so great; *por pouco que seja*, never so little.

*Por* before *menos*, signifies *far less than, or under*; as, *vm<sup>ce</sup> não o terá por ménos de vinte libras*, you shall not have it under twenty pounds.

*Por* before *quânto*, with an interrogation, signifies *for how much, at what rate?* But if there be no interrogation, as in the following and the like sentences, then it is to be Englished by *for never so much*; as, *não o faria por quânto me dessem*, I would not do it for never so much.

*Por* before *címa* signifies *upwards*, and before *báxo* is Englished by *downwards*; as, *o remédio obra por címa e por báxo*, the medicine operates, or works, upwards and downwards.

*Por* before *pouco, muito, bem, &c.* and followed by *que*, makes a sort of conjunction governing the subjunctive, and is Englished by *if*, followed by *ever* or *never so little, much, well, &c.* as, *por pouco que erréis*, if you do amiss never so little; *por bém que eu faça*, if I do never so well, &c.

*Por* before *mim* signifies sometimes *as for, or for all*; as, *por mim estou prômpto*, as for me, or, for my part I am ready; *por mim podéis dormir se quizerdes*, you may sleep for all me.

*Por, péllo, pélla, &c.* denote the efficient cause of

a thing, as also the motive and means, or ways of doing it; in all which significations they are Englished by *by, through, out of, at, &c.* as,

*A Asia fôí conquistada por Alexándre,* Asia was conquered by Alexander.

*Vós falláis nisso só por envêja,* it is out of envy only you speak of it.

*E'lle entrôu pélla pórtá, mas sahío pélla janélla,* he got in at the door, but he got out at the window, &c.

*Por* denotes place, after the verbs *ir* and *passár*; as, *por ónde iréis vos?* which way shall you go?

*Eu passaréi por França,* I'll go through France; *por ónde passôu elle?* which way did he go?

*Por* construed with nouns without an article, denotes most times *distribution of people, time, and place*; and it is Englished by *a, or every*, before the noun; as,

*E'lle déu tânto por cabéça,* he gave so much a head.

*Tânto por soldádo, por áнно, por mês, por semána, &c.* so much a soldier, a year, a month, a week; *a razão de vinte por cento,* at the rate of twenty per cent.

*E'lle péde tânto por légoa,* he asks so much a league, or every league.

*Por*, between two nouns without an article, or between two infinitives without a preposition, denotes the choice which one makes between two things, alike in their nature, but different in their circumstances; as,

*Cása por cása ántes quero ésta que aquélla,* since I must have one of these two houses, I like this better than that; *morrêr por morrêr, melhor hé morrêr combatêndo que fugíndo,* when a man must die, it is better to die in fighting than in running away.

*Pello méyo* is rendered into English by *through*; as, *pello méyo dos câmpos,* through the fields.

*Por méyo* is rendered into English by *by*; as, *elle alcançôu o séu inténto por méyo de astúcias,* he has compassed his ends by devices.



*Por turno* signifies *in one's turn*.

*Por* before the infinitives is used instead of *para* by the best Portuguese writers; and *porque* instead of *para que*; as may be seen particularly in *Camoens*, Canto 2, Stanza vii. and viii. and in the following example, *por não*, or *para não repetir o que já temos, dito*, not to repeat what we have already said.

*Por* is sometimes Englished by *for*, upon the account of, *for sake*, &c. as, *elle fará isto por amor de vós*, he will do this upon your account, or for your sake; *deixárao-o por morto*, he was left for dead; *eu tenho-o por meu amigo*, I take him to be my friend; *todos os homens de bem são*, or *estão por elle*, all honest people are for him, or are on his side; *por quem me tomáis vós?* who do you take me for?

We have already observed, that *porque* without an interrogation signifies *because*; but it has the same signification in the following sentence, and the like; *porque elle hé mentiroso segue-se que também eu o seja*; because he is a liar, does it follow therefore that I am one?

*Por isto*, or *por esta razão*, signifies *therefore*.

*O porque* signifies the reason, the cause, or the subject; as, *sábe-se o porque?* is it known upon what account?

*Por modo de dizer* signifies *as one may say, if I, or we, may say*, &c.

*Por diante* signifies *before*; and *por detrás* signifies *behind*.

*Por ventura* signifies *perhaps*.

*Pello passado* signifies *formerly, in time past, heretofore*.

*Por nenhúm caso*, by no means.

*Por mar e por terra*, by sea and land.

*Hum por hum* signifies *one by one*.

*Por* is sometimes Englished by *in*; as, *elles são vinte por todos*, they are twenty in all.

When the verb *passár* is followed by *por*, then the word *álto* signifies *to forget*; as, *passou-lhe aquillo por*

*alto*, he forgot that ; but speaking of goods it signifies to *smuggle*.

*Por* joined with the verb *ir* signifies to *fetch*, and *seek after* ; as, *vái por vinho*, go fetch some wine ; *vái pélllo médico*, go see for the physician.

*Por* is commonly used before the substantives ; as, *pór exémplo*, for example ; *por commodidáde*, for conveniency ; *por costúme*, for custom sake ; and many others, that may be learned by use.

You must observe, that *pélllo* serves for the masculine, *pella* for the feminine, and *por* for both.

### *Contra.*

X. *Contra* (against, contrary to) denotes opposition ; as, *que diz vm<sup>ce</sup> cóntra isto ?* what do you say against this ? It signifies also *over against*, *opposite to*.

*Pró e cóntra* signifies in English *pro* and *con*.

### *Desde.*

XI. *Désde* denotes both time and place, and enumeration of things, and is commonly followed in the sentence by the preposition *até* (*to*) ; then *désde* denotes the term *from whence*, and *até* that of *hitherto* ; as,

*Désde o princípio até o fim*, from the beginning to the end.

*E'lle fôí a pé désde Windsor até Lóndres*, he walked from Windsor to London.

*Eú ténho visto tódos désde o primeiro ate o último*, I have seen them all from the first to the last ; *fôraõ tódos mórtos désde o primeiro até o último*, they were all slain to a man.

*Désde a criação do mún-do*, from or since the creation.

*Désde o bérço, ou infânciá*, from the cradle, from a child.

*Désde já*, even now ; as, *désde já prevéjo*, I even now foresee.

*Désde agóra*, from this time forward.

*Désde então*, from that time ever since.

*Désde que*, as soon as, when.

*Désde quándo?* how long since, *or* ago ?

*Rio navegável désde o séu nasciménto* ; a river navigable at its very rise.

*Até.*

XII. *Até* signifies *till, even, to, &c.* as you may see in the following examples.

*Até ónde?* how far ?

*Até Róma*, as far as Rome.

*Até quándo?* till when *or* how long ?

*Até que éu viva*, as long as I live.

*Hé hum hómem de tanta bondáde, que até os séus inimígos são obrigádos a estimálo*, he is so good a man that even his enemies have a value for him.

*Até os mais vis hómens tomávaõ a liberdáde de, &c.* the very worst of men took such a liberty as to, &c.

*Até que*, until, till.

*Até as oréllhas*, up to the ears.

*Elle vendéo até a camísa*, he has sold the very shirt off his back.

*Até agóra, or até aquí*, till now, *or* hitherto.

*Até aquí* (speaking of a place), to this place, hithèr, so far.

*Até lá*, to that place, so far.

*Até que isto se fáça*, till it be done.

*Até então*, till then, till that time.

*Até* is also used before an infinitive ; as, *gritar até enrrouquecér*, to bawl one's self hoarse.

*Rir até arreventár pellas ilhárgas*, to split one's sides with laughing.

*Dár de comér a alguém até arreventár*, to fill, *or* cram one with victuals till he bursts.

*Até á priméira*, till our next meeting, till we meet again.

*Por cima.*

XIII. *Por cima* (above, over), denotes superiority of place ; as,

*Morar por cima da alguém*, to live or lodge above somebody.

*A bálle lhe passôu por cima da cabeça*, the ball went over his head.

*Por cima de tudo*, upon the whole.

*Para cima.*

XIV. *Para cima* (above) denotes superiority of age, and is sometimes put at the end of the sentence ; as,

*Elles alistáraõ tôdos que tinhaõ de dez ánnos para cima*, they enlisted every body above ten.

*A cima.*

XV. *A cima* (above) denotes rank, and some moral subjects ; as,

*A cima, d'elle*, above him, or superior to him.

*Estár a cima de tudo*, to be above the world.

*Húma molhér que está a cima de tudo, não se lhe dá do que o mundo diz d'ella*, a woman who is above the public censure, don't care what people say of her.

*Em cima.*

XVI. *Em cima* (upon) ; as *em cima da mésa*, upon the table.

*Em cima de tudo isto*, or only *em cima*, signifies and besides all that, over and above all that.

*De cima.*

XVII. *De cima*, when it is an adverb, signifies from above ; but when a preposition, it is Englished by *from, off*, or *from off* ; as,



*Tirái aquillo de cima da mésa*, take that from off the table.

*Elle nunca tirou os seus olhos de cima d'ella*, he never turned his eyes from her.

*Cahir de cima das arvoras*, to fall off the trees.

*Debáxo.*

XVIII. The preposition *debáxo* (*under, below, or from under*) denotes the time and place; I say the time of a denomination of a reign, or government; as, *debáxo do imperio de Augústo*, under the empire of Augustus.

*Debáxo*, as a preposition of place, marks out inferiority of position; as,

*Tudo o que há debáxo dos céos*, all there is under heaven.

*Tér húma almofáda debáxo dos joéllhos*, to have a cushion under the knees.

*Estár debáxo da chave*, to be under lock and key.

*Debáxo* is sometimes rendered into English by *upon*; as, *affirmár húma cóusa debáxo de juramênto*, to swear a thing, to declare upon oath.

*Abáxo.*

XIX. This preposition is rendered into English by *under, inferior, or next*; as *assentóu-se abáxo d'elles*, he sat inferior, *or* under them; as, *assentóu-se abáxo de mim*; he sat next, inferior to me, *or* he was next man to me: *abáxo del-réi elle hé o priméiro*, he is the next man to the king.

This preposition is sometimes put at the end of the following phrases, *de télhas abáxo*, here below, in this lower world, *de cabéça abáxo*, headlong.

*Fóra.*

XX. *Fóra* (*out, without, except, but*), denotes exclusion, and exception. It requires generally a genitive before a noun of time, or place; but it governs also the nominative; as,

*Fóra do réyno*, out of the kingdom.

*Fóra da cidade*, out of town.

*Fóra de tempo*, out of season.

*Procurái-o fóra de casa*, look for him without doors.

*Elles sahíraõ tódos, fóra dous ou três*, they all went out except, or but, two or three.

*Elle lhe permite tudo, fóra o ir ás assembléas*, he indulges her in every thing, but in going to assemblies.

*Elle tem tódos os poderes, fóra o de concluir*, he has full powers, except of concluding.

*Fóra* is sometimes preceded by *taõ*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *so far*; as *élle está taõ fóra de socorrér os séus alliados, que se declára cóntra elles*, he is so far from assisting his allies, that he declares himself against them.

*Fóra* is sometimes rendered into English by *besides*; as, *fóra daquélles que*, &c. besides those that, &c. and sometimes by *beyond*; as, *fóra de medida*, beyond measure.

*Fóra de horas* signifies *beyond the hour*, or *very late*.

*Pór alguém fóra da pórtá*, or *mandár alguém pélla pórtá fóra*, to turn one out of doors.

### *De fórnte or frónte.*

This preposition governs the genitive, and signifies *over against*. It is followed by *de, do, da*, &c. as,

*De frónte da sua casa está hum outeiro*, over against his house is a hill.

*Eu estava de frónte d'elle*, I was over against him.

### *Sem.*

*Sem* signifies *without*; as,

*Sem dinhéiro*, without money,

*Sem dúvida*, without end.

*Sem dar a entendér*, or *sem fazer conhecér*, without giving to understand.

*Sem máis, nem ménos*, without any reason or provocation.

*Estár sem ámo*, to be out of place.

*Sem que algúm ácto precedénte pôssa derogár o presénte*, any former act to the contrary of the present notwithstanding.

*Sem* governs also the infinitive, which is rendered into English with the participle; as, *fallár sem sabér*, to speak without knowing.

It is also a conjunction with *que*, governing the subjunctive; as,

*Enfáda-se sem que lhe digaõ náda*, he is angry without any body saying any thing to him.

*Naõ éra eu já bastantaménte infeliz, semque procurásseis de acrescentár a minha infelicidade?* was I not miserable enough before, but you must still labour to make me more so?

*Lémbro-me sem que me digáis*, I remember without your telling.

*E'lle virá sem que mándem por elle*, he will come without sending for.

#### *Confórme* or *segúndo*.

XXIII. *Confórme* or *segúndo* (according to, conformable to) govern the nominative, and never the dative as in English: as,

*E'lle foi tratádo confórme o séu mereciméto*, he was treated according to his deserts.

*Confórme o méu parecér*, in my judgment, in my opinion.

In common conversation *confórme* is used adverbially, and Englished as follows:

*Isso he confórme*, or only *confórme*, it is as it happens; may be; may be not; that is according,

*Confórme a occasiaõ o pedir*, according as there may be need.

#### *Sóbre*.

XXIV. *Sóbre* signifies upon; as, *sóbre a mésa*, upon the table; *sóbre o ríto*, upon the river.

*Sobre tudo*, or *sobre todas as cousas*, over all, above all, above all things, above any thing, especially; as, *sobre tudo ténde cuidado na saúde*, but, above all things, mind your health.

*Pôr alguém sobre si*, or *dár lhe o priméiro lugar*, to place one above himself.

*Ir sobre húma cidade*, to march against a town.

*Ir sobre alguém*, to fall, or to rush upon one.

*Ir sobre seguro*, to go upon sure grounds.

*Sobre a nóite*, about or towards the evening.

*Sobre o vérde*, somewhat green.

*Sobre a minha palavra*, upon my word.

*Sobre palavra*, upon parole.

*Mandár carta sobre carta*, to send letter upon letter.

*E'lle recebéo a carta sobre o jantar*, he had just dined when he received the letter.

*E'lle dôrme sobre o jantar*, he sleeps immediately after dinner.

*Sobre isto*, or *sobre estas cousas*, is sometimes Englished by *more than that*, or *besides that*; as,

*E'lle roubou-o, e sobre isto matou-o*, he robbed him, and more than that, he killed him.

*Sobre que*, is rendered into English by *though* or *although*; as,

*E'ste negócio sobre que he difficultoso, naõ hé impossivel*, altho' this is a hard affair, yet it is not impossible.

*Sobre* is Englished sometimes by *besides*; as,

*Sobre as misérias da guerra, elle teve a disgráça*, &c. besides the miseries of the war, he had the misfortune of, &c.

*Estár sobre si*, or *andár sobre si*, signifies to stand upon one's guard.

*E'u vos escreveréi sobre ésta matéria*, I will write to you about this matter.

### Acérca.

XXV. *Acérca*, signifies *about*, as, *acérca disto lhe disse*, about this I told him; *acérca de lá ir lhe respondi*, about going there I answered him.



*Pérto, júnto, ao pé, pegádo.*

XXVI. *Pérto*, (near, by, about) denotes proximity of place and time, and governs the genitive case; as, *aquillo está muito pérto do lume*, that is very near the fire; *pérto das oito horas*, about eight o'clock.

*Pérto do rio*, near the river.

*Estámos pérto do Natal*, we are near Christmas.

*Ao pé* requires also the genitive case; as,

*Assentáivos ao pé de mim*, sit down by me, or near me; *ao pé do rio*, near the river, &c.

Note, that *júnto* (near or by) and *pegádo* (hard by) require the dative case; as,

*Júnto a cidade*, near the town.

*Pegádo ao palácio*, hard by the palace.

*Lónge.*

*Lónge*, far, a great way off, governs the genitive, and the particle *de*, or *do*, *da*, &c. as,

*Lónge de casa*, far from home.

*Lónge daqui*, far from hence.

*De lónge*, or *ao lónge*.

This preposition requires the genitive case; as,

*Ao lónge da práya*, along the shore.

*Ao lónge da côsta*, *do prádo*, &c. along the coast, the meadow, &c.

*Of further Particles.*

*Ainda, ainda que, póstoquê* or *quándo bem, ainda assim*, or *com tudo*.

*Ainda* signifies yet; as, *êlle ainda não véyo*, he is not come yet. It signifies also *even*; as, *seria vergónha ainda o fallár nísso*, it were a shame even to speak of it; *nem ainda por cem libras*, no not for a hundred pounds.

*Ainda que* signifies, *though* or *although*; as, *ainda que vós sôis mais vélho do que êlle*, though you be older than he; *ainda que assim fôsse* though it were so.

*Ainda qué*, is very often followed by *com tudo*, yet for all that ; as, *ainda que elle não tivésse necessidade disso, com tudo*, &c. though he had no need of it, yet, &c.

*Ainda assim*, or *com tudo*, is sometimes Englished by *nevertheless*, or *for all that* ; as, *ainda assim sempre elle foi louvável*, he was praise-worthy for all that.

*Já desde, já que* and *já por que*.

*Já desde* is rendered into English by *even from* ; as, *já desde o princípio*, even from the beginning.

*Já que* signifies *since* ; as,

*Já que isso assim he*, since it is so.

The particle *que* sometimes is not placed immediately after *já* ; as, *já há dous annos que morréo*, he died two years since or ago.

*Já há muito tempo que sahistes de casa*, it is a long time since you went from home.

*Já por que*, is repeated in the same sentence, and then the first is rendered into English by *first, because* ; and the second by *secondly, because* ; as, *já por que era cego, já por que era coxo*, first, because he was blind, and secondly, because he was lame.

*Depois que*.

*Depois que* is rendered into English by *after* ; as *Depois que eu tinha entrado*, after I was gone in.

*Com que*.

*Com que* is only a note either of introduction, or connexion ; as,

*Com que havia um homem enfermo*, &c. now a certain man was sick ; sometimes they add to it the particle *assim*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *and so*.

*Ou*.

*Ou* signifies *or, or either* ; as, *ou bom, ou máo*, either good or bad ; *máis ou ménos*, more or less ; *ou elle queira ou não*, whether he will or not.

*Quer.*

*Quer*, when a particle, must be repeated, and the first is rendered into English by *either* or *whether*, and the second by *or*; as, *quer elle queira quer não*, whether he will or not; *quer vós o tenhâis feito, quer não*, whether you have done that, or not.

*Se quer, or ao ménos.*

*Se quer*, or *ao ménos*, &c. signifies *at least, however*; as, *se vós não querêis sér por elle não sejâis se quer cóntra elle*, if you don't choose to be for him, at least don't oppose him; *dâi-lhe se quer com que sustentâr-se*, give him, however, a subsistence; *o nôsso primêiro fim hé de livrârnos de tôdos os máles, ao ménos dos mayóres*, our chief end is to be freed from all evils; at least the greatest.

*Nem se quer hum*, is rendered into English by *never a one, so much*, or *in the following manner*; as, *fôraõ tôdos mórtos, e nem se quer hum escapôu*, they were all slain to a man.

*Quândo muito.*

*Quândo muito* (at most, at furthest,) is generally used before the nouns of time and price; as, *elle estará aquí dêntro em hum mêz quândo muito*, he will be here in a month at furthest; *dez libras quândo muito*, ten pounds at most.

*Tânto.*

*Tânto*, so much, is sometimes followed by *cómo*, and then it is rendered into English by *as well as, as much as*, &c.

*A'mo-te tânto cómo a mim mêsmo*, I love thee as well as myself.

*Elle teme tânto cómo qualquér de vós, que lhe resulte algúm dâno*, he is afraid of harm as much as any of you.

*Cuidêi que a estimásse tanto cómo a si mésmo*, I thought he esteemed her, as much as he did himself.

*Elles vem tanto de dia cómo de nóite*, they can see as well by day as by night.

*Eu tive tanto cómo vós*, I had as much as you.

*Outro tanto* is rendered into English by *the double, twice as much, or as much*; as,

*Eu alcancêi outro tanto máis por isso*, I had as much more for it; *eu pôsso fazer outro tanto*, I can do as much.

*Tanto* followed by *assim*, is a particle merely expletive; as,

*Tanto assim que lhe pôsso eu fazer?* how can I help it; *váite, tanto assim não ha náda para ti*, go away, here is nothing for you.

*Tanto assim* followed by *que* without an interrogation, is sometimes rendered by *so that, in so much that*; as, *tanto assim que elle não quér ouvir máis fallar nisso*, so that he will hear no more of it.

*Tanto máis* is followed by *que*, and Englished by *and the more so as*; as,

*Eu estôu prômpto para ir com vme<sup>ce</sup> hum dia destes à comédia, se vme<sup>ce</sup> quizer, tanto máis que-se deve representár húma nóva peça*; I am ready to go with you some day or other to the play, if you'll give me leave; and the more so, as a new piece is to be acted.

*Tanto que*, or *logo que*, is rendered into English by *as soon as*; as, *tanto que eu o vi*, as soon as I saw him.

*Tanto melhór* is rendered into English by *so much the better*.

*Tanto* is sometimes preceded by *com*, and followed by *que*, and is Englished by *so, provided that*; as *com tanto que o façais*, provided that you do it; *com tanto que me não faça mal*, so he do me no hurt.

*Tanto quanto* is Englished by *as much as*; as,

*Tanto quanto pôsso*, as much as I can.

*Taõ.*

*Taõ*, so, is generally followed by *cómo*; as,



*Este não hé tão bom cómo o outro*, this is not so good as the other ; *eu sei isso tão bem cómo vós*, I know it as well as you.

*Tão* is sometimes followed by *que*, and Englished by *so, such, to that degree* ; as,

*E'lle hé tão prudente que não tem igual*, he is so wise that he has not his equal ; *não sou tão louco que o creya*, I am not so simple, or I am not such a fool as to believe it ; *fáz tão grande vento que*, &c. the wind is so high that, &c. or the wind blows to that degree, &c.

### *Cómo.*

*Cómo*, is Englished by *as, like, how*, &c. as may be seen in the following expressions :

*Cómo?* how ?

*Dizéime cómo lhe héi de fallár?* tell me how I may speak to him.

*Cómo assim?* how so ?

*Cómo!* what !

*Cómo quer que*, whereas.

*Cómo quer que seja*, howsoever, in what manner or fashion soever.

*Séja cómo fór*, be it as it will.

*Cómo isto assim he*, since it is so.

*Cómo*, as it were, or almost.

*Cómo se*, as if, or even as if ; as, *cómo se elles tivessem já vencido*, as if they had already overcome.

*Cómo também*, as well as.

*Rico cómo elle hé*, as rich as he is.

*Cómo sóis meu amigo, quero*, &c. as (or because) you are my friend, I'll, &c.

*Dizéime o cómo*, tell me how.

*E'u sei cómo fazer para que elle vénha*, I know the way I shall take to make him come.

*Cómo elle lá não estéia, eu iréi*, provided he is not there, I will come.

*Assim.*

*Assim*, so, thus, is rendered into English as in the following expressions :

*Póis hé assim de véras? de véras que assim hé*, is it even so? it is even so.

*Assim seja*, or *seja assim*, so be it, or be it so.

*Assim hé*, it is so.

*Para assim dizér*, as it were.

*Assim sou eu louco*, *que*, &c. I am not so foolish as to, &c.

*Assim Déos me sálve*, as I hope to be saved.

*Tánto assim*, so that.

*Assim he que vós*, &c. is this your way, &c.

*Assim cómo assim*, after all, nevertheless, or for all that; as, *em vão dilatáis a vossa jornada*, *assim cómo assim he preciso que vádes*, it is in vain for you to put off your journey, you must go thither nevertheless, or for all that, you must go after all.

*Assim cómo*, as well as, or as soon as.

*Básta assim por agóra* thus much for this time.

*Assim na paz*, *cómo na guérra*, both in time of peace and war.

*Assim*, *assim*, so so, indifferent.

*Assim queíra elle cómo póde*, he can if he will.

*Assim* is sometimes preceded by *e*; as, *e assim que quer isto dizér?* how now? what do you mean by this? And sometimes *assim* is followed by *cómo*; as, *assim cómo o sól eclípsa os outros planétas*, *da mesma sorte*, &c. as the sun eclipses the other planets, so, &c.

*Se.*

*Se*, if; as, *se elle viér*, if he comes; *se me amáesses*, should you love me; *se elle fósse homem de hónra*, were he but an honest man: *se soubéssem quem eu sou*, *todos diriaõ*, &c. were it told who I am, every one would say, &c. *se he verdáde que*, &c. if so be that, &c.

The reciprocal verbs, as well as those that are

used impersonally, may have two *se se* joined together ; as, *se se fôr*, if he goes away ; *se se fälla nísso*, if they speak to it.

*Se* is sometimes rendered into English by *whether* ; and when it is repeated, the second is Englished by *or* ; as,

*Quiséra sabér se a cúlpa hé nóssa, se vóssa*, I would know whether it is our fault or yours.

#### *Aliás.*

*Aliás* is sometimes rendered into English by *else* ; as, *entráí, porque aliás fecharéi a pórtá*, come in, or else I'll shut the door ; *porqué aliás seriaõ os vóssos filhos immúndos*, else were your children unclean. And sometimes it is rendered into English by *otherwise*, *in other things*, or *respects*.

#### *Embóra.*

*Embóra* is rendered into English by *prosperously*, *auspiciously* ; but sometimes it is a particle merely expletive, and answers to the Italian *pure* : as, *dizéi muitõ embóra o que quizerdes*, say what you please : the Italian says, *dite pur quel che vi piáce*.

*Muitõ embóra séja assim*, well, let it be so.

*Embóra* is sometimes Englished by *away* ; as, *váite embóra*, go away.

#### *Senáõ.*

*Senáõ* signifies *if not*, *did not*, *were it not that*, *but that* ; as,

*Senáõ tivésse médo de méu pay*, but that I fear my father.

*Se elle não tivésse vergónha de confessár*, but that he was ashamed to confess.

The following expressions, in which they make use of this particle, may be Englished by *but*, *for*, and some other variations.

*Se não fósse por elle*, but for him, *or had it not been for him*, *or had he not been*.

*Senão fosse por vós*, had you not been, or had it not been for you, without you, without your help, hindrance, &c.

*Senão fosse por mim*, elle morreria de fome, were it not for me, he would starve.

*Senão* is sometimes Englished by *but*: as, *nem elles tem outro intento*, *senão*, &c. nor do they aim at any thing else but, &c.

*Ninguém disse assim senão Cícero*, nobody said so but Cícero.

*Senão* may be also expressed by *más que* in the following sentence, and the like:

*Elle não faz senão jogar*, or *elle não faz más que jogar*, he does nothing but play.

*Naõ, naõ porqué.*

*Naõ*, not, or no, when followed by *porqué*, is Englished by *not that*, *not but that*; as, *naõ porqué lhe faltasse engenho*, not but that he had wit; *naõ porqué naõ fosse jústo*, mas *porqué*, &c. not but that it was right, but because, &c. *naõ porqué a cõusa seja impossivel mas porqué*, &c. not that the thing is possible, but because, &c.

*Também*, or *outrosi*.

*Também*, or *outrosi*, signifies *also*, *too*, *likewise*; as, *vós assim o queréis e eu também*, you will have it so, and I too.

*Para que*, *porqué.*

See the prepositions *para* and *por*.

*Põis.*

This particle is very much used by the Portuguese, and is rendered into English several ways, as in the following examples:

*Põis ide, e vinde logo*, go, then, and come back presently.

*Põis naõ sou eu capaz de fazello?* what, am I not capable of doing it?



*Póis*, or *póis entãõ que quér dizér isto?* Well, and what of all this?

*Póis*, or *póis entãõ que hêi de fazér?* What shall I do then?

*Póis éu digo que elle está dèntro*, why, he is here within, I say.

*Póis porqué me vigiaís?* Why, then, do you watch me?

*E'lle tem cabeça; póis também hum alfinéte a tem*, he has got a head, and so has a pin.

*Póis* before *naõ*, and preceded by an interrogation, denotes a strong assertion, and is Englished by *without doubt, yes, surely, to be sure, &c.* as, *virá elle? póis naõ!* will he come? yes, to be sure.

*Antes*, or *máis depréssa*.

These particles are sometimes rendered into English by *rather* or *sooner*; as, *antes* or *máis depréssa quizéra morré*, I would rather die; *antes quizéra vivér só que na vóssa-companhia*, I would sooner live alone than be in your company. Sometimes *antes* is Englished by *before*; as, *I'de-vos antes que elle vénha*, go away before he comes; *antes que éu mórra*, before I die.

*Mas antes, pelo contrário, mas pelo contrário*.

These particles are rendered into English by *on the contrary, on the other hand, nay*; as, *mas antes, mas pelo contrário, or pelo contrário isto hé muito diferente*, nay, it is quite another thing; *mas antes, pelo contrário, &c. elle hé avaréto*, nay, or on the contrary, he is a covetous man.

*Para melhór dizér*.

This phrase is rendered into English by *nay*; as, *elle tem já bastánte, ou para melhór dizér, máis do necessário*, he has already enough, nay, too much; *a isto hé que nós chamámos diréito das géntes, ou para melhór dizér, da razãõ*, this is what we call the law of

nations, which may be called more properly the law of reason.

*Que.*

We have already observed that *que* is a particle which most conjunctions are composed of; as, *ainda que*, although; *de sorte que*, so that, &c.

The particle *que* sometimes is the sign of the third persons of the imperative, as *let* in English; as, *que fãlle*, let him speak; *que riaõ*, let them laugh.

*Que* is used between two verbs, to determine and specify the sense of the first, as *eu vos asseguro que assim hé*, I assure you that it is so; *duvido que assim seja*, I doubt whether it is so or not.

*Que* is used also after *hõra* in the beginning of a sentence, and followed by a verb in the subjunctive, to denote by exclamation one's surprise, aversion, and reluctance to something; in which case there is a verb grammatically understood before *que*; as, *hõra que se esquecesse elle de si mesmo!* I wonder, or is it possible for him to have forgot himself!

The exclamation, or admiration, is sometimes expressed without any verb; as, *que gosto; e ao mesmo tempo, que pena!* how much pleasure and trouble at once!

*Que* is sometimes repeated; as,

*Que bellos livros que tendes*, what fine books you have got; *que bella que hé a virtude!* how beautiful is virtue!

*Que* is sometimes followed by *de*; as, *que de loucos ha no mundo!* how many fools there are in the world.

*Que* is used after nouns denoting time, and is sometimes Englished by *when* or *since*, &c. and sometimes left out; as,

*O dia que elle partio*, the day when he set out.

*Quanto tempo há que estais em Londres?* how long have you lived in London?

*Ha dez annos que faz a mesma coisa*, he has done the same thing these ten years.

*Há dez ánnos que morréo*, he died ten years ago.

*Que* is sometimes rendered into English by *because*, as in Camoens, canto 2, stanza xvi. *que levemente hum ánimo*, and sometimes by *that, to the end that, in order to*; as in, *ibid.* stanza xvii. *que cómo vissem, que no rio*, &c.

*Que* before *se* in the beginning of a sentence, is a redundancy not expressed in English; as, *que se vós dizéis que*, if you say that, &c.

*Que* is used after the conjunction *a pénas* (scarcely or hardly), and is Englished by *but*; as, *apénas acabóu de fallár, que logo morréo*; he had scarcely done speaking, but he expired.

*Que* sometimes is preceded by *de sôrte, de maneira, de géito*, and then it is Englished by *so that, in such a manner, insomuch that*; as, *eu o faréi de sôrte que fiquéis conténte*, I will do it so that, or in that manner that, you shall be contented.

#### *De véras.*

*De véras* signifies *in earnest*; but sometimes it is Englished by *no sure*; *de véras*; *naõ o pôsso créer*, no sure!

#### *Hóra.*

*Hóra*, or *óra*, is an interjection that serves to encourage, as we have seen above; but when it is repeated, it is Englished by *sometimes, one while, another while*; as, *óra está bem, óra está mal*, sometimes he is well, sometimes ill, *élle óra está de hum parecér, e óra de óutro*, he is now of one opinion, and next moment of another. *Por óra*, signifies *now, for the present*.

## CHAP. VIII.

OF THE PORTUGUESE ORTHOGRAPHY AND FIRST  
OF CAPITALS AND STOPS.

I. **PROPER** names, as well as surnames, always begin with a capital.

II. The names of nations, kingdoms,<sup>s</sup> and provinces, also begin with a capital; as, *Francéz*, French; *Ingléz*, English, &c.

III. All names of dignities, and degrees, and honours, require a capital; as, *Réy*, *Bispo*, &c. King, Bishop, &c.

IV. At the beginning of a period, as well as of a verse, the first letter is always a capital.

V. The names of arts and sciences, as well as those of kindred, begin with a capital.

*Of Stops.*

The use of stops, or points, is to distinguish words and sentences.

The Portuguese have six stops, or pauses, viz.

1. The *pónto final*, the same as our period or full stop (.), and is used at the end of a period, to show that the sentence is completely finished.

2. The *dóus póntos*, which is our colon (:), and is the pause made between two members of a period; that is, when the sense is complete, but the sentence not ended.

3. The *pónto e vírgula*, is our semicolon (;), and denotes that short pause which is made in the subdivision of the members or parts of a sentence.

4. The *pónto de interrogaçám*, the point of interrogation thus (?).

5. *Pónto de admiraçám*, the point of admiration, thus (!).

6. The *vírgula*, the same with our comma (,) and is the shortest pause or resting, in speech, being



used chiefly to distinguish nouns, verbs, and adverbs, as also the parts of a shorter sentence.

The conjunction *e*, the relative *qual*, and the disjunctions *ou* and *nem*, require a comma before them.

The Portuguese make use also of a parenthesis, thus ( ); but they do not make use of the diæresis, called by their printers *créma* (··); they use also the *ângulo*, thus  $\Delta$ , called by the printers *caret*.

The apostrophe, or, as they call it, *viracênto*, is used in this as in other languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy pronunciation, of words, by cutting off an antecedent vowel; as *d' armas*, *d' élvás*, and not *dármas*, *délvás*, &c. Although this is allowable in cases wherein, by use, they seem to be one word; as, *nêsta*, *nêste*, *dêsta*, *dêste*, *nalgúm*, *daquêlle*, *nêlle*, *nêlla*, *daquí*, *dalí*, *atequí*, *ategóra*; and not *em êlle*, *de êlle*, &c.

#### Of the Accents.

The accent is a sound of the voice by which we pronounce some syllables shorter, others longer.

I intend to speak here only of the accents the Portuguese ought to make use of, according to *Madureira*, in his *Portuguese Orthography*.

The Portuguese indeed are acquainted with three accents, but they ought to make use of two only, namely, the acute, which descends from the right to the left (´), and the circumflex, thus (ˆ).

1. The acute serves to prolong the pronunciation, and is put, according to *Madureira*, on the last syllable of the third person singular of the future tense; as, *amará*, *lerá*, &c.

2. On the penultima of the preterpluperfect tense of the indicative mood; as, *amára*, *ensinára*, &c.

3. The acute accent ought to be put also on the penultima of the third persons of the present tense of the verb *renunciár*, *pronunciár*, *duvidár*, &c. thus *renuncíá*, *pronuncíá*, *duvída*, &c. that they may

be distinguished from the nouns *renúncia*, *pronúncia*, *dúvida*, &c. The same accent is also put on *estú*, *nó*, to distinguish them from *ésta*, this, and *no*, in the.

The vowel *o* has two sounds, according to the two accents that may be put on it; one open, when it is marked with the acute accent, and is pronounced like *o* in *store*; the other close, when it is marked with the circumflex accent, and then is pronounced like *u* in *stumble*.

There are many nouns, both substantive and adjective, which are accented in the singular with the circumflex, and in the plural with the acute; and the adjectives that have two terminations, particularly those ending in *oso*, *osa*, must be accented (in the singular) with the circumflex in the masculine, and with the acute in the feminine; as,

*Fógo*, fire; plural, *fógos*.

*Fórno*, oven; plural, *fórnos*.

*ólho*, eye; plural, *ólhos*.

*ovo*, egg; plural, *óvos*.

*ósso*, bone; plural, *óssos*.

*Póço*, well; plural, *péços*.

*Pórco*, hog; plural, *pórcos*.

*Rógo*, prayer; plural, *rógos*. And so *fójo*, *tórno*, *formóso*, *sequióso*, *suppósto*, *póvo*, *tórto*, *tórta*, *copióso*, &c.

The following keep the circumflex accent in both numbers: *bólo*, *bólos*; *bójo*, *bójos*; *bóto*, *bótos*; *cóco*, *cócos*; *chôro*, *chôros*; *cóto*, *cótos*; *fórro*, *fórros*; *górdo*, *górδος*; *gósto*, *góstos*; *gózo*, *gózos*; *lóbo*, *lébos*; *móço*, *móços*; *nójo*, *nójos*; *pótro*, *pótros*; *tólo*, *tólos*; *ferrólho*, *ferrólhos*; *rapóso*, *rapósos*; *arróz*, *arrózes*; *algóz*, *algózes*, &c.

On the contrary, the following keep the acute accent in both numbers: *cópo*, *cópos*; *módo*, *módos*; *nóssso*, *nóssos*; *vóssso*, *vóssos*, &c.

When the circumflex accent is put on the *é*, then the *e* is pronounced like the French masculine *e*; but when *e* is accented with the acute accent, then

the *e* is to be pronounced like the *e* open in French, and it is exceedingly sonorous and long. See the pronunciation of the vowel *e*.

Nouns ending in *az*, *iz*, *oz* *uz*, must have the acute accent on the vowel before the *z*; as, *rapáz*, a boy; *nósz*, a walnut; *alcaçúz*, licorice; but you must except *arróz*, rice; *algóz*, a hang-man.

Nouns ending in *ez* generally have the circumflex accent; as *méz*, a month; *marquéz*, a marquis, &c. except the surnames; as, *A'lvarez*, *Antúnez*, *López*, *Henríquez*, *Gonçálvez*, *Rodríguez*, *Pérez*, *Núnez*, *Téllez*, &c.

#### *Some Observations upon the Portuguese Orthography.*

Both the Portuguese orthographers and best authors vary so much in their rules and ways of writing, that it is impossible for any grammarian to clear up this part of the Portuguese grammar, it requiring no less authority than that of the Royal Portuguese Academy. However, not totally to set aside so material a part of the Grammar, I shall present the learner with the following observations:

I. When the Latin words from which the Portuguese are derived, begin with a *b*, the Portuguese likewise must begin with it; therefore you must write and pronounce the *b*, in the following words, *bom*, *bondáde*, *bem*, *bénto*, &c. because they are derived from *bonus*, *bonitas*, &c. But you must except *báinha*, *bexíga*, *báirro*, which begin with a *b*, though they are derived from *vagina*, *vesica*, *vicus*.

II. Likewise if the Latin words begin with a *v*, the Portuguese words derived from them must also begin with it; as *vída*, *vivér*, *varrér*, *vér*, *vínho*, &c. from *vita*, *vivere*, *verrere videre*, *vinum*, &c.

Though *b* ought to be pronounced only by closing the lips, and *v* by touching the superior teeth with the inferior lips; yet, by a certain affinity between

these two letters, in speaking there is a great confusion in the pronunciation of them in the province of *Entre Dóuro e Minho*: and this confusion has not been peculiar to the Portuguese language, for *Nebrixa* says, in his *Castilian Orthography*, that in his time some Spaniards could hardly make any distinction between these two letters.

III. The *p* found in some words originally Latin, is changed in Portuguese into a *b*; as, *cábra*, *cabélllo*, *cabéça*, &c. from *capra*, *capillus*, *caput*, &c.

IV. The Portuguese generally make use of the *y* in the following words: *ay*, *réy*, *fréy*, *léy*, *māy*, *pāy*, *māyo*, *méyo*, and some others.

*Bluteau* says, that we must make use of the *y* in words having a Greek origin; as, *sy'llaba*, *Chrysopeia*, *pyrámide*, *poly'gono*, *hydrographia*, *hydrópico*, *physica*, *hypérbole*, *hypócrita*, *Apócrypho*, &c.

V. The *ph* are used by the Portuguese in some words taken from the Greek: as *philosophia*, *philologia*, *Philadélphia*, *epitáphio*, &c.

VI. The *r* in Portuguese has two pronunciations, one soft, expressed by a single *r* as in *arádo*, a plough; and after the consonants, *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *p*, *t*; and another hard, in which two *rr* are used; as in *bárro*, *cárro*, &c. But you must observe,

1. That in the beginning of a word two *rr* must never be used, because then the *r* is always pronounced hard in Portuguese; as in the words *rémo*, *ríco*, *ródá*, &c.

2. When the consonants *l*, *n*, *s*, are before the *r*, either in a single word, or a compound one, this letter must never be doubled, because then its sound is always strong; as in *abalroár*, *enriquecér*, *hónra*, *desregrádo*, *Henríque*, *Israelita*, &c.

3. The *r* after a *b*, is also pronounced hard in compounds with the prepositions *ab*, *ob*, *sub*, and yet is not doubled; as in *abrogár*, *obrepçaõ* *subrepçaõ*,

VII. The *s* is never doubled in the beginning of words, nor after the consonants; therefore you



must write *sarár*, *sabér*, *falsaménte*, *fálsa*, *mânso*, &c.

The *s* is pronounced like *z* between two vowels, in words derived from the Latin, as well as in those that end in *ósa*, and *óso*; as *músa*, *cáso*, *ríso*, *amoróso*, *cuidadóso*, *cása*, &c. You must also observe, that *cosér*, signifies *to sew*, but *cozér* signifies *to boil* or *bake*.

VIII. *Th* are generally used in words derived from the Greek; as *amphitheátro*, *athéista*, *theólogo*, *lethárgo*, *méthodo*, &c.

*Th* is also used in the Portuguese preposition *athé*; though some write it thus, *até*.

IX. When *pt* is found in Latin words, it must be kept in the Portuguese derived from them; as, *ápto*, *inépto*, *óptimo*, &c. from *aptus*, *ineptus*, *optimus*, &c. The same must be observed in regard to *ct*.

X. *Ch* is sounded like *k*, in words derived from the Greek; as, *orchánjo*, *archidúque*, *Chrysóstomo*, *chryól*, *chrisólogo*, *Christóvaõ*, *monarchía*, &c. These words must be written with *ch*, in order to preserve to the eye their etymology.

Note, that *ch* in words that are not derived from the Greek is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shawl*, *shoot*, &c. but as some confound the *ch* with the *x*, and begin with *x* those words that should begin with *ch*, I have thought it necessary to make a collection of them.

#### WORDS BEGINNING WITH

CHA.		
	Chamalóte	Chançonêta
	Chamár	Chanquêta
Chá	Chamaríz	Chantágem
Cháa	Chambaõ	Chantrádo
Cháca	Chamejár	Chântre
Chacína	Chamiça	Chá
Cháço	Chaminé	Chápa
Chacóta	Chamuscár	Chapádo
Chafaríz	Chânça	Chapeádo
Chága	Chancéla	Chapelêta
Chalúpa	Chancelaría	Chapéo
Châma	Chancelér	Chapím

Chapinhár	Chíbo	Chofrádo
Chapúz	Chícharos	Chófre
Charaméla	Chichárro	Chóldabólda
Charamelêiro	Chichélos	Chóque
Chárcó	Chicória	Chorár
Charnéca	Chicóte	Chorrílho
Charnêira	Chífra	Chôro
Charóla	Chifrá	Chovêr
Chárpa	Chífre	Chôupa
Chárro	Chilindraõ	Choupâna
Charrúa	Chilrár	Chôupo, or Chôpo
Chásco	Chimbéo	Chouríco
Chasôna	Chineár	Choutár
Chatím	Chinchêiro	
Cháto	Chinchôro	CHU.
Chavaõ	Chinéla	Chúça
Chavascál	Chiquêiro	Chupamél
Cháve	Chísqa	Chupár
Chaválha	Chispár	Chuchurriár
Chavêta	Chíste	Chûco
Chavínha	Chíta	Chúfa

CHE.

Chêa, or Chéya

Chéfe

Chegár

Cheriár, and its derivatives.

Cherívia

Chérnc.

CHI.

Chiár

Chibárro

CHO.

Chóça

Chóca

Chocalhár

Chocálho

Chocár

Chocarrear

Chocarríce

Chôco

Chócos

Chocoláte

Chumáço

Chumbár

Chúmbo

Churriaõ

Churúme

Chúsma

Chúva

Chúveiro.

CHY.

Chy'pre.

The following words begin with *ce* and not *se*.

Cêa

Ceádo

Ceár

CEB.

Cebóla

Cebolál

Cebolínho

CED.

Cedavím

Cedéla

Cedénho

Cedêr

Cedílho

Cêdo

Cédro

Cédula

CEG.

Céga

Cegár

Cégo

Cegónha

Cegúde

Ceguêira

CEI.

Ceífa

Ceífaõ

Ceíraõ

Ceirínha	Centeál	Cerração
Ceivár.	Centésimo	Cerrár
	Centêyo	Cerralhêiro
	Cênto	Cerrálho
CEL.	Centóculo	Cerrárese
	Centopéa	Cêro
Celáda	Centrá	Cérta
Celebração	Centro	Cérto
Celebrár	Centuplo	Certãa
Célebre	Centúria	Certêza
Céleste	Centuriaõ	Certída
Celestiál	Céo	Certificár
Celestrína		Cérva
Celêusma	CEP.	Cervál
Célga	Cêpa	Cervêja
Célha	Cepílho	Cervilhas
Célho	Cêpo	Cervíz
Celibádo	Céptro	Cerúda
Celibáto		Cerúleo
Celícola	CER.	Cérvo
Celidónia	Cêra	Cerzír.
Célla	Ceraferário	
Cellêiro	Cerbéro	CES.
Celleirêiro	Cêrca	César
Céltas.	Cercádo	Cesaréa
	Cercár	Cêsma
CEM.	Cercadôr	Cesmaría
Cem	Cercadúra	Cesmêiro
Cemitério.	Cérce	Cessaõ
CEN.	Cerceádo	Cessação
Cenáculo	Cerceár	Cessár
Cêno	Cercíllo	Cêsta
Cenóbio	Cêro	Cestínha
Cenobítico	Cerdôso	Cestínho
Cenotáphia	Cérebro	Cestêiro
Cenôura	Ceréijas	Cêsto
Cenráda	Cercijál	Cesúra
Cenrêira	Ceremónia	
Cênso	Ceremoniál	CEV.
Censôr	Ceriêiro	Céva
Censúra	Cérnc	Ceváda
Censurádo	Cernélha	Cevadál
Censurár	Ceról	Cevadêira
Centáuro	Cerôulas	Cevadôuro
Centêna	Cerquêiro	Cevár

Cezaõ

CEZ.

Cezimbar.

N. B. *Cerrar* signifies *to shut*, or *shut up*; but *serrár* signifies *to saw*, to cut timber or other matter with a saw.

The following words must have *ci*, and not *si*, in their beginning.

	CIA.	Cigâno	Cintúra
		Cigárta	Cínza
Ciarse		Cigúde	Cinzêto
Ciática.		Cigurélha	Cinzêiro
	CIB.		
Cíba		CIL.	CIO.
Cibálho		Ciláda	Cío
Cibório.		Cilhas	Ciôso
		Cilhár	Ciôsa.
	CIC.	Cilícia	
Cicatríz		Cilício	CIP.
Cícero		Cilládas	Cipó
Ciciôso.			Cipréste
		CIM.	Cipriano.
	CID.	Címa	
			CIR.
Cidadaõ		Cimálha	Cirânda
Cidadaõs		Címbalo	Cirandágem
Cidáde		Cimêyra	Cirandár
Cidadôa		Cimêto	Círco
Cídra		Cimitárta	Circulaçaõ
Cidráda		Címo.	Circulár
Cidraõ			Círculo
Cidrêira.		CIN.	Circúito
		Cinca	Circumcidár
	CIE.	Cincár	Circumcisáõ
Ciência		Cíncho	Circumferência
		Cínco	Circumspécto
	CIF	Cincoênta	Circumspécçaõ
Cifár		Cingidôuro	Circumstância
Cifra		Cingír	Circumstântes
Cifrár.		Cíngulo	Círrio
		Cinnamômo	Cirurgia
	CIG.	Cinta	Cirurgiaõ
Cigâna		Cintillár	



Cirzár		CÍVEL
	CIT.	Cívil
		Civilidade.
	CIS.	
	Citação	
	Citádo	
Ciscár	Citár	CÍU.
Cisco	Citeriôr	Ciúme
Císma	Cíthara	Ciúmes.
Cismatico	Citharêdo	
Císne	Citrino	CIZ.
Cisterciense		Cizânia
Cisténa	CIV.	Ciziraõ.

XI. No Portuguese word begins with *ço*; but, according to *Madureira*, there are some that begin with *ça*, and *çu*; as *çapáto*, *çapateiro*, *çargáço*, *çúja*, *çugidade*, *çúmo*, *çúrra*, *çurrár*, and some others.

The *ç* is used after *p* in those Portuguese words that have in their Latin root *pt*; as *descripção*, *accepção*, &c. from *descriptio*, *acceptio*, &c.

---

### Of Double Letters.

It is to be generally observed, that the consonants are doubled in those Portuguese words, whose Latin roots have likewise the same double consonants; as *acelerár*, *accênto*, *occidênte*, &c. from *accélero*, *accensus*, *occidens*, &c. *affligír*, *affluência*, *afirmação*, &c. from *affligo*, *affluentia*, *affirmatio*, &c. as will be seen in the following collection;

#### B

Is to be doubled in *abbáde*, *abbaciál*, *abbadia*, *abbadéssa*, *abbreviátura*, *abbreviár*, and some others.

#### C

Is to be doubled in the following words, and some of their derivatives.

Abstracção	Açcentuár	Acceitação
Acção	Accepção	Acceitadôr
Accênto	Acceíta	Acceitár

Accessaõ	Deducçaõ	Occasionár
Accessível	Desjecçaõ	Occáso
Accesso	Desoccupaçãõ	Occidental
Accessório	Desoccupádo	Occidênte
Accidental	Desoccupár	Occíduo
Accidênte	Detracçaõ	Occisãõ
Acceleráda	Dicçaõ	Ocurrêr
Accelerádo	Diccionario	Ocultamênte
Accelerár	Direcçaõ	Ocultádo
Acclamaçãõ	Distracçaõ	Ocultár
Acclamár		Occúlto
Accommodaçãõ	Eccêntrico	Occupaçãõ
Accomodádo	Ecclesiástico	Occupádo
Accommodár	Erecçaõ	Occupár
Accumulaçãõ	Evicçaõ	Ocurrência
Accumuládo	Exacçaõ	Ocurrênte.
Accumulár	Extracçaõ	
Accusaçãõ		Peccádo
Accusádo		Peccadôr
Accusadôr	Fáççaõ	Peccadôra
Accusár	Fícçaõ	Peccânte
Accusativo	Fráççaõ	Peccár
Adstricçaõ		Predicçaõ
Afflicçaõ	Impeccabilidadê	Preoccupár
Attracçaõ.	Impeccável	Producçaõ
	Inaccessível	Projecçaõ
Báccho	Indicçaõ	Profecçaõ
Bôcca	Indúecçaõ	Putrefacçaõ.
Bocçáca	Infécçaõ	
Boccadinho	Infracçaõ	Rarefacçaõ
Bocçádo	Inspeççaõ	Recondacçaõ
Bocçal.	Instrúecçaõ	Refecçaõ
	Intellécçaõ	Refracçaõ
Circumspéççaõ	Interjécçaõ	Resecçaõ
Coacçaõ	Intersécçaõ	Restricçaõ
Cocçaõ	Introducçaõ.	
Collecçaõ		Satisfacçaõ
Constricçaõ	Manuducçaõ	Seccár
Construcçaõ		Sêcco
Contracçaõ	Objecçaõ	Secçaõ
Correcçaõ	Obstrucçaõ	Secçúra
Decocçaõ	Occasiãõ	Sôcco

Soccorrêr	Successível	Transacção
Soccorro	Successôr	Tradacção
Subtracção	Succintamênte	
Succedêr	Succinto	
Successaõ	Súcco	Vácca
Succêssõ	Succôso	Vaccáda
Successívo	Súcubo.	Vaccúm.

## D.

This letter is doubled in the following words :  
*addicção, addicionádo, addicionár, additamênto, additár.*

## F

Is to be doubled in

Affabilidade	Affeminádo	Affirmádamênte
Affável	Affemináirse	Affirmadôr
Affadigádo	Afferrádamênte	Affirmár
Affadigár	Afferrádo	Affistuláirse
Affagádo	Afferrár	Affixár.
Affagár	Afferretoádo	
Affágos	Afferretoár	Afflamáirse
Affamádo	Afferrolhádo	Afflicção
Affamarse	Afferrolhár	Afflícto
Affastádo	Afferventádo	Affligír
Affastár	Afferventár	Affluência
Affazendádo	Affervorádo	
Affazêirse.	Affervorár.	
		Affocinhár
Affeádo	Affiádo	Affogádo
Affeár	Affiár	Affogadôr
Affeamênto	Affidalgádo	Affogár
Affectádamênte	Affidalgáirse	Affogamênto
Affectádo	Affigurádo	Affogeadó
Affectár	Affigurár	Affogueár
Affécto	Affilháda	Afforádo
Affectuôso	Affiladôr	Afforadôr
Affeicção	Affilár	Afforár
Affeicçãoádo	Affinádo	Afforamênto
Affeicçãoár	Affinár	Afformentár
Affeite	Affincádo	Afformoseádo
Affeitár	Affincár	Afformoseár.

Affoutádo	Affugentár.	Diffusamênte
Affoutár	Affumádo	Diffúso
Affoutêza	Affumár	Effectivamênte
Affôuto.	Affundádo	Effectívo
	Affundárse	Effêito
	Affundírse	Effei tuár
Affracár	Affuzillár.	Efficazmênte
Afframengádo		Efficácia
Affreguesádo		Efficáz
Affreguesárse	Diffamádo	Efficiênte
Affrônta	Diffamár	Effígie
Affrontádo	Differênça	
Affrontamênto	Differençar	
Affrontár	Differenças	Offendér
Affrontósamênte	Differênte	Offerecér
Affrontôso	Differêntemênte	Offuscár.
Affroxádamênte	Diffícil	
Affroxádo	Difficuldáde.	
Affroxar.	Difficultár	Suffocár
	Difficultósamênte	Suffrágio, <i>and some</i>
	Difficultôso	<i>others</i>
Affugentádo	Diffusaõ	

G.

This letter is to be doubled in

Aggravánte	Aggressór	Exaggerár
Aggravár	Exaggeraçãõ	Suggestír
Aggravádo	Exaggeradór	Suggestaõ
Aggrávo	Exaggerádo	Suggestído.

L.

Is to be doubled in

Aballádo	Acafelladúra	Allegaçaõ
Aballadôr	Acafellár	Allegádo
Aballár	Acallentádo	Allegár
Abálla	Acallentár	Allegória
Aballisádo	Acapelládo.	Allegórico
Abillisadôr		Allegorisár
Aballisár.		Allelúia
	Afilládo	Alliviár
	Afilladôr	Allucinaçaõ
Acafelladôr	Afillár.	Allucinár



Alludír	Bacelláda	Cavallêiro
Allumiár	Bacêllo	Caválo.
Allusaõ.	Barbélla	
	Barrélla.	
		Cebõlla
Amantelládo		Cebollál
Amarélllo	Bélla	Cebollínho
Amarellecêrse	Béllamênte	Chancellér
Amerellidaõ	Bélllo	Chancelloría
Amolládo	Bellêza	Célla
Amollár	Belleguím	Cellêiro.
Amollecêr	Béllico	
Amollecído	Bellicôso	Clavellína
Amollentár	Bellígero	
Ampõlla.	Belluino.	
		Codicillo
		Cólla
Annulçaõ	Búlla	Colládo
Annullár.	Bullário.	Collár
		Collêira
		Colláçaõ
Appellaçaõ	Calliope	Collaterál
Appellánte	Camillo	Colléçaõ
Appellár	Cavillaçaõ	Collécta
Appellidár	Cavillósamênte	Collectivo
Appellído.	Caballína	Collectôr
	Cadélla	Colléga
	Cadellínha	Collegiáda
Aquella	Cálo	Collegiál
Aquêlle	Camartélllo	Collégio
Aquellôutro	Cambadélla	Colligár
Aquillo	Cancélla	Colligír
	Capélla	Collýrio
	Capellaõ	Cóllo
Arméllas	Capelláda	Collocaçaõ
Arrepelládo	Capellanía	Collocár
Arrepellaõ	Capêllo	Collóquio
Arrepellár	Capillár	
	Castélla	
	Castélllo	Compellír
Atropelládo	Casúlllo	Compostélla
Atropellár.	Casúlla	Constellaça
	Caválla	Corrollário
	Cavallaría	Covêllo

Courélla	Encelleirár.	Gabélla Galládo Galladúra Gallár Gallégo Gállia Gallicádo Gallicár Gállico Gallínha Gallinháço Gallinhêira Gallinhêiro Gallinhôla Galliópoli Gallióta Gallíza Gállo Gamélla Gazélla.
Délla Déllas Dêlle Dêlles Degolládo Degollaçáõ Degollár Degolladóuro.	Equipollência Equipollênte.  Escabelládo Escabéllo Escudélla Escudellaõ Estillaçaõ Estilládo Estillár Estillicídio Estrélla Estrelládo.	
Distillaçáõ Distilladó Distillár.		
Donzélla.	Excellência Excellênte	
Duéllo.	Expellír.	
Ebulliçaõ.	Fálla Fallácha Fallácia Falladó Fallár Fallecêr Fallecido Fallência Fallído.	Gólla  Hellespônto Hendecasyllabo Hollânda Hypállage.
E'lla E'llas E'lle E'lles Elléboro Ellipse Ellíptico.		Janélla Janellêira Janellínha Jarmélllo.
Emolliênte Emollír.	Ferdizélllo.	
Enalláge Encapelládo Encapellár Encastelládo Encastellár	Flagellánte Flagéllo.  Fólle Follículo Fontélllo.	Illaçaõ Illaqueár. Illativo Illegítimo Illéso Illíçar Illiciadó

Illicitamente	Mirandélla	Pélle
Ilícito	Miscellânia	Pellesínha
Illocável	Mólle,	Pellíca
Illudido	Mollêira	Pellicula
Illudír	Mollêza	Panélla
Iluminação	Mollice	Pimpinélla
Iluminádo	Mollidaõ	Phíllis
Iluminár	Mollificânte	Pollegáda
Iluminatívo	Mollificár	Pollegár
Illusaõ	Mollinár	Pollez
Illúso	Monosyllabo.	Polluçaõ
Ilustraçaõ		Pollúto
Ilustrár	Nélla	Polysyllabo
Illústre	Néllas	Portacóllo
Illustríssimo	Nêlle	Portélla
Illy'rio	Nêlles	Postílla
Imbélla	Nigélla	Pousafólles
Impellír	Novélla	Prunélla
Incapilláto	Novelleiro	Pulmélla
Infallível	Núlla	Pupílla
Inintelligível	Nullidáde	Pupílllo
Intervállo.	Núllo	Pusillanimidáde
	Nuzellos.	Pusillánime.
Libélllo		
Lordélllo		
Lousélla.	Odivéllas	Quartélla.
	Ollaría	
	Ollêiro	
	Ouguélla.	
Marcélla		Rabadélla
Marcellína		Rebelládo
Marcélllo		Rebellaõ
Martelláda	Pálla	Rebellárse
Martellár	Palládio	Rebelliaõ
Martélllo	Pallante	Rélla
Martellínho	Pállas	Rodofólle
Malfallânte	Palliádo	Rodopélllo
Mallográdo	Palliár	Rosélla
Mamillár	Pallidêz	Ruélla.
Medúlla	Pállido	
Mellíftuo	Pállio	Sélla
Mélllo	Paradélla	Selládo
Metállico	Paralláxe	Selladór
Millenário	Parallélo	Sellagaõ
Millésimo	Paraléllográmo	Sellár

Selléiro	Tôlla	Vassálo
Sélo	Tollíce	
Sentinélla	Tôllo	
Siby'lla	Torcicóllo	Velleidáde
Sigílo	Tranquillidáde	Vellicação
Sigilládo	Tranquílo	Vellicár
Sobrepellíz	Trélla	Vélllo
Sugillação	Trisy'llabo	Vellôso
Sy'llaba	Tunicélla	Vellúdo
Syllabático	Túllio	Verdesélla
Syllábico		
Syllogisár	Vacillação	Vílla
Syllogísmo.	Vacillánte	Villanía
	Vacillár	Villaãmênte
Tabélla	Válla	Villaõ
Tabelliaõ	Valládo	Villaõ
Tabellioa	Vallár	Vitélla
Titillação	Válle	Vitellíno.
Titillár	Vassallágem	

N. B. *Annular* signifies to *annul*; but *annular* is an adjective, and signifies *annular*, or in the form of a ring. *L* is doubled by some in the words *pelo*, *pela*, (for) thus *péllo* *pélla*.

## M

Is to be doubled in

Accommodár	Commúm	Emmudecêr
Commemoração	Commungár	Engommár
Comménda	Communicár	Epigrámma
Commensurár	Comunidade	Flámma
Commentár	Commutár	Flammánte
Commerciár	Consummár	Flámmula
Commettár	Desaccommodár	Gêmma
Comminação	Descómmodo	Gômma
Commiseração	Dilêmma	Grammática
Commissaõ	Emmadeirár	Immaculáda
Commissário	Emmadeixár	Immanênte
Commoção	Emmagrecêr	Immarcessível
Cómmodo	Emmanquecêr	Immateriál
Commovêr	Emmassár	Immatúro



Immediátamênte	Immortificádo	Mâmma
Immemorável	Immóvel	Mammár
Immênso	Immudável	Recommendár
Immensurável	Immúndo	Sômma
Immobilidadê	Immunidadê	Sommár
Immoderádámênte	Immutável	Súmma
Immodêsto	Incómodo	Summário
Immódico	Incommunicável	Summidáde
Immolar	Incommutável	Symmetría, and some
Immortalisár	Inflammár	others

N. B. *M*, and not *n*, is always made use of before *b*, *m*, *p*.

## N

Is likewise doubled in several verbs compounded with *an*, *en*, *in*, *con*, as, *annelár*, *annêxa*, *annaõ*, *annáta*, *annél*, *A'nná*, *ánno*, *annulár*, *connêxaõ*, *connêxo*, *depennár*, *empennár*, *ennastrár*, *ennegrecêr*, *innáto*, *innavegável*, *innocência*, *manná*, *Mariánna*, *pánno*, *pénna*, when it signifies a pen, *tyránno*, and some others.

## P.

This letter is to be doubled in words beginning with *p* compounded with the Latin prepositions *ad*, *ob*, *sub*; as, *apparáto apparecêr*, *oppór*, *opprimír sup-pór*, *Philippe*, *póppa*, &c.

N. B. *Páppa* signifies *pap*, or a sort of spoon-meat for children; but *pápa* signifies *the Pope*.

## R.

The *r* is doubled in such words as are strongly pronounced in the middle; as *guérra*, *arrancár ar-redár arrimár*, *arruinár*, *carregár*, *cárro*, &c.

## S.

The *s* is to be doubled in the Portuguese superlatives, because it is doubled in the Latin roots; it is also doubled in the following words:

Abbadêssa	Assaltár	Nósso
Condêssa	Asséyo	Nóssa
Assár	Assessôr	E'ssa
Assanhár	Assím	E'sse
Assegurár	Assistír	I'sso
Assignár	Assombrár	O'sso
Assolár	Assoprár	Passéár
Accêso	Assobiár	Passár
Aggressôr	Assustár	Remêssa
Appressár	Atravessár	Ingrêso, and many
Amassár	Necessitár	others.
Arremessár	Nísso	

T

*T* is doubled in the following words and their derivatives :

Attemperár	Attribuír	Permittír
Attênçãõ	Atribúto	Promettêr
Attendêr	Attriçãõ	Remettêr
Attentár	Attríto	Remettír
Attenuaçãõ	Commettêr	Sétta
Attenuár	Demittír	Settênta
Attónito	Enfittár	Settecêntos
Attracçãõ	Fítta	Transmittír
Attractívo	Intrommettêr	
Attrahír	Omittír	

OF THE QUANTITY OF SYLLABLES AND THEIR SOUND.

*Of Words that make their Penultima in a.*

N. B. Observe what we have said above concerning the accents.

All words ending in *ábo, ába, áco, áca, úcho, ácha, áço, áça, ádo, áda, áfo, áfa, ágo, ágã, ágem, ágre, álho, álha, álo, ála*, have the penultimas long ; as, *diábo, mangábo, macáco macáca, caváca, mingícho, garnácha, madráço, linháça, amádo, punháda* (except *relámpago, antropéfago, lévado*, and *cágado*, which are short in the penultima), *abáfo, abáfa, saramágo, adága* (except *stómago*, or *estómago, ámago, amáraco*, which

are short), *trabalho, toálha, badálo* (except *anómalo, búfalo, escándalo*, which are short), *tanchágem, vinágre*.

Words ending in *âno, âma, ânho, ânha, âno, âna*, have their penultimas long; as, *escâmo, courâma, castânho, arânha, engâno, pestâna*; except *pâmpano, tympano, bígamo*.

Words ending in *ápo, ápa, áque, áro, ára*, have their penultimas long; as, *guardanápo, solápa, basbáque, empáro, seára*; except *cântaro, púcaro, láparo, báfaro, lúparo, pífaro, pícaro, cámera, támara, pássaro, Lázaro, bárbaro, cócaras, &c.*

Words ending in *árro, árra, áto, áta, ávo, áva, áxo, ávas*, make the penultima long: as, *bizárro, bizárra, biscáto, pataráta, escrávo, escráva* (except *cóncava*, and *bisavó*), *cartáxo, tarráxa*.

*Of Words that make their Penultima in e.*

All words ending in *ébo, éba, édo, éda, éfu*, have their penultima long; as, *mancébo, mancéba, azédo, azéda, sanéfa*.

Words ending in *éfe* are long; as, *magaréfe*: as well as those ending in *éco, éca, éço, éça*; as *bonéco, bonéca, cabéço, cabéça*.

Words ending in *égo, éga*, are long; as, *morcégo, socégo, relégo, entréga, alléga*; except *cónego, trátego, córrego, sófrego, pécego, fólego, bútega, cócegas*.

Words ending in *éjo, éja, élo, éla*, are long; as, *caranguéjo, bocéjo, igréja, Alentéjo, envéja, martélo, queréla*.

Words ending in *émo, éma, éno, éna*, are long; as, *suprémo, postéma, acéno, açucéna*; except *apózema*.

N. B. the penultima is short in the word *íngreme*.

Words ending in *épo, épa, épe, éque, éro, éra*, are long; as, *decépo, carépa, julépe, moléque, sévero, sévera, tempéro* (when a noun): and *tempéro* (when a verb), except *áspero, próspero*.

Words ending in *éso, ésa, ézo, éza, éto, éta, éte, évo, éva, éve*, are long; as, *acéso, acésa, desprézo,*

*grandêza* and *desprêso* (when a verb) *entremêto*, *galhêta*, *ramalhête*, *bofête*, *atrêvo*, *atrêva*, *atrêve*.

*Of Words that make their Penultima in i.*

Words ending in *ibo*, *iba*, *ibe*, *icho*, *icha*, *iche*, *ico*, *ica*, *iço*, *iça*, *ice*, *ido*, *ida*, *ifo*, *ifa*, *ife*, have the penultima long; as, *estribo*, *arríba*, *arríbe*, *esguicho*, *esguícha*, *azevíche*, *panico* (a sort of stuff), *botíca*; except *mecánico*, *ecuménico*, *círtico*, *político*, *pánico*, (panic), and some others borrowed from the Greek and Latin. In *Iço*, *iça*, &c. as, *roliço*, *preguíça*, *velhíce*, *marído*, *medída*; except *húmido*, *pállido*, *hórrido*, and some others derived from the Latin. In *ifo*, *ifa*, &c. as *borrífo*, *alcatífa*, *patífe*.

Words ending in *ígo* and *íga*, are long; as, *amígo*, *amíga*, except *pródigo*, *pródiga*.

Words ending in *íjo*, and *íja*, are long; as, *afflíjo*, *artemíja*.

Words ending in *ílho*, *ílha*, are long; as, *atílho*, *beatílha*. Others ending in *ílo*, *íla*, as, *gorgomílo*, *perfíla*, *desfíla*.

Words ending in *ímo*, *íma*, have the penultima long; as, *optímo*, *cadímo*, *esgríma*, *lastíma* (when a verb); except *lástima* (when a noun), *Jerónimo*, *pés-símo*, and all the superlatives, *anónimo*, and some others.

Words ending in *ínho*, *ínha*, *íno*, *ína*, *ípo*, *ípa*, *ípe*, have the penultima long; as, *constípo*, *constípa*, *Eurípo*, *acipípe*. Others in *íquo* *íqua*, *íque*, *íro*, *íra*, *íre*; as, *iníquo*, *iníqua*, *lambíque*, *retíro*, *mentíra*, *suspire*.

Words ending in *iso*, *isa*, *izo*, *iza*, *ito*, *íta* *ivo*, *íva*, *ixo*, *íxa*, are long in the penultima; as, *avíso*, *camísa*, *juízo*, *ajuíza*, *altívo*, *altíva*, *prolíxo*, *prolíxa*, *apíto*, *cabríto*; except *púlpito*, *vómito*, *decrépito*, *espírito*, *débito*, and some others.

*Rules for such words as make their penultima in o.*

Words ending in *óbo*, *óba*, *óbe*, *óbra*, *óbro*, *óbre*,



have their penultima long ; as, *lôbo, lôba, arrôba, arrôbe, glôbo, alcôva, ôbro, ôbra, côbre, côbro, dô-bro.*

Words ending in *ôcho, ôcha, ôco, ôca, ôço, ôça, ôdo, ôda, ôde, ôso, ôsa, ôse*, have the penultima long ; as, *agarrôcho, garrôcha, carôcha, biôco*, except *alliloco*) *massarôca, minhôca, almôço, môça* (a girl), *môça*, or *môssa* (a notch), *almôço* (when a verb), *carrôça, lôdo, bôda, bôde, pôde* (the third person singular of the present indicative of the verb *podér*), *pôde* (the third person singular of the preterperfect definite of the same verb), *galthôfa, bôfe.*

Words ending in *ôfro, ôfra, ôfre*, are long ; as, *alcaxôfra, côfre, enxôfre.*

Words ending in *ôgo, ôga, ôgue* are long ; as, *af-fôgo, affôga, affôgue, desafôgo* when a verb, and *desafôgo*, when a noun.

Words ending in *ôjo, ôja*, have the penultima long ; as, *despôjo*, when a verb, *nôjo, despôjo*, when a noun.

Words ending in *ôlo, ôla, ôle*, are long ; as, *viôla, gallinhôla, bôla, engôle, miôlo, bôlo, rebôlo, tôlo, cebôla* ; except *pérola, frívolo, benévolo, malévolô.*

Words ending in *ômo, ôma, ôme*, have the penultima long ; as, *mordômo, redôma, fôme*, except *Thomé.*

Words ending in *ônho, ônha, ôno, ôna*, have the penultima long ; as, *bisônho, risônha, dôno, atafôna, dôna* ; except *altísono*, and *unísono.*

Words ending in *ôpla, ôpo, ôpa, ôpe, ôpro, ôpra, ôpre, ôque*, have the penultima long ; as, *manôpla, tôpo, tôpa, galôpe, assôpro*, when a verb, *assôpra, assôpre, assôpro*, when a noun, *botôque.*

Words ending in *ôro, ôra, ôre*, are long in the penultima ; as, *penhôro, penhôra, penhôre, chôro*, when a noun ; *chôro* when a verb ; except *bácoro, rémora, pôlvora, árvore.*

Words ending in *ôrro, ôrra*, are long ; as, *soc-côrro, môrro, cachorra* ; and some others ending in *ôso, ôse, ôsa, ôzo, ôzó*, as, *primorôso, primorôsa, industriôso, industriôsa, ciôzo, ciôza, descôse.*

Words ending in *oto, óta, óte*, have their penultima long ; as, *góto, góta, bóta, devóto, fróta, capóte, garróte*.

Words ending in *ovo, óva, óve*, are long in the penultima ; as, *óvo, concóva, apróve*.

Words ending in *oxo, óxa*, are long in the penultima ; as, *róxo, róxa, pintarróxo*.

*Rules for such Words as make their Penultima in u.*

Words ending in *úbo, úba, úbro, úbra, úcho, úcha, úco, úca, úço, úça*, make the penultima long ; as, *adúbo, adúba* ; except *súcubo,íncubo*, and some others ; *incúbro, incúbra, machúcho, embúcha, cadúco, cadúca, rebúço, embúça*.

Words ending in *údo, úda, úde, úfo, úfa, úfe, úgo, úga, újo, úja*, have the penultima long ; as, *felpúdo, felpúda, almúde, pantúfo, adúfa, adúfe, sanguesúga, caramújo, azambúja*.

Words ending in *úlho, úlha, úlhe, úlo, úla, úle, úmo, úma, úme, únho, únha, únhe* ; as, *bagúlho, borbúlha, entúlhe, engúlo, engúla, bulebúle* ; except *vocábulo, vestibulo, ángulo, régulo, opúsculo, trémulo, patíbulo, thiríbulo*, and some others ; *consúmo, consúma, cardúme, testemúnho, testemúnha, empúnhe*.

Words ending in *úno, úna, úne, úpo, úpa, úpe, úque, úro, úra, úre*, are long in the penultima ; as, *desúno, fortuna, desúne, apúpo, apúpa, apúpe, estúque, madúro, madúra, apúre*.

Words ending in *úso, úsa, úse, úzo, úza, úze, úto, úta, úte, úvo, úva, úve*, have the penultima long ; as, *parafúso, parafúsa, parafúse, redúzo, redúza, redúze, condúto, labúta, enxúta, labúte* ; except *cómputo* when a noun ; *repúvo, empúva, empúve* ; and some others ending in *úvo, úva, úve* ; as, *viúvo, viúva, enviúve*.

N. B. When the penultima is immediately followed by another vowel, observe that,

A before e must be accented with the acute ac-

cent, and pronounced accordingly ; as, *sáe*, *cáe* : but before *i* it has no accent.

*A* before *o* must be pronounced and accented thus *bacalháo* ; but when the relative *o* is added to the third person singular of the present indicative, then *a* has no accent ; as, *áma-o*.

*E* before *a* is accented thus, *baléa* ; and sometimes with the acute, as *assembléa*, *idéa*, and some others ; and sometimes has no accent at all, as in *gávea*, *fémea*, and some others.

*E* before *o* is exceedingly sonorous and long, as in *chapéo*, *coruchéo* ; except *páteo*, *férreo*, *plúmbeo*, *áureo*, *argénteo*.

*I* before *a*, *e*, *o*, is long ; as, *dizía*, *fazía*, *almo-tolia* ; except such as are borrowed from the Latin ; as, *néscia*, *comédia*, *féria*, *sciência*, *prudência*, and *sábía* when an adjective, &c. *I* before *o* and *e*, is long ; as, *desvíe*, *desvío* ; except *vício* and some others.

*O* before *a* is accented thus, *coróa*, *tóa*, *móa*, *esmóa*.

*O* before *e* is long in the words *dóe*, *móe*, *róe*, and in the verb *sóe* when it signifies *to be wont* ; but when it signifies *to sound*, it is to be accented thus, *sóe*.

*U* before *a* is long ; as, *rúa*, *charrúa* ; except *melliflua*, *ínsua*.

*U* before *e* and *o* is long ; as, *conclúo*, *recúo*, *con-clúe*, *recúe* ; except *mellifluo*, and some others derived from the Latin.

## CHAPTER IX.

*Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin*

THE Portuguese retains so great an affinity to the Latin, that several words of the latter are preserved in the former, by only allowing a small alteration; as may easily be seen in the following observations:

1. The *o* of the Latin words is preserved in some Portuguese ones; some Latin words are entirely preserved in the Portuguese; as, *hóspede, córda, pórtá, &c.*

2. The *u* is changed into *o*; as, *fórca, golóso, estópa, mósca, amámos, &c.* from *furca, gulosus, stupa, musca, amamus, &c.*

3. The diphthong, *au*, is frequently changed into *ou*; as, *louvável, óuro, cóuve, móuro, &c.* from *laudabilis, aurum, caulis, maurus, &c.*

4. The *e* is preserved in several Portuguese words; as, *cérto, sérvo, érva, térra, férro, &c.* from *certus, servus, herba, terra, ferrum, &c.*

5. The *e* takes the place of *i*; as, *enférmo, séco, &c.* from *infirmus, sicus, &c.*; and the *i* is sometimes preserved, as in *indígnó, benígno, &c.* from *indignus, benignus, &c.*

6. The *b* is also changed into *v*; as, *árvore, duvidár, devér, estáva, amáva, &c.* from *arbor, dubitare, debere, stabat, amabat, &c.*

7. The *c* is very often changed into *g*; as, *dígo, agúdo, amígo, migálha, &c.* from *dico, acutus, amicus, amica, &c.*

8. *Cl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chamár, chève, &c.* from *clamare, clavis, &c.*

9. When the *c* in Latin is followed by *t*, this



letter is changed into *ç*; as, *acçaõ, dicçaõ, &c.* from *actio, dictio, &c.*; and sometimes the *e* before *t* is changed into *i*; as, *fêito, léito, nõite, léite, péito, &c.* from *factus, lectum, nocte, lacte, pectus, &c.* Finally, both the *c* and *t* are preserved in a great number of words; as, *ácto, afflicto, distincto, &c.* from *actus, afflictus, distinctus, &c.*

10. The *d* is often lost; as, *roér, excluír, ráio, &c.* from *rodere, excludere, radius, &c.*

11. The *f* is frequently preserved; as in *filho, fazér, fervór, formóso, &c.* from *filius, facere, fervor, formosus, &c.*

12. The *g* is changed into *i*; as, *réino, &c.* from *regnum*. Sometimes it is quite lost, as in *dédo, frio, sétta, sinál, bainha, &c.* from *digitus, frigus, sagitta, signum, vagina, &c.*

13. The *h* is placed instead of the *l*; as, *álho, &c.* from *allium*. Sometimes it is added; as, *artílho, alhéo, fólha, consélho, &c.* from *articulus, alienus, folium, consilium, &c.*

14. The *n* is sometimes added, and sometimes taken off; as, *máncha, ílha, Salitre, espóso, &c.* from *macula, insula, sal nitrum, sponsus, &c.*

15. The *mn* is preserved by many Portuguese writers in the words *alúmno, calúmnia, colúmna, damno, solémne, sómno, &c.* from *alumnus, calumnia, columna, damnum, &c.*

16. The double *nn* of the Latin is preserved in several words; as in *ánno, innocéncia, innócuo, innavégável, innovár, connéxo, &c.* from *annus, innocentia, innocuus, innavigabilis, innovare, connexus, &c.*

17. The *gn* and *gm* are preserved in several Portuguese words; as in *augméto, fragméto, enígma, benígno, digno, indígno, ignomínia, &c.* from *augmentum, fragmentum, ænigma, benignus, dignus, &c.*

18. The *e* and the *i* after *n* are sometimes changed into *h*; as in *aránha, vínha, Hespánha, castánha, &c.* from *aranea, vinea, Hispania, castanea, &c.*

19. The *p* is changed into *b*; as in *cábra*, *cabéllo*, *cabéça*, &c. from *capra*, *capillus*, *caput*, &c. Sometimes *pl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chága*, *chóro*, *cháva*, &c. from *plaga*, *ploro*, *pluvia*, &c.

20. The *q* is changed into *g*; as, *iguál*, *alguém*, *antigo*, *ágoa*, *águia*, &c. from *equus*, *aliquis*, *antiquus*, *aqua*, *aquila*, &c.

21. The *t* is likewise changed into *d*; as, *ca déa*, *fádo*, *ládo*, *nadár*, *piédáde*, &c. from *catena*, *fatum*, *latus*, *natare*, *pietas*, &c. The *ti* of the Latin is sometimes changed into *ça*, and sometimes into *ci*; as in *gráça*, *cléméncia*, *paciéncia*, &c. from *gratía*, *clementia*, *patientia*, &c.

*N. B.* All these alterations are not general in all the words, but are used in several; and on some occasions the Latin word is preserved without any mutilation or variation. And as it would be endless to pretend to shew all the affinity between the Portuguese and the Latin, I shall only observe, that they sometimes add, and sometimes take off letters from the Latin roots; as in *fácil*, *débil*, *finál*, *materiál*, *estrépito*, *estómago*, *expectadór*, *especulár*, &c. from *facilis*, *debilis*, *finalis*, *strepitus*, *spectator*, &c.

---



---

P O R T U G U E S E  
G R A M M A R.

---

P A R T   I I I .

C O N T A I N I N G

- I. *The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language.*  
 II. *Such Words as are most used in Discourse.*  
 III. *A Collection of the choicest Portuguese Proverbs.*  
 IV. *Familiar Dialogues.*
- 

*The different Significations of andár, to go.*

<i>ANDÁ'R a pé</i>	To go on foot
<i>Andár a caválla</i>	To ride on horseback
<i>Andár pélla pósta</i>	To ride, or go post
<i>Andár em cóche</i>	To ride in a coach
<i>Andár á véla</i>	To sail
<i>Andár pélla bolina</i>	To sail with a side wind
<i>Andár pára diánte</i>	To go forward
<i>Andár para trás</i>	To go backward
<i>Andár a trás de alguém</i>	To go behind, or after one, also to follow, to press, to solicit a person
<i>Andár ás apalpadéllas</i>	To grope along, to grope, or feel one's way
<i>Andár com tempo</i>	To go with the times

<i>Andár pejáda</i>	To be with child, or big with child
<i>Andár sahída</i>	(speaking of a bitch) To be proud
<i>Andár perdido</i>	To go astray
<i>Andár de pé</i>	To be sickish, but not bedrid
<i>Andár com hõnra</i>	To act like an honest man
<i>A'nda</i>	Go
<i>A'nda para diánte</i>	Go on
<i>Andár de esguélha</i>	To go sideling
<i>Andár de mal para peór</i>	To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire
<i>Andár de réixa com alguém</i>	To bear one a grudge, to have a spleen against him, to owe him a spite
<i>Com o andár do tẽmpo</i>	At long run
<i>Andár de galõpe</i>	To gallop
<i>Andár em cõrpo</i>	To be in cuerpo, or to be without the upper coat or cloak, so as to discover the true shape of the cuerpo or body
<i>A'nda o múnido as avéssas</i>	The world is come about
<i>Andár espalhados</i>	To lie about
<i>Andár TRABALHÁndo nalguma óbra</i>	To be about some piece of work
<i>Andár de gátinhas</i>	To go crawling
<i>Andár de cócoras</i>	To go on one's breech
<i>Andár dizéndo</i>	To publish or report

*The different Significations of dar and dar-se.*

<i>Dar</i>	To give, to strike
<i>Dar a entendér</i>	To make one believe
<i>Dar fé</i>	To credit, to believe, also to perceive, to descry, to take notice, to smell out
<i>Dar or vendér fiádo</i>	To sell upon credit
<i>Dar á luz</i>	To publish
<i>Dar senhoria</i>	To my-lord a man
<i>Dar tu, or fallár a alguém por tu</i>	To thee and thou one
<i>Dar-se, a partido, or lançar-se no partido de alguém</i>	To side with one, to be for him



<i>Dár palavra</i>	To promise
<i>Dar húma sálva</i>	To give a volley of shot, or to make a discharge of guns in honour of some persons of quality
<i>Dar fiador</i>	To bail
<i>Dar princípio, or fim</i>	To begin, or end
<i>Dar cónta</i>	To give an account
<i>Dar-se ao estudo</i>	To apply one's self to study
<i>Dar em que fallár</i>	To make one speak, to give an occasion to be talked of
<i>Dar entrada</i>	To give access to
<i>Dar causa</i>	To give cause
<i>Dar que em entender</i>	To vex one sadly, to trou- ble one
<i>Dar de beber</i>	To give drink
<i>Dar côuces</i>	To kick
<i>Dar hum coscorrão</i>	To give a box on the ear
<i>Dar pancádas</i>	To beat with a cudgel
<i>Dar múrros</i>	To cuff
<i>Dar murrádas</i>	To butt, as rams do
<i>Dar o fáro a alguém de al- gúma côusa</i>	To smell out a matter
<i>Dar húma estocáda</i>	To give a thrust
<i>Dar os bons días</i>	To bid one good-morrow
<i>Dar a guardár</i>	To give in keeping
<i>Dar á côsta</i>	To run a-ground
<i>Dar com alguém</i>	To meet with one by chance, to light upon a person
<i>Dar em alguém</i>	To strike one, also to ac- cuse one
<i>Dar cartas</i>	To deal, or give the cards
<i>Dar sobre o inimigo</i>	To fall upon the enemy
<i>Dar os parabéns</i>	To congratulate
<i>Dar os parabéns a alguém da súa chegáda</i>	To bid one welcome
<i>Dar a mão ajudádo</i>	To give a helping hand
<i>Dar a escolhér</i>	To let one take his choice
<i>Dar enfádo a alguém</i>	To molest one
<i>Dar no álvo</i>	To hit the mark
<i>Dar as côstas</i>	To run away, to betake one's self to flight
<i>Dar parte de hum negócio</i>	To impart a business

<i>Dar pélllo amór de Déos</i>	To give for God's sake
<i>Dar húma súrra</i>	To beat one soundly
<i>Dar húma vólta em redóndo</i>	To walk a turn
<i>Dar húma vista de ólhos</i>	To cast an eye on
<i>Dar alcánce ao que se de- zéja</i>	To obtain, or compass one's wish
<i>Dar suspiros</i>	To sigh
<i>Dar ouvidos</i>	To give hearing
<i>Dar em rósto</i>	To upbraid, to cast in the teeth
<i>Dá cá</i>	Give hither
<i>Déu-me húma dór</i>	I was taken with a pain
<i>Dar que fazer a alguém, or occupár álguém</i>	To employ one, to set him at work, to set him upon some business
<i>Dar hóras</i>	To strike
<i>O relógio dá hóras</i>	The clock strikes
<i>Dar a álma a Déos</i>	To give up the ghost, to die
<i>Dar comsigo em algúma parte</i>	To cast one's self into a place, or to go to a place
<i>Dar leite</i>	To suckle
<i>Dar garróte</i>	To strangle
<i>Dar vózes</i>	To cry out, to bawl
<i>O sol dá nos ólhos</i>	The sun shines in one's eyes
<i>Dar razóens</i>	To debate, or contend
<i>Dar comsigo no chaõ</i>	To fall upon the ground
<i>Dar frúto</i>	To bear fruit
<i>Dar as maõs</i>	To shake hands
<i>Dar com a pórtá na cára de alguém</i>	To shut the door upon one
<i>Dar com a pórtá nos ólhos a algúma cósa (me- taph.)</i>	To slight, to despise a thing
<i>Dar préssa</i>	To press, or hasten
<i>E'sta travéssa vai dar á rúa larga</i>	This lane strikes, or goes into the broad street
<i>Déi no pensaméto de, &amp;c.</i>	It came into my head to, &c.
<i>Naõ sabe aónde ha de dar com a cabéça</i>	He does not know which way to turn himself
<i>I'sto vos ha de dar na cabéça</i>	The mischief will light upon your own head
<i>Dar com a cabéça péllas parédes</i>	To beat one's head against the wall

<i>Dar em tódos, or dizér mal de tódos</i>	To have a satirical virulent tongue, to spare nobody
<i>Dar bóa cónta de si</i>	To give a good account of himself, to behave cleverly
<i>Dar á cónta</i>	To pay an account
<i>E'u daréi cónta disso</i>	I'll be answerable for it
<i>E'lle déu em ir áquélle lugar</i>	He began to use that place
<i>Dar em dróga</i>	To grow a mere drug
<i>Dar em ridicularías</i>	To grow, or become ridicu- lous
<i>Dar húma figa a alguém</i>	To flirt at one, to fig, to give the fico
<i>Dar-se por culpádo</i>	To acknowledge one's self guilty
<i>De nenhúma sorte vos déis por entendído, or achádo</i>	Take no notice of any thing
<i>Dar-se por aggravádo</i>	To make a shew of anger
<i>Dar-se por satisféito</i>	To rest satisfied
<i>Dar-se por vencido</i>	To submit, to surrender one's self a prisoner, or to yield a point
<i>Dar-se por desentendído</i>	To feign one's self ignorant, to take no notice of any thing, to make as if one saw or knew not
<i>Quándo se dér a occasiãõ</i>	When occasion shall require it
<i>Dar-se préssa</i>	To be in haste, to make haste
<i>Elle déu-se a tóda a sórte de vícios</i>	He gave himself over to all manner of vices
<i>Naõ se me dá disso</i>	I mind it not
<i>Que se vos da a vós disso?</i>	What have you to do with it?
<i>Póuco se me dá</i>	I care but little
<i>Naõ se lhe dá morré</i>	He does not fear death
<i>E'lles daõ-se múito bem</i>	They agree mighty well to- gether
<i>E'sta cárne naõ se dá bem comigo</i>	This meat does not agree with me

*Of the different Significations of the Verb estár.*

We use the verb *estár* to make an action of repose, by putting the verb that follows in the gerund; as, *élle está escrevêdo*, he is writing.

*Estár* has several other significations; as,

<i>Estár em pé</i>	To stand upright
<i>Estár bem, or mal</i>	To be well, or ill
<i>Estár asseniádo</i>	To be sitting
<i>Estár para sahír, para fóra</i>	To be just going out
<i>Estár com o sentido em França, or estár com o sentido em outra parte</i>	To have one's wits a wool-gathering
<i>Está muito bem</i>	It is well, it is very well
<i>Está para chovér</i>	It is going to rain
<i>Estár para cahír</i>	To be ready to fall
<i>Estár para morré</i>	To be like to die
<i>Estár em dúvida</i>	To be in doubt
<i>Estarémos a vér.</i>	We will expect the issue
<i>Estár com huma mão sóbre a outra</i>	To stand idle.
<i>Estár em casa</i>	To stay at home
<i>Aquilo naõ me está bem</i>	That does not become me well
<i>Estár dormíndo</i>	To lie sleeping
<i>Estár fazéndo</i>	To be a doing
<i>Estár de nójo</i>	To be in mourning
<i>Estár áler</i>	To look heedfully about
<i>Estár de sentinélla</i>	To stand centry
<i>Está alegre</i>	To be merry
<i>E'le está cómo quer</i>	He lives in clover
<i>Estár em perigo</i>	To be in danger
<i>Estár encostádo</i>	To lean upon
<i>Estár esperándo</i>	To expect
<i>Estár muito témpo</i>	To stay a good while
<i>Estár caládo</i>	To be silent
<i>Estár or vivér com outros</i>	To dwell with others
<i>Estár de cima</i>	To lie over
<i>Estár debáxo</i>	To lie under
<i>Estár bem aviádo</i>	To be in an ill taking
<i>Estár á espéra</i>	To lie in wait
<i>Estár enamorado</i>	To be in love
<i>Estár de cáma</i>	To be bed-rid
<i>Estár no cámpo</i>	To live in the country
<i>Estár com saúde, or de saúde</i>	To be in health
<i>Estár quiéto</i>	To stand still, or to be quiet
<i>Estár neutrál</i>	To stand neuter
<i>Estaréi por túdo o que vos parecer máis conveniénte</i>	I shall stand to whatever you shall think proper



<i>A difficuldade está em, &amp;c.</i>	The difficulty consists in, &c.
<i>Estár por alguém</i>	To stand for one, to be of his side
<i>Estár por, or em lugar de, &amp;c.</i>	To stand for, or signify
<i>E'lle estava na altura do Cabo de Boa Esperança</i>	He stood off the Cape of Good Hope
<i>Eu não quero estár as razões convôco</i>	I won't stand, or dispute with you
<i>Está quânto quizeres</i>	Stay as long as you please
<i>Abnde estáis de casa?</i>	Where do you live?
<i>Estaréi pello que dissér a pessoa que fór de vósso mayor agrádo</i>	I'll refer it to whom you please
<i>Naõ podemos estár por isso</i>	We can't stand to that
<i>Naõ quero estár pella vósso sentença</i>	I wont take your judgment
<i>Cómo está vm<sup>a</sup>?</i>	How do you do, sir?

*Estár*, joined with the infinitive of a verb and the particle *para*, signifies to be ready, or about doing a thing, which has always reference to the signification of the verb ; as

<i>Estou para ir</i>	I am going, I am ready to go
<i>Estou para comprar hum cavállo</i>	I am about buying a horse
<i>Estou para casárme</i>	I am going to be married
<i>E' sta casa está para cahír</i>	This house is ready to fall
<i>Estou para dizér</i>	I dare say
<i>Estár com a bóca abérta (metaph.)</i>	To stare, to look, to hearken attentively
<i>Estár de regimêto</i>	To keep to a diet
<i>Estár fiádo em alguém.</i>	To trust to, to rely or depend upon one
<i>Estár no fúndo</i>	To lie at the bottom
<i>Estár de frónte</i>	To lie over-against
<i>Estár em competêcia</i>	To stand in competition
<i>Estár ao lume</i>	To stand by the fire
<i>Estár de lóngo</i>	To stand at a distance
<i>Estár áto</i>	To stand high, or in a high place
<i>Estár á maõ diréita de alguém</i>	To be at one's right hand, to have the first place

<i>Elle esteve em perigo de afogar-se</i>	He was like to be drowned
<i>Não estar no caso de, &amp;c.</i>	Not to be able, or in the case of, &c.
<i>Estar a órden de alguém</i>	To be at one's disposal.
<i>Isso não está nos termos</i>	That is not right, it won't do
<i>Não estou no caso</i>	I don't understand the case
<i>Estar ás razões</i>	To contend, to strive, or quarrel
<i>Estar bem com alguém</i>	To be in favour with one, to live in friendship with him
<i>Estar bem</i>	To be well, to be at ease
<i>Bem aviado estaria eu, se, &amp;c.</i>	It would be very bad for me, indeed, if, &c.
<i>Estar em conceito de homem honrado</i>	To be looked upon as an honest man
<i>Estar na fé</i>	To believe, to think, or suppose
<i>Estar de posse</i>	To possess, to have the possession of a thing
<i>Deixai estar isso.</i>	Let that alone
<i>Estar em si</i>	To be in one's right wits
<i>Estar fora de si</i>	To be out of one's wits
<i>Deixavos estar (a sort of threatening)</i>	I'll be revenged on you, you shall pay for it

We have already observed the difference between *sér* and *estar*. See page 55.

*Of the different Significations of fazer and fazer se.*

*Fazer* signifies *to do, to make, to create*; also *to form of materials*; also *to feign, to seem, to make as if*.

<i>Elle fez que não o via</i>	He made as if he did not see it
<i>Fazer huma saúde</i>	To drink, or to toast a health
<i>E'lle lhe fez cortar a cabeça</i>	He caused his head to be cut off
<i>Fazer pé atrás (metaph.)</i>	To fall, or draw back, to give ground; to yield, to submit
<i>Que tendes vós que fazer com isto</i>	What have you to do with it? or what is that to you?

<i>Fazér brío de algúma</i>	To make a pride of a thing,
<i>cóusa</i>	to glory in it
<i>Fazér fim ao dezéjo</i>	To satisfy one's desire, or longing
<i>Fazér por algúma cóusa</i>	To take pains, to endeavour, to labour to a certain purpose, to work for a certain end
<i>Fáço por isso</i>	I endeavour after it
<i>Fazér ao negócio, or ao caso</i>	To come to the purpose
<i>Fazér esmólas</i>	To give alms
<i>Fazér gásto</i>	To spend
<i>Fazér gósto</i>	To like, to be pleased with
<i>Fazér o gósto, or a vontade</i>	To please one, to comply
<i>a algúem</i>	with one's desire
<i>Fazér parallélo</i>	To parallel, to compare
<i>Fazér de comér</i>	To cook
<i>Fazér fúmo</i>	To smoak
<i>Fazér auzénte a algúem</i>	To believe one absent
<i>Faz frio</i>	It is cold
<i>Fazér génte</i>	To raise men, soldiers
<i>Fazér em pedáços</i>	To pull into pieces
<i>Fazér zombaría de algúem</i>	To mock, or to laugh at a person
<i>Naõ façáis caso disso</i>	Do not mind that
<i>Fazér agoáda</i>	To take in fresh water
<i>Isto me faz vir a ágoa á</i>	This makes my teeth, or
<i>bóca</i>	mouth, water
<i>Fazér álto</i>	To halt in a march
<i>Fazér casa (in playing at</i>	To put two men on the
<i>backgammon)</i>	same point
<i>Fazér a cea</i>	To get supper ready
<i>Fazér caras</i>	To make mouths
<i>Fazér enrédos</i>	To form a secret design against another
<i>Fazér carráncas</i>	To pout
<i>Fazér caso</i>	To make account of, or esteem
<i>Fazér de tripas coração</i>	To make one's utmost efforts
<i>Fazér muitocaso de algúma</i>	To make great account of a
<i>cóusa</i>	thing, to make much of it
<i>Naõ fáço caso délle</i>	I don't mind him
<i>Fazér festa</i>	To endear, to fondle
<i>Fazér húma festa</i>	To give an entertainment, to feast

<i>Fazér as vèzes de alguém</i>	To make any business for another
<i>Fazér trapáças</i>	To chicané, to cavil, to use tricks
<i>Fazér lugár</i>	To make room
<i>Fazér mercé</i>	To grant a favour
<i>Fazér ouvídos de mercadór</i>	To make as if one were deaf
<i>Tér que fazér</i>	To be busy
<i>Fazér exercício</i>	To use exercise
<i>Fazér exercício (a military word)</i>	To exercise
<i>Os soldádos estão fazéndo exercício</i>	The soldier's exercise
<i>Que fazéis aquí ?</i>	What do you here ?
<i>Fazér hum vestido</i>	To make a suit of clothes
<i>Fazér húma léy, hum discurso</i>	To make a law, a speech
<i>Fazér guérra</i>	To make war
<i>Fazér sabér algúma còusa a alguém</i>	To make one acquainted with a thing
<i>Fazér enraivecér alguém</i>	To make one mad
<i>Fazér húma cònta</i>	To cast up an account
<i>Fazér cònta</i>	To intend, or to propose
<i>Elle fazia húma cònta, e sahío-lhe óutra</i>	He was much disappointed
<i>Fazér contas com alguém</i>	To settle accounts with one
<i>I'sso não me faz náda</i>	It is nothing to me, that does not concern me
<i>Fazér páusa</i>	To make a stand
<i>Fazér de alguém tólo</i>	To make a fool of one
<i>Fazér dinhéiro de algúma còusa</i>	To make money of a thing, to sell it
<i>Tornár a fazér</i>	To make again
<i>Fazér a razaõ</i>	To pledge one
<i>Ter que fazér com alguém</i>	To deal with one, or to have to do with one
<i>Fazér a alguém hum gilváz na cara</i>	To mark one in the face
<i>Fazér hõnra</i>	To honour
<i>Fazér fé</i>	To make known, to testify, to witness
<i>Fazér fórté</i>	To fortify, or strengthen
<i>Fazér mençáõ</i>	To mention
<i>Fazér mal</i>	To hurt



<i>Fazér de alguém o que</i>	To dispose of one
<i>húma pessôa quer</i>	
<i>Fazér húma apósta</i>	To lay a wager
<i>Faz vénto</i>	The wind blows
<i>Faz hóje óuto dias</i>	This day se'nnight, or a week ago
<i>Fazér vída com alguém</i>	To cohabit, or dwell together
<i>Fazér a súa vontáde</i>	To do as one pleases
<i>Fazér o possível</i>	To do one's best, or endeavour to do one's utmost
<i>Naõ faréis náda com éssô</i>	You will do no good in it
<i>Naõ façáis máis assím</i>	Do so no more
<i>Se tornárdes a fazér assím</i>	If ever you do so again
<i>Dezéjo que faça a súa fortúna</i>	I wish he may do well
<i>Custóu-me muito a fazel- lovir</i>	I had much to do to get him to come
<i>Fazér a óutrem o que quizerámos que óutrem nos fizésse a nós</i>	To do by others as you would be done by
<i>Naõ ténho que fazér com- isso</i>	I have nothing to do with it
<i>Fazér o que alguém mánda</i>	To do as one is bid
<i>Faz de mim o que vos pa- recér</i>	Do with me as you shall think fit
<i>Fazér hum gránde estróndo</i>	To make a great noise
<i>E'lle fôí o que fez túdo na- quélle negócio</i>	He was the do-all in that business
<i>Que faréis hóje?</i>	What will you do to-day? or how do you employ yourself to-day?
<i>Fazér o séu cúrso</i>	To finish its course as a star does
<i>Fazér húma bóa cása</i>	To raise, to set up one's family
<i>Fazér a bárba</i>	To shave
<i>Fazér a cáma</i>	To make the bed
<i>Naõ séi que lhe fazér</i>	I can't help it
<i>Fazér gránde negócio</i>	To drive a great trade
<i>Fazér o seu offício</i>	To exercise, or discharge
<i>Fazér profissaõ</i>	To profess
<i>Tódos o faziaõ mórtô</i>	They gave out that he was dead
<i>Fazér vir</i>	To call, or send for

<i>Fazér entrár, ou sahír al- guém</i>	To call in, or out, to bid one come in, or out
<i>I'sto não faz náda</i>	It is no matter
<i>Naõ séi que fazér disso</i>	I have no need of it
<i>Ja não ténho que fazér com élle</i>	I have done with him
<i>Fazér hum lívro</i>	To write a book
<i>Fazér amizáde com alguém</i>	To make friendship, to get into friendship with one
<i>Fazér exémplo em alguém, or castigálo para dar exémplo</i>	To make one a public ex- ample
<i>Fazér húma cõusa múito ao desentendído.</i>	To do a thing very covertly, so that people can't ap- prehend that it is done on set purpose, and with a design
<i>Fazér das súas</i>	To play the fool, to dodge, to play tricks
<i>E'lle sempre está fazéndo das súas</i>	He is always playing his foolish tricks
<i>Fazér fõscas</i>	To bully, to provoke, to ex- cite by words, or actions of contempt; also to elude, or deceive by false show
<i>Fazér de pessõa</i>	To behave courageously
<i>Fazér jurár alguém</i>	To tender the oaths to one, to put one to his oaths
<i>Fazér saltár, or voár pèllos áres</i>	To blow up
<i>Fazér bõa vezinhânça</i>	To keep fair with one's neighbours
<i>Fazér lénha</i>	To fell wood
<i>Fazér a rónnda</i>	To walk the rounds
<i>Fazér dívidas</i>	To run in debt, to contract debts
<i>Fáz lua</i>	The moon shines
<i>Fazér violéncia</i>	To offer violence
<i>Fazér-se ao trabálho</i>	To inure one's self to hard- ships
<i>Fazér-se tólo</i>	To play the ninny
<i>Fazér-se vélho</i>	To grow old, or to grow in years
<i>Fazér-se féio</i>	To grow ugly

*Fazér-se sobérbo*  
*Faz-se tárde*

To grow proud  
 It grows late

*Fazér-se* signifies also *to feign, to pretend, to seem, make as if.*

*Faz-se móuco*

He won't hear

*The different significations of têr and têr-se.*

<i>Ter que fazér</i>	To be busy
<i>Ter ódio</i>	To hate
<i>Ter por costúme</i>	To be wont
<i>Ter alguém por ignoránte</i>	To believe one ignorant
<i>Ter cuidádo de</i>	To be careful of
<i>Ter cuidádos</i>	To be full of care, or thoughtful
<i>Ter fastío</i>	To loath, to see food with dislike
<i>Ter ánimo</i>	To have courage
<i>Ter bóa fâma</i>	To be well spoken of
<i>Ter cára d'áço</i>	To have a brazen face
<i>Ter necessidáde</i>	To be in want
<i>Ter préssa</i>	To be in haste
<i>Ter múitos fúmos</i>	To be very proud
<i>Ter grãnte presumpçãõ</i>	To presume much on one's self
<i>Ter razaõ</i>	To be in the right
<i>Naõ têr razaõ</i>	To be in the wrong
<i>Ter algúma cõusa debáxo da língua</i>	To have a thing at one's tongue's end

*Ter algúma cõusa na põnta da língua*, we say, to have a thing at one's finger's ends, to have it perfect. They also say, *sabêr algúma cõusa nas põntas dos dédos*, which answers exactly to our English phrase.

<i>Ter feiçõens feiticéiras</i>	To have a taking look
<i>Ter má fâma</i>	To be ill spoken of
<i>Ter ciúmes</i>	To be jealous of
<i>Ter méyos</i>	To be able, or have means
<i>Ter no pensamêto</i>	To bear in mind
<i>Ter obrigaçãõ</i>	To be obliged
<i>Ter médo</i>	To be fearful
<i>Ter razãõ, e máis querazãõ</i>	To have reason, to spare

<i>Que téndes vós com isso?</i>	What is that to you?
<i>Ter carruágem e criádos</i>	To keep a coach and ser- vants
<i>Ter a alguém suspénso</i>	To hold one in suspence
<i>Hómem que tem boa feiçãõ</i>	A man of good address, a polite man
<i>Ter mésa frânca</i>	To keep open table, to keep a table where a man may come without bidding
<i>Ter frío</i>	To be cold
<i>Ter as cóstas quêntes com alguém,</i>	To be backed, <i>or</i> supported by one
<i>Ter por bem</i>	To approve of, <i>or</i> consent
<i>Ténho-o por dôudo</i>	I take him to be mad
<i>Ter maõ na sua resoluçãõ</i>	To be still in one mind
<i>Ter com que</i>	To have wherewith
<i>Naõ téndes de que vos queixár</i>	You have no reason of complaint
<i>Naõ téndes que, &amp;c.</i>	It is useless, <i>or</i> it will be to no purpose for you to, &c.
<i>I'sto naõ tem náda que fa- zér, com o que eu dígo</i>	That is nothing to the pur- pose
<i>Ter éntre maõs</i>	To have in hand, <i>or</i> in one's possession
<i>Ténho isso por certo</i>	I hold that for a certainty
<i>Ir ter com alguém</i>	To address one's self to one
<i>Vénho ter com vm<sup>a</sup> para sabér cómo pássa a sen- hóra fullána</i>	I address, <i>or</i> apply myself to you to know how Miss such a one does
<i>Ir ter a algúm lugar</i>	To go to a place
<i>E'sta rua vái ter ao mer- cádo</i>	This street strikes, <i>or</i> goes into the market
<i>Ter alguém por si</i>	To be supported, <i>or</i> pro- tected by one
<i>Têmos por nós a authori- dade dos máis prudêntes</i>	We have the wisest men of our side, <i>or</i> of our opinion
<i>Ter para si</i>	To think, <i>or</i> imagine, to reckon
<i>Ter em múito</i>	To set much by
<i>Ter em póuco</i>	To value but little
<i>Ser tído em boa cónta</i>	To be esteemed, regarded, <i>or</i> valued, to be in great esteem
<i>Ter maõ</i>	To hold <i>or</i> keep in, to re- strain



<i>Ter mão nalguma coisa</i>	To bear up, to support, to prop, to keep up, to hold up
<i>Átomos que tem mão huns nos outros</i>	Atoms that stick together
<i>Tê nha mão, or tem mão</i>	Hold, stop
<i>Ter</i>	To contain
<i>Ter-se em pé</i>	To stand, to stand up
<i>Ter-se bem a cavállo</i>	To sit fast, or well, on horseback
<i>Ter-se em casa</i>	To keep at home
<i>Ter-se com alguém</i>	To hold out, to resist, to stand against one, to cope with one, to oppose, or resist him
<i>Naõ me pôsso ter com riso</i>	I can't forbear laughing
<i>Naõ se pôde ter, que naõ fálle</i>	He can't forbear speaking

### The different Significations of *querêr*.

*Querêr* signifies *to will, to be willing, and to believe*; as

<i>Quêrem algúns</i>	Some believe
<i>Querêr bem</i>	To love
<i>Querêr mal</i>	To hate
<i>A'ntes querêr</i>	To have rather
<i>Quêira Déos</i>	God grant it, God send it may be so
<i>Mas quero que assim seja</i>	I grant it, suppose it were so
<i>Que quer dizêr aquelle hómem?</i>	What does that man mean?
<i>Que quer dizêr isto?</i>	What means this? what's the meaning of that?
<i>I'sto quer dizêr que, &amp;c.</i>	The meaning is that, &c.
<i>E'u quero absolutamente que</i>	I positively resolve that, &c.
<i>E'u assim o quero</i>	I'll have it so
<i>E'lle quer que vós obedecáis</i>	He will have you obey
<i>Naõ quero</i>	I will not, I won't
<i>E'lle o fará quándo quizer</i>	He will do it when he pleases or when he has a mind to it
<i>E'lle quer partír amanhaã,</i>	He intends, or has a mind, to set out to-morrow
<i>O mal que eu lhe quero me, vênha a mim</i>	I wish him no more harm than I do myself

*Havér*, to have.

<i>Tu has de hir</i>	You must go
<i>E'lle ha de vir hóje</i>	He is to come to-day
<i>Se eu houvér de hir</i>	If I shall be obliged to go
<i>Aindaque isso me houvésse</i>	Though I were to lose my
<i>de custar a vida</i>	life for't
<i>E'lle está tódo nú, e ha de</i>	He is all naked, he must
<i>tér muito frio</i>	be very cold
<i>Havéis vós de estar em</i>	Shall you be at home ?
<i>cása ?</i>	
<i>Eu héi de achárme lá</i>	I must be there
<i>E'lle ha de sér enforcádo</i>	He is to be hanged
<i>Eu héi de recebér dinhéiro</i>	I am to receive money
<i>Vós he que havéis de jugár</i>	You are to play
<i>Aquillo he que vós havieis</i>	You should do that
<i>de fazér</i>	
<i>Havér por bem</i>	To take in good part
<i>Havér por mal</i>	To take in ill part
<i>Que ha de ser</i>	That is to be hereafter
<i>Aquillo nunca há-de ser</i>	That will never be
<i>E'u héi de ser a cáusa da</i>	I shall be the death, or ruin
<i>súa mórté, ou rúina</i>	of him
<i>Para havér de fallár, ouvír,</i>	In order to speak, hear, &c.
<i>&amp;c.</i>	
<i>Que há de sér de mim ?</i>	What is to become of me ?
<i>Havér filhos</i>	To beget, to become the
	father of children.
<i>Livros do déve, e ha de havér</i>	Books of debtor and creditor
<i>Havér mistér</i>	To want
<i>Há mistér apressár-se</i>	It is necessary to haste, or
	to make haste
 <i>Havér</i> , when impersonal, is rendered into Eng- lish by the verb <i>to be</i> , preceded by <i>there</i> ; as,	
<i>Há</i>	There is, or there are
<i>Há homens tão malvados</i>	'There are men so wicked
<i>Havía húma molhér</i>	'There was a woman
<i>Há algúns bons e óutros</i>	There are some good, and
<i>máos</i>	some bad
<i>Há muitas cásas</i>	There are several houses
<i>Há algúma cousa de nóvo ?</i>	Is there any news ?
<i>Há máis he húma hóra</i>	It is above an hour since
<i>Há muito témpo</i>	Long since
<i>Há pérto de húma hóra que</i>	It is almost an hour since
<i>élle sahio</i>	he went out

<i>Há hum anno</i>	A year ago
<i>Há oito dias</i>	Eight days ago
<i>Há perto de 20 léguas da quí lá</i>	It is near upon 20 leagues thither
<i>Naõ há</i>	There is not
<i>E'lle cuida que naõ há máis que purgár</i>	He believes that purging is all in all, or that purging is the only remedy in such a case
<i>Havér se, v. r.</i>	To carry, to behave one's self
<i>E'lle sabe cómo se há-de ha- vér, or elle sabe cómo ha de havér-se</i>	He knows how to behave himself
<i>Elle hóuve-se de maneira que, &amp;c.</i>	He behaved himself in such a manner that, &c.
<i>N. B.</i> When this verb is used impersonally, it is always followed by the particle <i>de</i> ; as,	
<i>Ha-se de mistér dinheiro</i>	Money is wanted
<i>Ha-se de fazer, or dizér isto</i>	This must be done, or said
<i>Ha-se de fazer o que elle quizér</i>	People must do what he pleases
<i>Hir</i> , a neuter and irregular verb, <i>to go, to walk,</i> <i>to march</i> ; also, <i>to grow, to reach any estate gra-</i> <i>dually, to be going.</i>	
<i>Hir por már e por terra</i>	To travel by sea and land
<i>Cómo vaõ os vossos negó- cios?</i>	How go your concerns?
<i>Túdo vái bem</i>	All is well, all goes well
<i>As súas cousas vaõ muito mal</i>	Things go very ill (or very hard) with him
<i>Hir á máõ</i>	To hinder, to obstruct, to obviate
<i>Hir passándo</i>	To grow out of fashion or use
<i>Hir andándo</i>	To go on or forward, to keep or hold on his way; also to proceed, to con- tinue on, to prosecute
<i>Hir andándo, or passándo</i>	To shift, to pass life not quite well, to live though with difficulty
<i>Que vái de nõvo?</i>	Is there any thing new?
<i>Que vái nísto? or õnde vái ísto a dar comsigo?</i>	What of all this?

<i>Hir debáxo</i>	To come by the worst
<i>Hir para</i>	To approach, to go near
<i>Quáto máis vámos para a primavéra, máis comprí- dos são os días</i>	The nearer the spring, the longer the days
<i>Hir de mal para peór</i>	To grow worse and worse
<i>Hir diánte</i>	To go before
<i>Hir por diánte</i>	To go on, or forward
<i>Hir ao encóntro</i>	To go to meet
<i>Hir ao fúndo</i>	To sink, or fall to the bottom
<i>Hir e vir</i>	To go to and fro, to go and come
<i>Não faço máis do que hir e voltár</i>	I will not stay, I shall be back presently
<i>Isso ja lá vái</i>	'Tis a thing past and done
<i>Eílo lá vái</i>	There he goes
<i>Eílo vái</i>	So so, pretty well
<i>Que vos parece daquella molhér? eílo vái ella não he féa</i>	How do you like that wo- man? She is so so, she may pass
<i>Eílo vái, fólga que assim seja</i>	Well, well, I am glad on't
<i>Cómo as cousas agora vão</i>	As things go now, as the world goes
<i>Por que parte ides?</i>	Which way d'ye go?
<i>Déos vá convóscó</i>	The Lord of heaven go with you
<i>Hir á róda do múnido</i>	To go about the world
<i>Hir com alguém</i>	To go along with one
<i>E'sta travéssa vái ter á rúa larga</i>	This lane goes into the broad street
<i>E'u o iréi vér de camínho</i>	I will call upon him as I go along
<i>Hir continuándo o séu ca- mínho</i>	To go along
<i>Hir fóra do séu camínho</i>	To go out of one's way
<i>Hir hum de húma bándá, e óutro da óutra</i>	To go asunder
<i>Hir para trás</i>	To go backward
<i>Hir detráz</i>	To go behind
<i>Hir atráz de alguém</i>	To pursue, to go after one
<i>Hir em alcánce de alguém</i>	To go after one, in order to overtake him
<i>Hir buscár</i>	To go for, or fetch
<i>Hir para déntro</i>	To go in



<i>Hir para fóra</i>	To go out
<i>Hir peregrinando</i>	To go a pilgrimage
<i>Hir fazer húma embaixada</i>	To go on an embassy
<i>Hir ver, cantár, &amp;c.</i>	To go to see, to sing, &c.
<i>Hir fazer hum negócio</i>	To go upon a business
<i>Hir com a maré</i>	To go with the tide
<i>Hir par a par com alguém</i>	To go cheek by jole with one
<i>Vái para quátro mēses que eu aqui cheguei</i>	It is now going on four months since I came hither
<i>I'de em paz</i>	Depart in peace
<i>O tēpo vai abrandando</i>	The weather grows mild
<i>Hir (at cards)</i>	To go, to lay, to stake, to set
<i>Hir-se, v. r.</i>	To go, to go away, to go one's way, to depart, <i>also</i> to run, <i>or</i> leak
<i>Hir-se a ólha, ou a panélla</i>	<i>Is</i> for the pot to boil over
<i>Hir-se o enfermo</i>	<i>Is</i> for a sick man to die
<i>A quarésma vái-se acaba- bando</i>	Lent draws to an end
<i>Hir-se</i>	To slip, <i>or</i> pass away (as time)
<i>Nada se vái máis depréssa que o tēpo</i>	Nothing goes faster than time
<i>Aquélles mōntes vão-se es- tendēdo</i>	Those mountains extend, <i>or</i> stretch themselves.
<i>Hir-se embóra</i>	To go away, <i>also</i> to be over
<i>Esperái até que a cálma se va embóra</i>	Stay till the heat be over
<i>Vái-te embóra; que não sábes engodar a gente</i>	Away, <i>or</i> go, you know not how to wheedle people
<i>Hir-se de húma carta (at cards)</i>	To throw away a card
<i>Vái-se fazendo tarde</i>	It grows late
<i>Vái-se chegando a nóite</i>	The night draws on
<i>Vái-se chegando o tēpo da séga</i>	It grows near harvest
<i>Vai-se acabando o méu consulado</i>	My consulship is almost at an end
<i>Hir-se escapulindo</i>	To sneak away
<i>Hir-se á máo</i>	To refrain, to forbear, to abstain

*Hir-se* impersonal ; as, *vái-se*, they go ; *foi-se*, they are gone ; *hir-se há*, they shall go.

## To pray.

<i>Senhór, cómo amigo, fáçame o favór</i>	Dear sir, do me the favour
<i>Eu vos péço, or péçovos</i>	I pray you
<i>Péçolhe em cortesia</i>	I beseech you
<i>Péçolhe encarecidaménte</i>	I intreat, or conjure, you to do it
<i>Péçolhe por favór que, &amp;c.</i>	I beg of you that, &c.
<i>Fáçame a finéza</i>	Do me the kindness
<i>Péçolhe perdaõ</i>	I beg your pardon

## Expressions of Kindness.

<i>Minha vida</i>	My life
<i>Minha álma</i>	My dear soul
<i>Méu amór</i>	My love
<i>Méu querido, minha querida</i>	My little darling
<i>Méu coração</i>	My dear love, my love
<i>Filho do méu coração</i>	My dear child
<i>Filha da minha álma</i>	My little honey

## To shew Civility.

<i>Agradéço a vm<sup>ce</sup></i>	I thank you
<i>Dóu a vm<sup>ce</sup> as agradeci- méntos</i>	I give you thanks
<i>Béijo as mãos de vm<sup>ce</sup></i>	I kiss your hand
<i>Fálo-héi com tódo a gósto</i>	I will do it cheerfully
<i>Com tódo o méu coração</i>	With all my heart
<i>De múito bóa vontade</i>	Heartily, willingly
<i>Véja vm<sup>ce</sup> se o póssó servir nalgúma cõusa</i>	See if it is in my power to serve you
<i>Dispõnha vm<sup>ce</sup> cómo lhe parecér déste séu criádo</i>	Do what you please with your servant
<i>Estóu esperándo péllas ór- dens de vm<sup>ce</sup></i>	I wait for your commands
<i>Ja que vm<sup>ce</sup> assím ordena</i>	Since you will have it so
<i>As órdenes de vm<sup>ce</sup></i>	At your service
<i>Fíco múito obrigádo a vm<sup>ce</sup></i>	I am very much obliged to you
<i>Quer vm<sup>ce</sup> que éu fáça al- gúma cõusa</i>	Have you any thing to command me
<i>Sem cerimónia</i>	Without ceremony
<i>Não tem vm<sup>ce</sup> máis que fallar</i>	You need but to speak
<i>Fáçame a honra de me póbr aos pés da snr<sup>a</sup></i>	Present my respects, or duty, to my lady

<i>Não sei cómo agradecer a vm<sup>o</sup> tantos favóres</i>	I know not how to make a proper return for so many favours
<i>Não sou de compriméto Deixémos éstes comprimén- tos</i>	I am not for ceremonies Away with these ceremonies or compliments
<i>I'sso he o melhor</i>	That is the best way

To give tokens of Affirmation, Consent, Belief,  
and Refusal.

<i>He verdáde</i>	It is true
<i>He isso verdáde?</i>	Is it true?
<i>He múito verdáde</i>	It is but too true
<i>Para dizérvos a verdáde</i>	To tell you the truth
<i>Com efféito he assim</i>	Really it is so
<i>Quem duvida díssó?</i>	Who doubts it?
<i>Não ha dúvida níssó</i>	There is no doubt of it
<i>Paréceme que sim, que não</i>	I think so, not
<i>Apósto que sim</i>	I lay it is
<i>Apósto que não</i>	I lay it is not
<i>Créame vm<sup>o</sup>?</i>	Do believe me?
<i>Está vm<sup>o</sup> zombándo?</i>	Don't you jest?
<i>Fállá vm<sup>o</sup> de véras?</i>	Are you in earnest?
<i>Fállo de véras</i>	I am in earnest
<i>Póis, está féito</i>	Well, let it be so
<i>Póuco a póuco</i>	Softly, fair and softly
<i>I'sso não he verdáde</i>	It is not true
<i>Não ha tal cóusa</i>	There is no such thing
<i>He mentíra</i>	It is a lie
<i>Estáva zombándo</i>	I did but jest
<i>Séja múto embóra</i>	Let it be so
<i>Não quéro</i>	I won't, I will not

To consult.

<i>Que se ha de fazer?</i>	What is to be done?
<i>Que farámos?</i>	What shall we do?
<i>Que lhe paréce a vm<sup>o</sup> que éu faça?</i>	What do you advise me to do?
<i>Que remédio tem isso?</i>	What remedy is there for it?
<i>Façámos assim</i>	Let us do so, and so
<i>Façámos húma cóusa</i>	Let us do one thing
<i>Será melhor que</i>	It will be better that
<i>Seria melhor que</i>	It would be better that

<i>Esperái hum pouco</i>	Stay a little
<i>Deixáime com isso</i>	Let me alone
<i>Antes quizera</i>	I had rather
<i>Se isso fôsse comigo</i>	Were I in your place
<i>Túdo he o mesmo</i>	It is all one

Of Eating and Drinking.

<i>Ténho fome</i>	I am hungry
<i>Mórro de fome</i>	I am almost starved
<i>Cóma vm<sup>o</sup> alguma coisa</i>	Eat something
<i>Que quer vm<sup>o</sup> comér?</i>	What will you eat?
<i>Quer vm<sup>o</sup> comér máis?</i>	Will you eat any more?
<i>Ténho séde</i>	I am dry, <i>or</i> thirsty
<i>Ja matéi a fome</i>	I have no more stomach
<i>Ténho múita séde</i>	I am very dry
<i>Mórro de séde</i>	I am almost dead with thirst
<i>Dême de bebér</i>	Give me some drink
<i>Viva vm<sup>o</sup> múitos ánnos</i>	I thank you
<i>Eú beberia hum cópo de vinho</i>	I could drink a glass of wine
<i>Pões béba vm<sup>o</sup></i>	Drink then
<i>Ténho bebido bastánte</i>	I have drunk enough
<i>Naõ posso bebér máis</i>	I can drink no more
<i>Ja matéi a séde</i>	I am no more thirsty, <i>or</i> my thirst is quenched

Of Going, Coming, Stirring, &c.

<i>Dónde vem vm<sup>o</sup>?</i>	From whence do you come?
<i>Para ónde vái vm<sup>o</sup>?</i>	Where do you go?
<i>Vénho de; vou para, or a</i>	I come from; I am going to
<i>Quer vm<sup>o</sup> subír, ou descér?</i>	Will you come up, <i>or</i> come down?
<i>Entre vm<sup>o</sup>, faya vm<sup>o</sup></i>	Come in, go out
<i>Naõ se búla daqui</i>	Do not stir from hence
<i>Chégue se para mim</i>	Come near to me
<i>Va-se vm<sup>o</sup></i>	Go your way, be gone
<i>Vem cá</i>	Come hither
<i>Espére por mim</i>	Stay for me
<i>Naõ vá taõ depréssa</i>	Do not go so fast
<i>Tíre-se de diánte de mim</i>	Get you out of my way
<i>Naõ me tóque</i>	Do not touch me
<i>Deixe estár isso</i>	Let that alone
<i>Estóu bem aquí</i>	I am well here
<i>Ábra vm<sup>o</sup> a pórtá</i>	Open the door



<i>Fêche a pórtá</i>	Shut the door
<i>A'bra, ou fêche a janélla</i>	Open the window, or shut the window
<i>Vénha vm<sup>e</sup> por aquí</i>	Come this way
<i>Pásse por lá</i>	Pass that way
<i>Que procúra vm<sup>e</sup>?</i>	What do you look for?
<i>Que perdéo vm<sup>e</sup>?</i>	What have you lost?

## To wish well to a Person.

<i>O Céu vos guárde</i>	Heaven preserve you
<i>Déos vos dé bóá fortuna</i>	God send you good luck
<i>Dezêjo-vos tódo o bem</i>	I wish you every thing that is good
<i>Déos vos ajúde</i>	God assist you
<i>Déos vos perdóe</i>	God forgive you
<i>I'de com Déos</i>	God be with you
<i>Até vér-nos</i>	Till I see you again
<i>Bóm provéito faça a vm<sup>e</sup></i>	Much good may do you

## To wish ill.

<i>O diábo te léve</i>	The devil take thee
<i>Maldito séjas tu</i>	A curse on thee
<i>Váiparaos quintos inférnos</i>	Away, go to hell
<i>Váite enforcár</i>	Go and be hanged
<i>Enforcádo séjas tu</i>	Would thou wert hanged

## To swear.

<i>Assim Déos me sálve</i>	As God shall help me, shall save me
<i>Arrebetado séja eu</i>	May I burst
<i>Em consciéncia</i>	In my conscience

## . To threaten and insult.

<i>O'lha que te héi de dar</i>	Take care, I will beat thee
<i>Déixa-te estár, or cála-te que me has de pagár</i>	Thou wilt pay it me
<i>Juro que te faréi arre- pendér disso</i>	I swear thou shalt repent of it
<i>Se me enfadáres</i>	If you put me into a passion
<i>Coitádo de ti</i>	Woe be to thee
<i>Póucas razóens, or cala éssa bóca</i>	Hold your tongue, don't speak to me
<i>I'sto basta</i>	It is enough, it is sufficient

## To mock, to blame, and to call one names.

<i>Que bélo focinho !</i>	O the fine snout !
<i>Que cara de móno !</i>	What an ape's face !
<i>Trapacéiro</i>	A chicaner
<i>Embustéiro</i>	A cheat, an impostor
<i>Mexeriquéiro</i>	A tale-bearer, a tell-tale
<i>Que bélo sogéito</i>	O the dull thing
<i>Velháco</i>	A knave
<i>Maróto</i>	A rogue, a rascal
<i>Má cásta</i>	Cursed race
<i>Tónto</i>	Giddy-brains, blunderbuss
<i>Asneiráo</i>	A great beast, a thick-skull

## To admire.

<i>O' Déos !</i>	O God !
<i>Hé possível !</i>	Is it possible !
<i>Quem teria imaginádo,</i> <i>crído, dito</i>	Who would have thought, believed, said !
<i>Que animál !</i>	What a beast !
<i>Que maravilha ! or que mi-</i> <i>lágre !</i>	O strange !
<i>Naõ me maravilha !</i>	I don't wonder
<i>Cómo póde ser isto ! or</i> <i>Cómo he possível !</i>	How can that be !
<i>Eis aquí cómo são as</i> <i>cóusas déste mundo !</i>	So goes the world !

## To show Joy and Displeasure.

<i>Que gósto !</i>	What pleasure !
<i>Que glória !</i>	What glory !
<i>Que alegria !</i>	What joy !
<i>Que contentaménto he o</i> <i>méu !</i>	How pleased I am !
<i>Que felicidade !</i>	What happiness !
<i>Sínto isso</i>	I am sorry for it
<i>Sínto isso na álma</i>	That touches my very soul
<i>Sínto isso no coração</i>	It pierces me to the heart
<i>O' que desgráça he a minha !</i>	O how unhappy am I !

<i>Affrontar-me desta sorte !</i>	To affront me thus !
<i>Assim he que se trata ?</i>	Do you deal thus ?
<i>O'ha maróto !</i>	You rogue !
<i>Que bella cortesia !</i>	O what fine manners !
<i>Naõ deveria tratar comigo desta sorte</i>	You ought not to treat me thus
<i>Parêce-te bem ?</i>	Do you think that well ?
<i>Aprênde, pedaço d' asno</i>	Learn, beast as thou art
<i>O'ha cómo me trata este animál</i>	See the brute, how he uses me
<i>Olhai que velhaco he este</i>	Do you behold that rascal
<i>Que diábo tem elle feito ?</i>	What the devil has hedone ?
<i>Póis, atnda teimáis ?</i>	What, are you obstinate still ?

## To call.

<i>Ouve !</i>	Hark !
<i>Onde estás ?</i>	Where art thou ?
<i>Húma palavra</i>	A word
<i>Dúas palavras somente</i>	I'll speak but two words to you

## To show Uneasiness, Trouble, and Sorrow.

<i>Sinto or pésame</i>	I am sorry
<i>Déixame</i>	Let me be quiet
<i>Péço-te que me deixes</i>	Prithee get thee gone
<i>Naõ me québres a cabeça</i>	Do not break my head
<i>Ora vámos, déixame</i>	Away, away
<i>Déixame, vai com Déos</i>	Go, go, God be with you
<i>Váitedaqui or váite embóra</i>	Get thee gone from hence
<i>Vái tratar da tua vida</i>	Go mind your own business
<i>Váite na má hora, or váite co' diábo</i>	Go to the devil
<i>Naõ me faças a cabeça tonta</i>	Do not make me giddy
<i>Já me tens dito isso hum cénto de vézes</i>	You have told it me a hun- dred times already

## To ask.

<i>Que novas há ?</i>	What news ?
<i>Que he isto ? que há ?</i>	What is this, what is the matter ?

<i>O'nde ides?</i>	Where are you going?
<i>Dónde vindes?</i>	Whence come you?
<i>Que quer dizér?</i>	What do you mean?
<i>De que serve?</i>	To what purpose?
<i>Que vos parece?</i>	What do you think?
<i>Quem teve tal atrevimento?</i>	Who has been so bold?
<i>Que dizem? que se diz?</i>	What do they say?
<i>Cómo diz vm<sup>a</sup>?</i>	How do you say?
<i>Por que não me responde?</i>	Why don't you answer?

## To forbid.

<i>Deixái estar isso</i>	Let that alone
<i>Não toquéis</i>	Do not touch
<i>Não digáis nada</i>	Say not a word
<i>Guardáivos</i>	Have a care

## Of speaking, saying, doing, &amp;c.

<i>Falle vm<sup>a</sup> alto</i>	Speak loud
<i>Falle vm<sup>a</sup> mánso</i>	Speak low
<i>Com quem falla vm<sup>a</sup>?</i>	Who do you speak to?
<i>Falle vm<sup>a</sup> comigo?</i>	Do you speak to me?
<i>Falle-lhe</i>	Speak to him, or to her
<i>Falla vm<sup>a</sup> Portuguéz?</i>	Do you speak Portuguese?
<i>Que diz vm<sup>a</sup>?</i>	What do you say?
<i>Não digo nada</i>	I say nothing
<i>E'lla não quer calár-se</i>	She will not hold her tongue
<i>Ouvi dizér que—</i>	I was told that—
<i>Assim mo disséraõ</i>	I was told so
<i>Assim dizem</i>	They say so
<i>Assim dizem todos</i>	Every one says so
<i>Quem lho disse a vm<sup>a</sup>?</i>	Who told it you?
<i>Dissemo o Sr. A.</i>	Mr. A. told it me
<i>Póis elle he que lho disse?</i>	Did he tell you so?
<i>Póis ella he que o disse?</i>	Did she tell it?
<i>Quándo o ouvió vm. dizér?</i>	When did you hear it?
<i>Disséraõ mo hõje</i>	I heard it to-day
<i>Não posso cré-lo</i>	I can't believe it
<i>Que diz elle?</i>	What does he say?
<i>Que vos disse elle?</i>	What did he say to you?
<i>E'lle não me disse nada</i>	He said nothing to me
<i>Não lho diga vm.</i>	Do not tell him that
<i>E'u lho diréi</i>	I'll tell him, or her of it
<i>Não diga nada</i>	Say not a word
<i>Disse vm. aquillo?</i>	Did you say that?



<i>Naõ o disse</i>	I did not say it
<i>Naõ disse vm. assim ?</i>	Did you not say so ?
<i>Que está vm. fazendo ?</i>	What are you doing ?
<i>Que tem vm. feito ?</i>	What have you done ?
<i>Naõ faço náda</i>	I do nothing
<i>Naõ tenho feito náda</i>	I have done nothing
<i>Tem vm. acabádo ?</i>	Have you done ?
<i>Que está elle fazendo ?</i>	What is he doing ?
<i>Que faz ella ?</i>	What does she do ?
<i>Que quer, or que ordéna vm ?</i>	What is your pleasure ?
<i>Que lhe fálta ?</i>	What do you want ?

## Of understanding or apprehending.

<i>Enténde-o, or percébe-o vm. bem ?</i>	Do you understand him well ?
<i>Percébevm. o que elle disse ?</i>	Did you understand what he said ?
<i>Percébe vm. o que elle diz ?</i>	Do you understand what he says ?
<i>Enténdeme, or percébeme vm. ?</i>	Do you understand me ?
<i>Enténdo a vm. muito bem</i>	I understand you very well
<i>Naõ enténdo a vm.</i>	I do not understand you
<i>Sabe vm. a lingua Portu- guéza ?</i>	Do you understand Portu- guese ?
<i>Naõ a séi</i>	I do not understand it
<i>Tem-me vm. percebido ?</i>	Did you understand me ?
<i>Agóra o percébo</i>	Now I understand you
<i>Naõ se percébe o que elle diz</i>	One cannot understand what he utters
<i>Paréce gágo</i>	He speaks like a stammerer

## Of knowing, or having Knowledge of.

<i>Sábe vm. isso ?</i>	Do you know that ?
<i>Naõ o séi</i>	I do not know it
<i>Naõ séi náda disso</i>	I knew nothing of it
<i>E'lla bem o sabía</i>	She knew well of it
<i>Porventúra naõ sabía elle isso ?</i>	Did he not know of it ?
<i>Démos que éu o soubésse</i>	Suppose I knew it
<i>E'lle naõ saberá náda disso</i>	He shall know nothing of it
<i>Elle nunca soubenáda disto</i>	He never knew any thing about this
<i>E'u súbete-o priméiro, or ántes q e vm. o soubésse</i>	I knew it before you

<i>He isto assim ou não ?</i>	Is it so, or not ?
<i>Naõ que eu saiba</i>	Not that I know of

Of knowing or being acquainted with, forgetting, and remembering.

<i>Conhêce-o vm. ?</i>	Do you know him ?
<i>Conhêce a vm. ?</i>	Do you know her ?
<i>Conhêce-os vm. ?</i>	Do you know them ?
<i>Conhêço-o muito bem</i>	I know him very well
<i>Naõ os conhêço</i>	I do not know them
<i>Nós naõ nos conhecêmos</i>	We do not know one another
<i>Conhêço-o de vista</i>	I know him by sight
<i>Conhêço-a de nôme</i>	I have heard of her
<i>Elle conhecêo-me muito bem</i>	He knew me very well
<i>Conhêce-me vm. ?</i>	Do you know me ?
<i>Têngo-me esquecido do seu nôme</i>	I have forgot your name
<i>Tem-se vm. esquecido de mim ?</i>	Did you forget me ?
<i>Conhêce-vos ella ?</i>	Does she know you ?
<i>Conhêce o Sr. a vm. ?</i>	Does the gentleman know you ?
<i>Parêce que naõ me conhêce</i>	It appears he does not know me
<i>O Sr. bem me conhêce</i>	The gentleman knows me well
<i>E'lle ja me naõ conhêce</i>	He knows me no more
<i>Têngo a honra de ser seu conhecido</i>	I have the honour to be known to him
<i>Lêmbra-se vm. disso ?</i>	Do you remember that ?
<i>Naõ me lêmbro disso</i>	I do not remember it
<i>Lêmbro-me muito bem disso</i>	I do remember it very well

Of Age, Life, Death, &c.

<i>Que idade tem vm. ?</i>	How old are you ?
<i>Que idade tem seu irmão ?</i>	How old is your brother ?
<i>Têngo vinte e cinco annos</i>	I am five and twenty
<i>Tem vinte e dous annos</i>	He is twenty-two years old
<i>Vm. tem mais annos do que eu</i>	You are older than I
<i>Que idade terá vm. ?</i>	How old may you be ?
<i>He vm. casado ?</i>	Are you married ?
<i>Quãtas vezes tem vm. sido casado ?</i>	How often have you been married ?

<i>Quántas molhéres tem vm. tído?</i>	How many wives have you had?
<i>Tem vm. ainda páy, e mãy?</i>	Have you father and mother still alive?
<i>Mêu páy morréo</i>	My father is dead
<i>Minha mãy morréo</i>	My mother is dead
<i>Ha dôs ánnos que mêu páy morréo</i>	My father has been dead these two years
<i>Minha mãy casôu óutra véz</i>	My mother is married again
<i>Quántos filhos tem vm.?</i>	How many children have you?
<i>Ténho quátro</i>	I have four
<i>Filhos, ou filhas?</i>	Sons or daughters?
<i>Ténho hum filho, e tres filhas?</i>	I have one son and three daughters
<i>Quántos irmaôs tem vm.?</i>	How many brothers have you?
<i>Naõ téngo nenhúm vivo</i>	I have none alive
<i>Tódos morréraõ</i>	They are all dead
<i>Tódos havémos de morréo</i>	We must all die

*Of the word hora, as a Noun as well as an Interjection.*

<i>Hóra</i>	An hour, also a particular time
<i>Eu estaréi lá, déntro de húma hóra</i>	I will be there within an hour
<i>Que hóras são?</i>	What's o'clock?
<i>São sete hóras</i>	It is seven o'clock
<i>A que hóras estaréis vós lá?</i>	At what hour or time will you be there?
<i>As hóras que fór preciso</i>	In due or good time, at the time appointed
<i>Hóras desoccupádas</i>	Leisure hours
<i>A última hóra ou a hóra da mórté</i>	The last hour, or the dying hour
<i>Cada hóra</i>	Every hour
<i>De hóra, em hóra</i>	Hourly, every hour
<i>Méya hóra</i>	Half an hour
<i>Hum quártro de hóra</i>	A quarter of an hour
<i>Húma hóra e méya</i>	An hour and a half
<i>Pérto das nóve hóras</i>	About nine o'clock
<i>Há húma hóra</i>	An hour ago, or an hour since
<i>Fóra de hóras</i>	Beyond the hour, or very late

<i>A horas</i>	In time
<i>Recolhér-se a boas horas</i>	To keep good hours
<i>Recolhér-se fóra de horas</i>	To keep bad hours
<i>Hóras de jantar ou de ceár</i>	Dinner, or supper time
<i>Pérto das horas de jantar</i>	About dinner-time
<i>Ainda estáis na cáma a éstas horas?</i>	Are you a-bed at this time of the day?
<i>O relógio dá horas</i>	The clock strikes
<i>Já déraõ õnze horas</i>	It struck eleven o'clock
<i>Relógio de hora</i>	Hour-glass
<i>Muito a boas horas</i>	Early, betimes
<i>A boas horas</i>	In good time, in time, at the time appointed
<i>Na má hora</i>	In an ill hour, unluckily, unfortunately
<i>Vái te na ma-hóra</i>	Go to the devil, go and be hanged
<i>Tóda a hora que</i>	Whensoever, at what time soever
<i>A tóda a hora que quizerdes</i>	At what time you will
<i>Hóra</i>	Time or hour of child-birth
<i>Molhér que ánda para cáda hora</i>	A woman near her time
<i>Hóras de fazer oraçãõ</i>	Prayer-time
<i>Hóras de hir á igréja</i>	Church-time
<i>Hóras de hir para a cáma</i>	Bed-time
<i>Hóras de comér</i>	Times of eating
<i>Já não são horas</i>	The time is past, it is too late
<i>Chegár á hora</i>	Is for a person to die
<i>Estár esperándo pella sua hora</i>	To wait for God's time
<i>Naõ vér a hora</i>	To long, to desire earnestly, to wish with eagerness continued, with <i>em</i> , or <i>de</i> before the thing desired
<i>São horas de, &amp;c.</i>	It is time to, &c.
<i>Hóras canónicas</i>	The set time for the clergy to say their office; also those parts of the office itself, called <i>Prime</i> , <i>Tierce</i> , <i>Sixth</i> , <i>None</i> , &c.
<i>Hóras</i>	Any little prayer-book, but particularly that in which is the office of the <i>Blessed Virgin</i>



<i>As quarênta horas</i>	So they call the space of three days, in which the consecrated Host is exposed and laid to public view
<i>Cônta das horas</i>	Horography, account of hours
<i>Arte de dividir o tẽmpo em horas</i>	Horometry

*Hóra as an Adverb and Interjection.*

<i>Hóra deixa-o-hír</i>	Pray let him go
<i>Hóra deixate destas parvoíces</i>	Away with these fopperies
<i>Hóra, deixémo-nos destes comprimẽtos</i>	Away with these compliments
<i>Hóra-vâmos, despáxate</i>	Come; come, make haste
<i>Hóra vâmos, não ha perigo</i>	Away, there is no danger
<i>Hóra vâmos, tira daqui isto</i>	Away with this
<i>Hóra vâmos, têm vergónha</i>	Away for shame
<i>Hóra, eu não pôsso sofrér aquillo</i>	I cannot bear that
<i>Hóra hum, hora ótro</i>	Sometimes one, sometimes another
<i>E'lles hora estão sóbre hum pé, hora sóbre ótro</i>	They stand now on one foot, and then on another
<i>Hóra, que quer dizér isso?</i>	How now?
<i>Túdo o que he bóm, deve sér amádo; hora, Déos he infinitamẽte bóm, lôgo, &amp;c.</i>	All that is good to be loved, now God is infinitely good, therefore, &c.
<i>Hóra, havia hum enférmo</i>	Now there was a sick man
<i>Por hora</i>	At present, for the present, now, at this time

---

---

A  
V O C A B U L A R Y

OF

WORDS MOST USED IN DISCOURSE.

---

---

Do Céu e dos Elemêntos.	<i>Of the Heavens and the Elements</i>
<b>DÉOS</b>	<b>GOD</b>
<i>Jesús Christo</i>	Jesus Christ
<i>O Espirito Santo</i>	The Holy Ghost
<i>A Trindáde</i>	The Trinity
<i>A Virgem</i>	The Virgin
<i>Os ánjós</i>	The angels
<i>Os archánjos</i>	The arch-angels
<i>Os santos</i>	The saints
<i>Os bemaventurádos</i>	The blessed
<i>O céo</i>	Heaven
<i>O paraiso</i>	Paradise
<i>Inférno</i>	Hell
<i>Purgatório</i>	Purgatory
<i>Os diabos</i>	The devils
<i>O fogo</i>	The fire
<i>O ár</i>	The air
<i>A terra</i>	The earth
<i>O már</i>	The sea
<i>O sól</i>	The sun
<i>A lúa</i>	The moon
<i>As estréllas</i>	The stars
<i>Os ráios</i>	The rays

<i>As núvens</i>	The clouds
<i>O vénto</i>	The wind
<i>A chuva</i>	The rain
<i>O trovão</i>	Thunder
<i>O relâmpago</i>	The lightning
<i>Saráiva</i>	Hail
<i>O ráyo</i>	The thunderbolt
<i>A néve</i>	The snow
<i>A geada</i>	The frost
<i>O caramélo</i>	The ice
<i>O orvalho</i>	The dew
<i>Névoa</i>	A fog, or mist
<i>Nevoeiro</i>	A thick fog
<i>O terremoto</i>	The earthquake
<i>O dilúvio</i>	The deluge, or flood
<i>O calor</i>	The heat
<i>O frio</i>	The cold

---

 Do Tempo.

---

 Of Time.

<i>O dia</i>	The day
<i>A noite</i>	The night
<i>Méyo dia</i>	Noon
<i>Méya noite</i>	Midnight
<i>A manhã</i>	The morning
<i>Depóis do méyo dia</i>	The afternoon
<i>Húma hora</i>	An hour
<i>Hum quáрто de hora</i>	A quarter of an hour
<i>Méya hora</i>	Half an hour
<i>Tres quartos de hora</i>	Three-quarters of an hour
<i>Hóje</i>	To-day
<i>Ontem</i>	Yesterday
<i>Amanhã</i>	To-morrow
<i>Antes d' ontem</i>	The day before yesterday
<i>Depóis de amanhã</i>	After to-morrow
<i>Depóis de jantar</i>	After dinner
<i>Depóis de cea</i>	After supper
<i>Húma semana</i>	A week
<i>Hum mês</i>	A month
<i>Hum áno</i>	A year
<i>Dia santo</i>	A holy-day
<i>Dia de trabalho</i>	A working day
<i>O nascér do sól</i>	The sun-rising
<i>O pôr do sól</i>	The sun-set

*Têmpo de séga, or da acéifa*      The harvest  
*Têmpo de vindima*                      The vintage

Das Estaçõens do Têmpo.                      *Of the Seasons.*

*A primavera*                                  The spring  
*O verão*    The summer  
*O outôno*                                      Autumn  
*O invérno*                                      Winter

Os Días da Semâna.                      *The Days of the Week.*

*Domíngo*    Sunday  
*Segúnda féira*                                  Monday  
*Térça féira*                                      Tuesday  
*Quárta féira*                                      Wednesday  
*Quinta féira*                                      Thursday  
*Séxta féira*                                      Friday  
*Sábado*    Saturday

Dos Méses.                                      *Of the Months.*

*Janéiro*    January  
*Feveréiro*    February  
*Márço*    March  
*Abril*    April  
*Máyo*    May  
*Júnho*    June  
*Júlho*    July  
*Agósto*    August  
*Setémbro*    September  
*Outúbro*    October  
*Novémbro*    November  
*Dezémbro*    December

Días Sântos.                                      *Holy-Days of the Year.*

*Dia de A'nnu bom*                              New Year's Day  
*Dia de Réys, a Epiphanta*                  Twelfth Day  
*A Candelária*                                      Candlemas Day



<i>Purificação</i>	The Purification
<i>O Entrúdo</i>	The Carnival, or Shrovetide
<i>Quárta feira da Cinzas</i>	Ash Wednesday
<i>A Quarésma</i>	The Lent
<i>Annunciaçãõ</i>	Lady day in March
<i>As Quátro Témporas</i>	The Ember Weeks
<i>A Semána santa</i>	The Holy Week
<i>Domingo de Ramos</i>	Palm Sunday
<i>Quárta feirá de Trevas</i>	Wednesday before Easter
<i>Quinta feira de Endoénças</i>	Maunday Thursday, the last Thursday in Lent
<i>Sésta feira da Paixãõ</i>	Good Friday
<i>Páscoa da Resurreyçãõ</i>	Easter Day
<i>Assumpçãõ de N. S<sup>a</sup>.</i>	Lady-Day in harvest
<i>As Rogaçóens, or Ladainhas</i>	Rogation Week
<i>Ascensãõ</i>	The Ascension
<i>Pentecóste</i>	The Pentecost, or Whitsun- tide
<i>Dia do Córpo de Déos</i>	Corpus Christi Day
<i>Dia de S. Joãõ</i>	Midsummer Day
<i>Dia de S. Pédro</i>	Lammas Day
<i>Dia de tódos os Santos</i>	All Saints Day
<i>Dia dos Finádos</i>	All Souls
<i>Dia de S. Martínho</i>	Martinmas
<i>Dia de Natál</i>	Christmas Day
<i>Vigília, or véspera</i>	The eve
-----	
<i>Da Igréja e Dignidádes Ecclesiásticas.</i>	<i>Of the Church and Ecclesiastical Dignities.</i>
<i>A náve</i>	The aisle of the church
<i>Zimbório</i>	The dome
<i>Pináculo</i>	Pinnacle
<i>Córo</i>	The choir
<i>Capélla</i>	The chapel
<i>Estánte</i>	A reading desk, or chorister's desk
<i>Sacristia</i>	The vestry
<i>Campanário, or tórre dos sinos</i>	The belfry, or steeple
<i>Síno</i>	The bell
<i>Badálo</i>	The clapper of the bell
<i>Pia</i>	The font
<i>Hysópe</i>	A sprinkler

<i>Confessionário</i>	A confession seat
<i>Tribuna</i>	A tribune, or gallery
<i>Cemitério</i>	A church-yard, a burying-place
<i>Carneiro</i>	A charnel
<i>Altár</i>	An altar
<i>Frontal</i>	An antependium
<i>Pállo</i>	A canopy
<i>Toalha do altár</i>	The altar cloth
<i>Missal</i>	A missal, a mass-book
<i>Sotana</i>	A cassock
<i>Sobrepelliz</i>	A surplice
<i>Roquete</i>	A short surplice, a bishop's surplice
<i>O pápa</i>	The pope
<i>Hum cardeal</i>	A cardinal
<i>Hum patriarca</i>	A patriarch
<i>Hum arcebispo</i>	An archbishop
<i>Hum bispo</i>	A bishop
<i>Hum legádo</i>	A legate
<i>Vice legádo</i>	A vice-legate
<i>Hum núncio</i>	A nuncio
<i>Hum preládo</i>	A prelate
<i>Hum commendadór</i>	A commander
<i>Hum abbáde</i>	An abbot
<i>Huma abbadéssa</i>	An abbess
<i>Hum priór</i>	A prior
<i>Hum reitór</i>	A rector
<i>Beneficiádo</i>	Beneficed clergyman, or incumbent
<i>Fráde, or religiôso</i>	A friar
<i>Coróa</i>	A shaven crown
<i>Hum guardião</i>	A guardian
<i>Hum definidór</i>	A definitor
<i>Hum provinciál</i>	A provincial
<i>Hum gerál</i>	A general
<i>Hum vigário</i>	A vicar
<i>Hum vigário gerál</i>	A vicar-general
<i>Hum deão</i>	A dean
<i>Hum arcediágo</i>	Archdeacon
<i>Diacono</i>	Deacon
<i>Subdiácono</i>	A sub-deacon
<i>Hum cónego</i>	A canon
<i>Arcipreste</i>	Arch-priest
<i>Hum clérigo</i>	A priest

<i>Capellão</i>	A chaplain
<i>Hum esmolér</i>	An almoner
<i>Hum párroco</i>	A curate
<i>Benefício simples</i>	Sinecure
<i>Fréira</i>	A nun
<i>Hum prégadoŕ</i>	A preacher, or lecturer
<i>Sacristão, or sancristão</i>	A sexton, a vestry-keeper
<i>Menino do córo</i>	A singing boy

Nômes das cōusas que geralmênte se comem.

*Names of things most usually eaten.*

<i>Paõ</i>	Bread
<i>A'goa</i>	Water
<i>Vinho</i>	Wine
<i>Cárne</i>	Meat, or flesh
<i>Péixe</i>	Fish
<i>Cárne cozida</i>	Boiled meat
<i>Cárne açada</i>	Roast meat
<i>Hum bocádo de páõ</i>	A mouthful of bread
<i>Hum pastél</i>	A pye
<i>Sópa</i>	Soup
<i>Cáldo</i>	Broth
<i>Saláda</i>	A sallad
<i>Mólho</i>	Any kind of sauce to dip in, provoking appetite
<i>Frúta</i>	Fruit
<i>Queijo</i>	Cheese
<i>Manteíga</i>	Butter

Do Serviço de huma Mêsá.

*Of the Covering of the Table.*

<i>A mêsá</i>	The table
<i>Húma cadéira</i>	A chair
<i>A toálha da mêsá</i>	The table-cloth
<i>Toálha de maõs</i>	A towel
<i>Hum guardanápo</i>	A napkin
<i>Húma fáca</i>	A knife
<i>Hum gárfo</i>	A fork
<i>Húma colhér</i>	A spoon
<i>Hum práto</i>	A plate
<i>Hum saleíro</i>	A saltseller
<i>Galhéta do vinágre</i>	A vinegar-bottle, or cruet
<i>Galhéta do azeite</i>	A cruet, or vial for oil

<i>Talhér</i>	A cruet-stand
<i>Assucaréiro</i>	Sugar-basin
<i>Bayxélla</i> ou <i>serviço de práta</i>	A set of silver plate
<i>Húma cubérta</i>	A cover
<i>Práto, guardanápo, fáca, gárfo, colhér (túdo júnto)</i>	A course
<i>Járro</i>	The ewer
<i>Húma bacia</i>	A basin
<i>Hum cópo</i>	A glass
<i>Húma garráfa</i>	A bottle
<i>Húma táça</i>	A cup
<i>Castiçal</i>	A candlestick
<i>Véla</i>	A candle
<i>Tesóuras de espevitár</i>	Snuffers
<i>Húma sálva</i>	A salver
<i>Húma escudélla</i>	A porringer
<i>Césto pára pór o páo</i>	A bread-basket
<i>Donzélla</i>	A dumb-waiter
<i>Faquéiro</i>	A case for knives
<i>Lóuça de Bárro</i>	Earthen ware
<i>Lóuça de estânho</i>	Pewter

## Do Comêr, e Bebêr.

*Of Eating and Drinking.*

<i>Váca</i>	Beef
<i>Carnéiro</i>	Mutton
<i>Vitélla</i>	Veal
<i>Cordéiro</i>	Lamb
<i>Gallínha</i>	Hen, a fowl
<i>Gálo</i>	Cock
<i>Perú</i>	A turkey
<i>Almóndegas</i>	Force meat balls
<i>O jantar</i>	The dinner
<i>Almóço</i>	Breakfast
<i>Céa</i>	Supper
<i>Merénda</i>	The afternoon's luncheon
<i>Consoáda</i>	A light supper, as upon a fast-day
<i>Banquéte</i>	An entertainment, a banquet
<i>Fóme</i>	Hunger
<i>Séde</i>	Thirst
<i>Fastío</i>	A loathing
<i>Páó</i>	Bread



<i>Pão frésco, or pão mólle</i>	New bread
<i>Pão quênte</i>	A hot loaf
<i>Pão de tôda farinha</i>	Common bread
<i>Pão branco, or pão alvo</i>	White bread
<i>Arrôz</i>	Rice
<i>Pão de rála</i>	Brown bread
<i>Pão de ceváda</i>	Barley bread
<i>Pão de centéo</i>	Rye bread
<i>Pão de avéa</i>	Oaten bread
<i>Pão de milho miúdo</i>	Millet bread
<i>Pão de milho gránde, ou de maiz</i>	Indian corn bread
<i>Pão lévedo</i>	Leavened bread
<i>Pão ásmo</i>	Unleavened bread
<i>Biscóuto</i>	Biscuit
<i>Migálha de pão</i>	A crumb of bread
<i>Fatía de pão</i>	A slice of bread
<i>Códea de pão</i>	A crust of bread
<i>Mássa</i>	Dough
<i>Tórta</i>	A tart
<i>Róscá</i>	Bread made like a roll
<i>Estofádo</i>	Stewed meat
<i>Fiámbre</i>	Cold meat
<i>Cárne assáda sôbre grêlhas</i>	Broiled meat
<i>Cárne frita</i>	Fried meat
<i>Picádo, or cárne picáda</i>	Sausage meat
<i>Javalí, or pórcó montéz</i>	A wild boar
<i>Presúnto</i>	Ham, gammon of bacon
<i>Pórcó</i>	Pork
<i>Cabrito</i>	Kid
<i>Toucínho</i>	Bacon
<i>Hum lómbó</i>	A loin
<i>Maôs de carneiro</i>	Sheep's trotters
<i>Fressúra, or forçúra</i>	A pluck
<i>Cachóla de porco</i>	A pig's head
<i>Lingúíça, or lingóíça</i>	A sausage
<i>Chouríço de sângue de pórcó</i>	Black-pudding
<i>Fricassé</i>	A fricassee
<i>Fígado</i>	Liver
<i>Léite</i>	Milk
<i>Náta</i>	Cream
<i>Sóro</i>	Whey
<i>Requeijão</i>	A kind of new cheese
<i>Coalháda</i>	Curdled milk

<i>ovo</i>	An egg
<i>Gémma do ovo</i>	The yolk of an egg
<i>Clára do ovo</i>	The white of an egg
<i>ovo frésco</i>	A new-laid egg
<i>ovo mólle</i>	A soft egg
<i>ovo dúro</i>	A hard egg
<i>ovo assádo</i>	A roasted egg
<i>ovo galládo</i>	An egg with a chicken in it
<i>óvos reáes</i>	Sweet eggs spun out like hairs
<i>óvos escalfádos</i>	Poached eggs
<i>óvos fritos</i>	Fried eggs
<i>óvos mexidos, e fritos</i>	An amlet
<i>Bolinhólo</i>	A fritter
<i>óvas de peixe</i>	The roes of fish
<i>Dóces</i>	Sweetmeats
<i>Conféitos</i>	Comfits
<i>Marmeláda</i>	Marmalade

---

O que se A'ssa.

*Hum capão*  
*Húma fránga*  
*Hum frángo*  
*Pómbos*  
*Pómbro trocáz*

*Gallinhóla*  
*Húma espécie de gallinhóla pequena áqualos Castelhános chamaõ galineta ciéga*

*Perdíç*  
*Tórdo*  
*Faisáõ*  
*Faisaõsínho*  
*Hum leitáõ*  
*Veádo*  
*Hum coélko*  
*Láparo*  
*Lébre*  
*A'dem*  
*Gánso, or o mácho da ádem*  
*Páta*  
*Páto*

---

*That which is roasted.*

A capon  
A pullet  
A chicken  
Pigeons  
A wood culver, or wood-pigeon  
A woodcock  
A snipe

A partridge  
A thrush  
A pheasant  
A pheasant-powt  
A roasting-pig  
A stag  
A rabbit  
A young coney  
A hare  
A duck  
A drake  
Goose [goose  
Gander, the male of the

*Calhândra*  
*Codorniz*

A sky-lark  
A quail

## De outros Pássaros.

*Of other Birds.*

*A'guia*  
*A'guia nova*  
*Abutre*  
*Abestrús*  
*Esmerilhaõ*  
*Gavião*  
*Mócho*  
*Falcão*  
*Falcão que ainda não vóa*  
*Gerifálte*  
*Sácre*  
*Garça*  
*Melharúco*  
*Garçeta*  
*Milhãno, or milhãfre*  
*Córvo*  
*Grálha*  
*Grálho*  
*Alvéloa or rabéta*  
*Canário*  
*Pintacilgo*  
*Mérlo*  
*Tentilhãõ*  
*Rouxinól*  
*Verdelhãõ*  
*Papagáyo*  
*Péga*  
*Estorninho, or zorzál*  
*Francélho*  
*Mócho*  
*Corúja*  
*Morcégo*  
*A've noctúrna, cómo mélo,*  
*que máma as cábras*  
*O francolím*  
*Búfo*  
*Cercéta*  
*Córvo morinho*

An eagle  
An eaglet  
A vulture  
An ostrich  
A merlin  
A sparrow-hawk  
The horned owl  
A falcon  
A jass-hawk  
A ger-falcon  
A saker, a saker-hawk  
A heron  
Tomtit  
A little heron  
A kite  
A crow, or raven  
A rook  
A jack-daw  
A wag-tail  
A canary-bird  
A gold-finch  
A black-bird  
A chaffinch  
A nightingale  
A green-bird  
A parrot  
A magpie  
A starling  
A hobby, a musket  
Owl  
A screech owl  
A bat  
A goat milker  
  
A godwit, a moor-cock  
A night crow, or raven  
A teal  
A cormorant

<i>Gaiivóta</i>	A moor-hen, or gull
<i>Gaiivão</i>	A martlet, or martin, a kind of swallow
<i>Andorinha</i>	A swallow
<i>Mergulhão</i>	A dive, or didapper
<i>Marréca</i>	A wild-duck
<i>Picânço</i>	A wren, a little bird
<i>Taralhão</i>	A kind of ortolan
<i>Pavão</i>	A peacock
<i>Pavão</i>	A pea-hen
<i>Arára</i>	A macaw
<i>Pardál</i>	A sparrow
<i>Róla</i>	A turtle-dove
<i>Alcyón</i>	A king's fisher
<i>Cegónha</i>	A stork
<i>Cúco</i>	A cuckow
<i>Císne</i>	A swan
<i>Pintarróxo</i>	A red robin
<i>Gróu</i>	A crane
<i>Pavoncino</i>	A lapwing
<i>Pelicão</i>	A pelican
<i>Tarambóla</i>	A plover
<i>Písco</i>	A bull-finch, or red-tail

Para os Días de Péixe, ou de Jejum.

*For Fish Days, or Fast Days.*

*Sópa de ervas, &c.*

Soup meagre, or lenten pottage

*Péixe*

Fish

*Péixe do már*

Sea-fish

*Péixe do río, ou da ágoa doce*

Fresh-water fish

*Sável*

A shad

*Anchóva*

An anchovy

*Anguía, or Enguía*

An eel

*Bárbo*

A barbel

*Lúcio*

A pike, or jack

*Cárpe*

A carp

*Síba*

A cuttle

*Lúla*

A calamary

*Cábra*

The miller's thumb

*Goráz*

A rochet, or roach

*Cóngro*

A conger [the gilt head

*Douráda*

Dorado, St. Peter's fish, or



<i>Linguádo</i>	A sole
<i>Lagósta</i>	A lobster
<i>Bordálo</i>	A sturgeon; some call it shad-fish
<i>Múgem</i>	A mullet
<i>Rodoválo</i>	A byrt or turbot
<i>Sáda</i>	A sort of little mackarel
<i>Caválla</i>	A mackarel
<i>Sardinha</i>	A pilchard
<i>Bacalhão</i>	Dry cod
<i>Arrénque</i>	A herring
<i>Voadó</i>	A flying-fish
<i>Arrénque de fumo</i>	A red herring
<i>Arrénque com óvas</i>	A hard-rowed herring
<i>Pescáda</i>	A kind of cod fish
<i>Cadó</i>	A gudgeon
<i>Ostra</i>	An oyster
<i>Lampréa</i>	A lamprey
<i>Lampréa pequéna</i>	A lampern
<i>Pórcó marinho</i>	A porpoise
<i>Pólvo</i>	Pourcontrell or many-feet
<i>Pérca</i>	Perch
<i>Tínca</i>	A tench
<i>Trúta</i>	A trout
<i>Atúm</i>	A tunny-fish
<i>Salmaõ</i>	A salmon
<i>Carmaraõ</i>	A shrimp, or pawn
<i>Caranguéjo</i>	A crab
<i>Améijoa</i>	A cockle
<i>Ervilhas</i>	Pease
<i>Fávas</i>	Beans
<i>Espináfres</i>	Spinage
<i>Alcachófras</i>	Artichokes
<i>Espárgo</i>	Asparagus
<i>Cóuve</i>	Cabbage, colewort
<i>Repólho</i>	Summer cabbage
<i>Nábos</i>	Turnips
<i>Grélos de cóuve</i>	Sprouts
<i>Cóuve créspe</i>	Curled colewort
<i>Couve Flór</i>	Cauliflower
<i>Beldroégas</i>	Purslane
<i>Cenóuras</i>	Carrots
<i>Célgas, or acélgas</i>	Beets
<i>Tomátes</i>	Love-apples

Para temperár o Comêr.

*To season Meat with.*

<i>Sál</i>	Salt
<i>Pimênta</i>	Pepper
<i>Pimentão</i>	Cayan pepper
<i>Azéite</i>	Oil
<i>Vinagre</i>	Vinegar
<i>Mostárda</i>	Mustard
<i>Crávo da India</i>	Cloves
<i>Canêla</i>	Cinnamon
<i>Lourêiro</i>	Laurel
<i>Alcapárras</i>	Capers
<i>Cogumêlos</i>	Mushrooms
<i>Túbara da terra</i>	Truffles
<i>Cebólas</i>	Onions
<i>Ourégaõ</i>	Organy
<i>Fúncho</i>	Fennel
<i>Cebolínhas</i>	Young onions
<i>A'lho</i>	Garlick
<i>Laránjas</i>	Oranges
<i>Limóens</i>	Lemons
<i>Pinhôens</i>	The kernels of a pine-apple
<i>Perreil</i>	Wild parsley
<i>Sálsa</i>	Garden parsley
<i>Orteláã</i>	Mint
<i>Aipo</i>	Cellery
<i>A'lho pórró</i>	Leek
<i>Coêntro</i>	Coriander
<i>Açafrám</i>	Saffron
<i>Comínhos</i>	Cummins

Para Saláda.

*For a Salad.*

<i>Almeiraõ</i>	Wild succory
<i>Almeiraõ hortêense, or en- dúvia</i>	Endive
<i>Alface</i>	Lettuce
<i>Chicória</i>	Succory
<i>Agriôens</i>	Water cresses
<i>Mastrúços or mastúrços</i>	Cresses
<i>Cerefólio</i>	Chervil
<i>Rábaõ</i>	Raddish root

## Para Sombremêsa.

Maçaãs  
 Péras  
 Péra bergamóta  
 Pécegos  
 Camoêza  
 Albricóque  
 Ceréjas  
 Ceréjas de sacco  
 Ginjas  
 Ginja garrafál

Laránju da Chína  
 Uvas  
 Pássas de úva  
 Uva espím  
 Fígos  
 Fígos lámpos

Améixas  
 Pássas de améixas  
 Amóras de çarça, or de  
 sylva  
 Amóras quenácem de húma  
 sorte de sylva ténra  
 Amóras que nácem da  
 amoréira

Marmélos  
 Romããs  
 Líma  
 Azeitónas  
 Améndoas  
 Nésperas  
 Melão  
 Melancia, or balancia  
 Castánhas  
 Nózes  
 Aveláns  
 Morángos  
 Medróinho

Támara

## For the Dessert.

Apples  
 Pears  
 A bergamot pear  
 Peaches  
 A pippin  
 Apricot  
 Cherries  
 Hard cherries  
 Sour cherries  
 A very large sort of cherry,  
 the fruit of the dwarf  
 cherry-tree  
 China-orange  
 Grapes  
 Raisins  
 Gooseberries  
 Figs  
 The first figs that come in  
 May  
 Plums  
 Prunes  
 Blackberries  
 Raspberries  
 Mulberries  
 Quinces  
 Pomegranates  
 A lime  
 Olives  
 Almonds  
 Medlars  
 A melon  
 Water-melon  
 Chesnuts  
 Walnuts  
 Hazel nuts  
 Strawberries  
 A sort of fruit they have in  
 Portugal like a straw-  
 berry, said to intoxicate  
 A date

<i>Fístico</i>	A pistache-nut
<i>Alfarróba</i>	A carob
<i>Bolóta</i>	A sweet acorn
<i>Sórva</i>	Service
<i>Açofeifa, or maçã de ná- fega</i>	A jubub
<i>Dóces</i>	Sweet-meats

---

 Das Árvores e Arbústos.

---

 Of Trees and Shrubs.

<i>Damasqueiro</i>	An apricot-tree
<i>Amendoeira</i>	An almond-tree
<i>Cerejeira</i>	A cherry-tree
<i>Castanhêiro</i>	A chesnut-tree
<i>Cidreira</i>	A citron-tree
<i>Sorveira</i>	A service-tree
<i>Palmêira</i>	A palm-tree
<i>Figueira</i>	A fig-tree
<i>Marmelêiro</i>	A quince-tree
<i>Macêira</i>	An apple-tree
<i>Macêira da náfega</i>	A jubub-tree
<i>Roméira</i>	A pomegranate-tree
<i>Limoêiro</i>	A lemon-tree
<i>Amorêira</i>	A mulberry-tree
<i>Olivêira</i>	An olive-tree
<i>Nesperêira</i>	A medlar-tree
<i>Laranjeira</i>	An orange-tree
<i>Múrta</i>	Myrtle
<i>Nogueira</i>	A walnut-tree
<i>Zambujêira</i>	A wild olive-tree
<i>E'ra</i>	Ivy
<i>Pecegueiro</i>	A peach-tree
<i>Rosêira</i>	A rose-bush
<i>Ameixieira</i>	A plum-tree
<i>Perêira</i>	A pear-tree
<i>Rosmaninho</i>	Rosemary
<i>Pinheiro</i>	A pine-tree
<i>Giêsta</i>	Broom

---

 Dos Reptis, e Animáes am-  
píbios.

---

 Of Reptiles and Amphi-  
bious Creatures.

<i>Minhóca</i>	An earth-worm
<i>Serpênte</i>	A serpent



<i>Serpente com ázas</i>	A flying serpent
<i>A'spide</i>	An asp
<i>Cobra</i>	A snake
<i>Cobra de cascavél</i>	A rattle-snake
<i>Víbora</i>	A viper
<i>Lagarto</i>	A lizard
<i>O'sga</i>	An evet, eft, or newt
<i>Alacráo</i>	A scorpion
<i>Crocodílo</i>	A crocodile
<i>Jacaré, or crocodílo da America</i>	An alligator
<i>Castór</i>	A beaver
<i>Cágado</i>	A land tortoise
<i>Lóntra</i>	An otter

---

 Dos Inséctos.

---

 Of Insects.

<i>Aránha</i>	A spider
<i>Formíga</i>	A pismire or ant
<i>Caracól</i>	A snail
<i>Ráã</i>	A frog
<i>Sápo</i>	A toad
<i>Ouçãõ</i>	Hand-worm
<i>Escaravélho</i>	A beetle
<i>Carúncho</i>	Wood-worm
<i>Piólho, or lagarta da hortaliça</i>	Caterpillar
<i>Cigárta</i>	Grasshopper
<i>Borboléta</i>	A butterfly
<i>Gríllo</i>	A cricket
<i>Piólho</i>	A louse
<i>Piólho ládro</i>	Crab-louse
<i>Léndeã</i>	A nit
<i>Púlga</i>	A flea
<i>Mósca</i>	A fly
<i>Persovéjo</i>	A bug
<i>Carrapáto</i>	A tick
<i>Gafanhóto</i>	A locust
<i>Polilha, or tráça</i>	Moth
<i>Vésã, or abespora</i>	A wasp
<i>Abélha</i>	A bee
<i>Zãngo, or Zangãõ</i>	A drone
<i>Tavaõ</i>	An ox fly
<i>Bóy de Déos.</i>	A lady-bird
<i>Mosquíto</i>	A gnat

## Graos de Parentesco.

## Degrees of Kindred.

<i>Páy</i>	Father
<i>Máy</i>	Mother
<i>Avó</i>	Grandfather
<i>Avó</i>	Grandmother
<i>Bisavó</i>	Great grandfather
<i>Bisavó</i>	Great grandmother
<i>Filho</i>	Son
<i>Filha</i>	Daughter
<i>Irmão</i>	Brother
<i>Irmã</i>	Sister
<i>Primogénito</i>	The eldest son
<i>O filho mais moço</i>	The youngest son
<i>Tio</i>	Uncle
<i>Tia</i>	Aunt
<i>Sobrinho</i>	Nephew
<i>Sobrinha</i>	Niece
<i>Primo</i>	Cousin
<i>Prima</i>	A female cousin
<i>Primo com irmão</i>	The male first cousin
<i>Prima com irmã</i>	The female first cousin
<i>Cunhado</i>	Brother-in-law
<i>Cunhada</i>	Sister-in-law
<i>Méyo irmão</i>	Half-brother
<i>Sógro</i>	Father-in-law
<i>Sógra</i>	Mother-in-law
<i>Padrásto</i>	A step-father
<i>Madrásta</i>	A step-mother
<i>Enteádo</i>	A step-son
<i>Enteáda</i>	A step-daughter
<i>Génro</i>	A son-in-law
<i>Nóra</i>	A daughter-in-law
<i>Néta</i>	A grand-daughter
<i>Néto</i>	A grand-son
<i>Bisnéto</i>	A great grand-son
<i>Bisnéta</i>	A great grand-daughter
<i>Consórte, masc. and fem.</i>	A consort
<i>Marido</i>	Husband
<i>Molhér</i>	Wife
<i>Irmão gémeo</i>	A twin-brother
<i>Coláço, or irmão de leite</i>	A foster-brother
<i>Bastardo</i>	A bastard
<i>Compádre</i>	A male-gossip

<i>Comádre</i>	A female gossip
<i>Afilhádo</i>	A god-son
<i>Afilháda</i>	A god-daughter
<i>Padrinho</i>	A god-father
<i>Madrinha</i>	A god-mother
<i>O parénte</i>	A male relation
<i>A parénte</i>	A female relation
<i>Parénte por afinidáde, or consanguinidade</i>	A kin, a relation either of affinity or consanguinity

Dos differêntes Géneros de  
Estádo de hum Hómem,  
ou de húma Molhér, e das  
súas Qualidádes,

*Of the Conditions of Man  
and Woman, as well as  
of their Qualities.*

<i>Hum hómem</i>	A man
<i>Húma molhér</i>	A woman
<i>Hum hómem de idade</i>	An aged man
<i>Húma molhér de idade</i>	An aged woman
<i>Hum vélho</i>	An old man
<i>Húma vélha</i>	An old woman
<i>Hum móço, ou mancébo</i>	A young man
<i>Húma raparíga</i>	A girl
<i>Hum amánte</i>	A lover
<i>Húma amíga</i>	A mistress
<i>Húma criança, ou menino</i>	A child, a little child
<i>Hum rapáz</i>	A boy
<i>Hum rapazinho</i>	A little boy
<i>Húma menina</i>	A little girl
<i>Húma donzélha</i>	A maiden
<i>Húma vírgem</i>	A virgin
<i>A'mo</i>	A master
<i>A'ma</i>	A mistress
<i>Criádo</i>	A male-servant
<i>Criáda</i>	A female-servant
<i>Cidadão</i>	A citizen
<i>Rústico</i>	A countryman
<i>Hum estrangeiro</i>	A stranger, or foreigner
<i>Hum viúvo</i>	A widower
<i>Húma viúva</i>	A widow
<i>Hum herdéiro</i>	An heir
<i>Húma herdéira</i>	An heiress
<i>Soltéiro</i>	A bachelor
<i>Estádo de soltéiro</i>	Bachelorship

<i>Hómem casádo</i>	A married man
<i>Molhér casáda</i>	A married woman
<i>Molhér que está de parto</i>	A lying-in woman
<i>Déstro</i>	Dexterous
<i>Agúdo</i>	Sharp
<i>Recatádo</i>	Cautious
<i>Astúto, or velháco</i>	Cunning, sly, crafty
<i>Espérto, or vívo</i>	Sprightly
<i>Dóudo</i>	Mad
<i>Malicióso</i>	Malicious
<i>Tímido</i>	Fearful
<i>Valeróso</i>	Brave
<i>Tónto</i>	Stupid
<i>Embustéiro</i>	Deceitful
<i>Grosséiro</i>	Clownish
<i>Bem criádo</i>	Well-bred
<i>Cortéz</i>	Courteous
<i>Jústo</i>	Just
<i>Desavergonhádo</i>	Impudent
<i>Impertinénte</i>	Impertinent
<i>Importúno</i>	Troublesome
<i>Descuidádo</i>	Careless
<i>Temerário</i>	Rash
<i>Constánte</i>	Constant
<i>Devóto</i>	Devout
<i>Diligénte</i> [sivo]	Diligent
<i>Misericordióso, or compas-</i>	Merciful
<i>Paciénte</i>	Patient
<i>Ambicióso</i>	Ambitious
<i>Cobiçoso</i>	Covetous
<i>Sobérbo</i>	Proud
<i>Cobárde</i>	Coward
<i>Lisonjéiro</i>	A flatterer
<i>Golóso</i>	Glutton
<i>Desleál</i>	Treacherous
<i>Desagradecido</i>	Ungrateful
<i>Inhumáno</i>	Inhumane
<i>Insolénte</i>	Insolent
<i>Luxurióso</i>	Lewd
<i>Teimóso</i>	Positive, stubborn
<i>Preguiçoso</i>	Slothful
<i>Pródigo</i>	Prodigal
<i>Molheréngo</i>	Given to women
<i>Atrevido</i>	Bold
<i>Alégre</i>	Merry



<i>Que tem ciúmes</i>	Jealous
<i>Adúltero</i>	Adulterer
<i>Salteador</i>	A highwayman
<i>Matador</i>	A murderer
<i>Murmurador</i>	A censurer
<i>Calumniador</i>	A calumniator
<i>Feiticéiro</i>	A sorcerer
<i>Traidór</i>	A traitor
<i>Malvado</i>	Wicked
<i>Rebélde</i>	A rebel
<i>Pérfido</i>	Perfidious
<i>Bóbo</i>	A buffoon
<i>Mentiróso</i>	A liar
<i>Altivo</i>	Haughty
<i>Có.xo</i>	Lame of the legs
<i>Estropeádo das mãos</i>	Lame of the hands
<i>Cégo</i>	Blind
<i>Môuco or súrdo</i>	Deaf
<i>Canhóto, or esquérdo</i>	Left-handed
<i>Múdo</i>	Dumb

---

Dos Moradores de húma  
Cidade.

---

*Of the Inhabitants of a  
City.*

<i>Fidalgo</i>	A nobleman
<i>Nóbre</i>	A gentleman
<i>Mecánico</i>	A mechanic
<i>Tendéiro</i>	A shop-keeper
<i>Mercador, or hómem de ne- gócio</i>	Merchant, or tradesman
<i>O vúlgo, or a plébe</i>	The mob
<i>Canálha, or a máis vil gênte da plébe</i>	The rabble
<i>Officiál</i>	A workman, a man that labours with his hands
<i>Jornaleiro</i>	A journeyman
<i>Ouríves</i>	A silver-smith
<i>Ouríves do búro</i>	A gold-smith
<i>Livréiro</i>	A book-seller
<i>Impressór</i>	A printer
<i>Barbéiro</i>	A barber
<i>Mercador de séda</i>	A mercer
<i>Mercador de pánno</i>	A woollen-draper

<i>Mercadór de pânno, de linho, e roupas da India, or fanqueiro</i>	A linen-draper
<i>Alfayáte</i>	A tailor
<i>Alfayáte remendão</i>	Botcher
<i>Costureira,</i>	A sempstress
<i>Chapeleiro, or Sombreiréiro</i>	A hatter
<i>Sapatéiro</i>	Shoemaker
<i>Remendão (sapatéiro)</i>	A cobbler
<i>Ferréiro</i>	A blacksmith
<i>Alveitár</i>	Farrier
<i>Cerralheiro</i>	A locksmith
<i>Parteira</i>	A midwife
<i>Médico</i>	A physician
<i>Charlatão</i>	A quack
<i>Cirurgiám, orurgiãõ</i>	A surgeon
<i>Tira dentes</i>	A tooth-drawer
<i>Selleiro</i>	A sadler
<i>Carpenteiro</i>	A carpenter
<i>Pioneiro, or gastadór (in an army)</i>	A pioneer
<i>Padéiro</i>	A baker
<i>Carniceiro</i>	A butcher
<i>Fruteiro</i>	A fruiterer
<i>Molher que vénde verdúras ou ortaligas</i>	A herb woman
<i>Pasteleiro</i>	A pastry-cook
<i>Taverneiro, or vendeiro</i>	A vintner
<i>Cervejeiro, or o que faz cerveja</i>	A brewer
<i>Estalajadeiro</i>	An inn-keeper
<i>Bofarinhéiro</i>	A pedlar
<i>Relojoeiro</i>	A watch-maker
<i>Pregoeiro</i>	A crier
<i>Joyéiro, or joyalheiro</i>	A jeweller
<i>Boticário</i>	An apothecary
<i>Vidraceiro</i>	A glazier
<i>Carvoeiro</i>	A coal-man
<i>Jardineiro</i>	A gardener
<i>Letrado</i>	A lawyer
<i>Procuradór</i>	A solicitor
<i>Advogado</i>	An advocate, or a pleader
<i>Juíz</i>	A judge
<i>Carcereiro</i>	A gaoler
<i>Carrásco</i>	A hangman

*Marióla*

A porter

## Os cinco Sentidos.

*The five Senses.**A vista*

The sight

*O ouvido*

The hearing

*O olfacto*

The smell

*O gósto*

The taste

*O tácto*

The feeling

As Pártes do Côrpo Hu-  
mano.*The Parts of the Human  
Body.**Cabêça*

The head

*Miólos, or cérebro*

The brains

*Toutiço*

The hinder part of the head

*Tésta*

The forehead

*Molleira*

The mould of the head

*Fóntes*

The temples

*Orélha*

The ear

*Cartilagem*The gristle, *or* cartilage*Tímpano*

The drum of the ear

*Sobrancelha*

Eye-brow

*Pálpebras, or Capéllas dos  
óhos*

The eye-lid

*Pestânas*

The eye-lashes

*Lagrimál*

The corner of the eye

*Álvo do ólho*

The white of the eye

*Meninas dos óhos*

The eye-balls

*Nariz*

The nose

*Maçã do rosto.*

The ball of the cheeks

*Véntas*

The nostrils

*Sépto, or diaphragmo do  
nariz*

The gristle of the nose

*A póna do nariz*

The tip of the nose

*A bóca*

The mouth

*Os dentes*

The teeth

*A gengiva*

The gum

*A língua*

Tongue

*Padár, paladár, or céo da  
bóca*The roof, *or* palate of the  
mouth*Queixáda*

The jaw

*A bárba*

The chin

<i>As bárbas</i>	The beard
<i>Bigódes</i>	Whiskers
<i>O pescóço</i>	The neck
<i>A núca</i>	The nape of the head
<i>A gargánta</i>	The throat
<i>Séyo</i>	The bosom
<i>Téta</i>	The pap
<i>Péito</i>	The breast
<i>Bico de péito</i>	The nipple
<i>Estómago</i>	The stomach
<i>Costélas</i>	The ribs
<i>Embigo</i>	The navel
<i>Barríga</i>	The belly
<i>Verilha</i>	The groin
<i>O bráço</i>	The arm
<i>O cotovélo</i>	The elbow
<i>Sobáco, or sováco</i>	The arm-pit
<i>A mão</i>	The hand
<i>Púlso</i>	The wrist
<i>A páлма da mão</i>	The palm of the hand
<i>Os dédos</i>	The fingers
<i>O dédo polegár</i>	The thumb
<i>O dédo mostradó</i>	The fore-finger
<i>Dédo do méyo</i>	The middle-finger
<i>Dédo annulár</i>	The ring-finger
<i>Dédo menino, or mínimo</i>	The little-finger
<i>Póntas dos dédos</i>	The tips, or tops of the fingers
<i>Júntas, e nós dos dédos</i>	The joints, and knuckles of the fingers
<i>Dédo do pé</i>	A toe
<i>A únha</i>	The nail
<i>As cóstas</i>	The back
<i>Os ómbros</i>	The shoulders
<i>Ilhárgas</i>	The sides
<i>As nádegas</i>	The buttocks
<i>Cóxa</i>	The thigh
<i>Joélho</i>	The knee
<i>Barríga da pérna</i>	The calf of the leg
<i>Espinháço</i>	The ridge-bone of the back
<i>Tornozélo</i>	The ankle
<i>O pé</i>	The foot
<i>Sóla do pé</i>	The sole of the foot
<i>O coraçáó</i>	The heart
<i>Os bófes</i>	The lungs



<i>O figado</i>	The liver
<i>O bácio</i>	The spleen
<i>Os rins</i>	The kidneys
<i>A bóca do estômago</i>	The pit of the stomach
<i>As tripas</i>	The guts
<i>O fêl</i>	The gall
<i>A mãe</i>	The womb
<i>Bexiga</i>	The bladder
<i>Sângue</i>	The blood
<i>Cúspo</i>	Spittle
<i>Ourina</i>	Urine
<i>Excremento</i>	Dung
<i>Suór</i>	Sweat or perspiration
<i>Môncó or rânho</i>	Mucus
<i>Lágrima</i>	Tear
<i>Carépa, or cáspa</i>	Scurf

## Dos Vestidos.

## Of Cloaths.

<i>Hum vestido</i>	A suit of cloaths
<i>Cabelleira</i>	A wig
<i>Cravata</i>	A cravat or neckcloth
<i>Chapéó</i>	A hat
<i>Abas do chapéó</i> [ <i>chapéó</i> ]	The brims
<i>Cordaõ, ou fita, para o</i>	A hatband
<i>Barréte</i>	A cap
<i>Capóte</i>	A cloak
<i>Gibáõ</i>	A doublet
<i>Véstia, or coléte</i>	A waistcoat
<i>Camisa</i>	A shirt
<i>Casaca</i>	A coat
<i>Casacáõ</i>	A great coat
<i>Calçôens</i>	Breeches
<i>Cerôulas</i>	Drawers
<i>Méas, or méyas</i>	Stockings
<i>Méas de cabrestilho</i>	Stirrup stockings
<i>Lígas</i>	Garters
<i>Sapátos</i>	Shoes
<i>Chinélas</i>	Slippers
<i>Bótas</i>	Boots
<i>Fivélas</i>	Buckles
<i>Esporas</i>	Spurs
<i>Púnhos</i>	Ruffles
<i>Tálím, or taly</i>	A shoulder-belt

<i>Boldrié</i>	A sword-belt
<i>Expáda</i>	A sword
<i>Lúvas</i>	Gloves
<i>Cinta</i>	A girdle
<i>Lénço</i>	Handkerchief
<i>Lénço para o pescóço</i>	A neck-handkerchief
<i>Samárra, or pellóte do cámpo</i>	A shepherd's jacket

Para Molhéres.

For Women.

<i>Camísa de molhéres</i>	A shift, or smock
<i>Toucádo</i>	A head-dress
<i>Sáya</i>	A petticoat
<i>Mantilha</i>	A little cloak women wear on their heads
<i>Mánto</i>	A mantle, a kind of cloak women wear in Portugal, covering their head and the upper part of their body
<i>Aventál</i>	An apron
<i>Bracelétes</i>	Bracelets
<i>Anél</i>	Ring
<i>Bríncos</i>	Ear-rings
<i>Léque</i>	A fan
<i>Penteadór</i>	A combing cloth
<i>Toucadór</i>	A toilet, a dressing table
<i>Sináes</i>	Patches to wear on one's face
<i>Espélho</i>	A looking-glass
<i>Regálo</i>	A muff
<i>Espartilho</i>	Stays
<i>Pénte</i>	A comb
<i>Alfinétes</i>	Pins
<i>Tesóura</i>	A pair of scissars
<i>Dedál</i>	A thimble
<i>Agúlha</i>	A needle
<i>Fío</i>	Thread
<i>Fío de pérolas</i>	A necklace of pearls
<i>Polvílhos</i>	Powder
<i>Jóyas</i>	Jewels
<i>Cór</i>	Paint
<i>Palíto</i>	A tooth-pick
<i>Róca</i>	A distaff
<i>Fúso</i>	The spindle
<i>Almofadínha para alfinétes</i>	Small pincushion

<i>Agúlha de toucár</i>	Bodkin
<i>Fitas</i>	Ribbons
<i>Fichú (sórte de lenço para o pescóço)</i>	A necklace
<i>Tenazínhas</i>	Nippers
<i>Pendéntes</i>	Bob, or pendant
<i>Palatina</i>	Tippet
<i>Guárda infánte, or Guard infante</i>	Farthingale, or hoop
<i>Véo</i>	Veil
<i>Rénda</i>	Lace
<i>Bílros</i>	Bobbins
<i>Bílros feitos de ósso</i>	Bones
<i>A'goa da rainha de Ungría</i>	Hungary water
<i>A'goa de chéiro</i>	Scented water
<i>Justílho</i>	Bodice

---

Os dôze Signos Celêstes.

---

*The twelve Celestial Signs.*

<i>A'ries</i>	Aries, or the ram
<i>Tóuro</i>	The bull
<i>Gémini or Géminis</i>	The twins
<i>Cáncer</i>	The crab
<i>Leaõ</i>	The lion
<i>Virgem</i>	The virgin
<i>Líbra</i>	The balance
<i>Escorpião</i>	The scorpion
<i>Sagitário</i>	The archer
<i>Capricórnio</i>	The goat
<i>Aquário</i>	The water-bearer
<i>Peixes</i>	The fishes

---

De húma Cása e do que lhe pertênce.

---

*Of a House, and all that belongs to it.*

<i>Cása</i>	A house
<i>Alicérse</i>	Foundation
<i>Paréde</i>	A wall
<i>Tabíque</i>	A light brick-wall
<i>Páteo, or Pátio</i>	A court, or yard
<i>Andár, or sobrádo</i>	A floor
<i>Facháda</i>	The front
<i>Janélla</i>	A window

<i>Abóbada</i>	A vault
<i>As escadas</i>	The stairs
<i>Degrãos</i>	Steps
<i>Telhádo</i>	A tiled roof
<i>Télhas</i>	Tiles
<i>Ladrílhos, or tijólos</i>	Bricks
<i>Sála, or quarto</i>	A room
<i>Antecâmara</i>	Antichamber
<i>Sála</i>	A hall
<i>Técto</i>	A roof
<i>Alcova</i>	An alcove
<i>Balcão</i>	A balcony
<i>Gabinéte</i>	Closet
<i>Almário</i>	A cupboard
<i>Guárda-roupa</i>	Wardrobe
<i>Adéga</i>	A cellar
<i>Cozinha</i>	A kitchen
<i>Despênsa</i>	A pantry
<i>Cheminé</i>	A chimney
<i>Cavallaríça</i>	The stable
<i>Gallinhéiro, or casa das gallínhas</i>	A hen-house
<i>Poléiro</i>	A hen-roost
<i>Jardín</i>	A garden
<i>Necessária</i>	Water-closet
<i>Casa de jantar</i>	A dining-room
<i>Quárto de cáma</i>	Bed-chamber
<i>Andár rénte da Rua</i>	A parlour
<i>Pórta</i>	The door
<i>Postígo</i>	A wicket
<i>Limínár, or lumiár</i>	The threshold
<i>Clara bóia</i>	Sky-lights
<i>Algeróz</i>	The gutter tile
<i>Beíras, or ábas do telhádo</i>	The eaves
<i>A couceira da pórta</i>	The hinges
<i>Fechadúra</i>	A lock
<i>Cadeádo</i>	A padlock
<i>Ferrólho</i>	The bolt
<i>Trânca da pórta</i>	The bar of a door
<i>Cáno da chave</i>	The pipe of a key
<i>Chave méstra</i>	A master-key
<i>Guárdas da fechadúra</i>	The wards of a lock
<i>Palhetão da chave</i>	Key bit
<i>Vidráça</i>	The glass of a window
<i>Escada feita a carracól</i>	A winding stair-case



<i>Escáda secréta</i>	Back-stairs, a private stair- case
<i>Viga</i>	A beam
<i>Paréde méstra</i>	The main wall
<i>Parédes méyas</i>	The party walls
<i>Arca</i>	Chest
<i>Cáma</i>	Bed
<i>Sobrecéo da cáma</i>	The bed's tester
<i>Cortinas da cáma</i>	Bed curtains
<i>Lençóes</i>	Sheets
<i>Cabecéira da cáma</i>	The bed's head
<i>Péz da cáma</i>	Bed's feet
<i>Cólcha</i>	Counterpane, a quilt
<i>Colcháõ</i>	A matrass
<i>Cobertór</i>	A blanket
<i>Cobertór de felpa</i>	A rug
<i>Cama de Armaçaõ</i>	Bedstead
<i>Travesseíro</i>	A pillow
<i>Tapéte</i>	A carpet
<i>Tapeçaria</i>	Tapestry
<i>Pedernéira</i>	A flint
<i>I'sca</i>	Tinder
<i>Mécha</i>	Match
<i>Enxergaõ</i>	A straw-bed
<i>Estéira</i>	A mat
<i>Cáens da cheminé</i>	Hand-irons
<i>Fólles</i>	Bellows
<i>Tenázes</i>	Tongs
<i>Férra</i>	A shovel
<i>Abáno, or abanadór</i>	Fire-pan
<i>Panélla</i>	A pipkin
<i>Tésto</i>	The pot-lid
<i>A'za da panélla</i>	The ear of a pot, or pipkin
<i>Férro para atiçar o lume</i>	A poker
<i>Escumadéira</i>	A skimmer
<i>Colhér gránde</i>	A ladle
<i>Caldéira</i>	A kettle
<i>Sertáã, or frigidéira</i>	A frying pan
<i>Coadór</i>	A cullender, or strainer
<i>Gréllhas</i>	Gridiron
<i>Rálo</i>	A grater
<i>Espéto</i>	A spit
<i>Almofariz</i>	A mortar wherein things are pounded
<i>Maõ do almofariz</i>	A pestle

<i>Redôma</i>	A vial
<i>Bálde</i>	A bucket, or pail
<i>Sabaõ</i>	Soap
<i>Rodilha</i>	A kitchen towel
<i>Esfregãõ</i>	A dish-clout
<i>Fôrno</i>	Oven
<i>Pá do fôrno</i>	The peel of the oven
<i>Vascúlho para alimpár o fôrno</i>	A maukin, a coal-rake to make clean an oven
<i>Furinha</i>	Meal-flour
<i>Trinchãnte</i>	A carver
<i>Mordômo</i>	A steward
<i>Escudeiro</i>	A valet-de-chambre
<i>Camareiro mór</i>	A chamberlain
<i>Escóva</i>	A brush
<i>Vassóura</i>	A broom
<i>Despenseiro</i>	A steward
<i>Págem</i>	A page
<i>Lacáyo</i>	A footman
<i>Cocheiro</i>	A coachman
<i>Cocheira</i>	A coach-house
<i>Móço dos cavállos, ou da estrebaria</i>	A groom
<i>Copeiro</i>	A butler
<i>Escudeiro de húma fidálga</i>	A lady's gentleman usher
<i>A'mo, ou senhór da casa</i>	The master of the house
<i>A'ma, ou senhóra da casa</i>	The mistress of the house
<i>Grímpa</i>	Weather-cock

---

Côres.

---

Colours.

<i>Bránco</i>	White
<i>Azúl</i>	Blue
<i>Azúl celéste</i>	Sky-colour
<i>Azúl ferréte</i>	Dark blue
<i>Azúl cláro</i>	Light blue
<i>Cór de camúrça</i>	Light yellow
<i>Amarélo</i>	Yellow
<i>Cór de rósa</i>	Rosy colour
<i>Cór de páalha</i>	Straw colour
<i>Vérde</i>	Green
<i>Cór de vérde mar, ou vérde cláro</i>	Sea-green

<i>Cór vermélha, or Incarnada</i>	Red colour
<i>Cór vermélha muito viva, or carmín</i>	Carmine, a bright red colour
<i>Cór de carne</i>	Flesh colour
<i>Cór carmesín</i>	Crimson red
<i>Cór negra, or preta</i>	Black colour
<i>Cór de mél</i>	A dark yellow
<i>Fúrta córes</i>	A deep changeable colour
<i>Cór viva</i>	A lively and gay colour
<i>Cór triste</i>	A dull colour
<i>Cór escúra</i>	A dark colour
<i>Cór carregada</i>	A deep colour
<i>Cór de fogo</i>	Fire colour
<i>Párido</i>	Grey
<i>Cór de cinza</i>	Ash colour
<i>Escarláta</i>	Scarlet
<i>Leonádo</i>	Tawney
<i>Cór de laranja</i>	Orange colour
<i>Cór de azeitóna</i>	Olive colour
<i>Róxo</i>	Purple, violet
<i>Róxo, or cór de auróra</i>	Aurora colour

*Róxo* sometimes signifies *red* or *rosy colour*; particularly in poetry, as in *Camóens*, Canto I. Stanza 82.

*Para que ao Portuguéz se lhe tornásse,  
Em róxo sángue a ágoa, que bebésse.*

---

 Animáes.

---

 Beasts.

<i>Bésta doméstica</i>	Tame beast
<i>Bésta bráva</i>	A wild beast
<i>Bésta de carga</i>	A beast of burthen
<i>Bésta de sélla</i>	A beast for the saddle
<i>Gádo</i>	Cattle
<i>Gádo grósso</i>	Great cattle
<i>Gádo miúdo</i>	Small cattle
<i>Rebángo</i>	A flock
<i>Manáda de gádo grósso</i>	A herd of big cattle
<i>Tóuro</i>	A bull
<i>Bezerra</i>	Heifer
<i>Bezéro</i>	A calf, a steer, a young bullock
<i>Bóy</i>	An ox

<i>Búrro</i>	An ass
<i>Búrra</i>	A she-ass
<i>Pórco</i>	A hog, <i>or</i> pig
<i>Pórca</i>	A sow
<i>Fáca</i>	A young mare, also a nag
<i>E'goa</i>	A mare
<i>Cría</i>	A foal, a filly
<i>Pótra</i>	A colt, <i>or</i> young horse
<i>Cavállo</i>	A horse
<i>Cavállo anaõ</i>	A nag
<i>Cavállo de pósta</i>	A post-horse
<i>Garranhão, or cavállo de lançaménto</i>	A stallion
<i>Cavállo de aluguel</i>	A hackney-horse
<i>Cavállo de côche</i>	A coach-horse
<i>Cavállo que anda de chôuto</i>	A jolting-horse
<i>Cavállo pequeno que serve para senhôras</i>	A palfrey
<i>Cavállo que toma o freio entre dentes</i>	A horse that champs the bit
<i>Cavállo ríjo da bóca</i>	A hard-mouthed horse
<i>Cavállo dóce de freio</i>	A tender-mouthed horse, one that easily submits to the curb
<i>Cavállo que tem boa bóca</i>	A horse that will eat any thing
<i>Cavállo que tropéssa</i>	A stumbling-horse
<i>Cavállo espantadiço</i>	A startling-horse
<i>Cavállo ardênte, or fogózo</i>	A fiery horse
<i>Cavállo que morde e dá cúuces</i>	A biting and kicking horse
<i>Cavállo rebellão</i>	An untamed horse
<i>Cavállo que não sóffre áncas</i>	A horse that will not carry double
<i>Cavállo mal mandádo</i>	A restive horse
<i>Cavállo de albárda</i>	A pack-horse
<i>Cavállo de cárro</i>	A cart-horse
<i>Cavállo de sélla</i>	A saddle-horse
<i>Cavállo de corrér</i>	A race-horse
<i>Cavállo de guérria</i>	A war-horse
<i>Cavállo ajaezádo</i>	A horse with all his furniture
<i>Cavállo de Barbaría</i>	A Moorish horse, a barb
<i>Cavállo capádo</i>	A gelding
<i>Cavállo sem ser capádo</i>	A stone-horse
<i>Cavállo que dá aos fólles</i>	A broken-winded horse



<i>Cavállo quatrálvo</i>	A horse that has four white feet
<i>Cavállo alazão</i>	A sorrel horse
<i>Cavállo báio</i>	A bay horse
<i>Cavállo castânho</i>	A chesnut-coloured horse
<i>Cavállo báio e castânho</i>	A chesnut bay
<i>Cavállo rocím</i>	A worthless nag, a poor jade
<i>Cavállo remendádo</i>	A dapple horse
<i>Cavállo ruão or rússu porcelláno</i>	A dapple-grey horse
<i>Cavállo que sóffre ancas</i>	A double horse
<i>Cavállo trotao</i>	A trotting-horse
<i>Cavállo que sérve para andar a caça</i>	A hunter
<i>Cavállo que ánda de furta passo</i>	A pad, an easy-paced horse
<i>Cão</i>	A dog
<i>Cão de quinta</i>	A house-dog
<i>Cão de caça</i>	A hound
<i>Cão de ágoa</i>	A water spaniel
<i>Cão de gádo</i>	A shepherd's dog
<i>Cão de móstra, pôdenço, or perdigueiro</i>	A setting dog
<i>Cão de fila</i>	A great cur, a mastiff dog
<i>Cão sacadó</i>	A dog tumbler
<i>Cão de búscá</i>	A finder
<i>Alão</i>	A bull-dog
<i>Gálgo</i>	A greyhound
<i>Cão para caçar rapózas e lôntras</i>	A terrier
<i>Cachorrinho</i>	A little puppy, a whelp
<i>Cachorrinho de frálda</i>	A lap-dog
<i>Cachórro</i>	A little dog
<i>Mácho, or múlo</i>	A he-mule
<i>Múla</i>	A she-mule
<i>Córça</i>	A she-deer, a doe
<i>Córça de tres ánnos</i>	A spade
<i>Córça de dous ánnos</i>	A pricket
<i>Córça</i>	A wild buck
<i>Córça ou córa de hum áнно</i>	A fawn
<i>Gámo</i>	A fallow deer
<i>Veádo</i>	A stag
<i>Cábra montéz</i> [nos]	A wild she-goat
<i>Veádo gránde de cinco áнно</i>	A hart
<i>Doninha</i>	A weasel

<i>Teixúgo, or texúgo</i>	A badger
<i>Gáto de agália</i>	A civet cat
<i>Doninha de rábo múi fel- púdo a módo de rapósa</i>	A squirrel
<i>Elephánte</i>	An elephant
<i>Foínha, fuínha</i>	A marten, <i>or</i> martern
<i>Armínho</i>	An ermin
<i>Ouríço cachetro</i>	An hedge-hog
<i>Arganáz</i>	A dormouse
<i>Ráto</i>	A rat
<i>Rapósa</i>	A fox
<i>Lóbo</i>	A wolf
<i>Ráta da Índia</i>	A rat of India, of the big- ness of a cat
<i>Foraõ</i>	A ferret
<i>Toupeira</i>	A mole
<i>Leaõ</i>	A lion
<i>Leõa</i>	A lioness
<i>Zibelina</i>	A musk cat
<i>Leopárdo</i>	A leopard
<i>U'rso</i>	A he-bear
<i>U'rsa</i>	A she-bear
<i>U'rso pequéno</i>	A bear's cub
<i>Tigre</i>	A tiger
<i>Pórco montéz</i>	A wild bear

---

Das Cõusas do Câmpo.

*Of Country Affairs.*

<i>Câsa do câmpo, or quinta</i>	A country house
<i>Câsa de lavradór</i>	A farm-house
<i>Quinteiro</i>	A husbandman, a farmer
<i>Boyeiro</i>	A herdsman, he that ploughs with oxen, <i>or</i> tends them
<i>Vaqueiro</i>	A cow-keeper
<i>Porqueiro</i>	A swine-herd
<i>Pastór</i>	A shepherd
<i>Surráõ</i>	A scrip, <i>or</i> small bag
<i>Cajádo</i>	A shepherd's hook
<i>Pastóra</i>	A shepherdess
<i>Herdáde</i>	A great <i>or</i> large field, a wide arable ground
<i>Hortoláõ</i>	A gardener
<i>Hortalíça</i>	All sorts of herbage
<i>Cavadór</i>	A ploughman

<i>Vinhateiro</i>	A vine-dresser
<i>Lavrador</i>	A farmer, one who cultivates ground, whether his own <i>or</i> another's
<i>Páastos</i>	Feeding ground, pasture, sheep-walk
<i>Arádo</i>	A plough
<i>Férro do arádo</i>	The plough-share
<i>Rábo do arádo</i>	The plough-handle
<i>Abegaõ, or official que faz arados</i>	A plough-wright
<i>Aguilháda</i>	A goad
<i>Ensinho</i>	A rake
<i>Gráde</i>	A harrow
<i>Semeadór</i>	A sower
<i>Roçadór</i>	A weeder
<i>Fóuce roçadóra</i>	A weeding-hook
<i>Fóuce</i>	A scythe <i>or</i> sickle
<i>Podáõ</i>	A pruning-knife
<i>Segadór</i>	A reaper, <i>or</i> mower, harvest man
<i>Mangoál</i>	A flail
<i>Forcádo</i>	A prong to cast up sheaves of corn with
<i>Caçadór</i>	A huntsman
<i>Pescadór</i>	A fisherman
<i>Régo</i>	A furrow
<i>Terra que fica levantáda entre dõus régos</i>	A balk, <i>or</i> ridge of land between two furrows
<i>Outeiro</i>	A hill
<i>Mõnte, or montánha</i>	A mountain
<i>Válle</i>	A valley
<i>Lagóa</i>	A moor, fen, <i>or</i> marsh, a standing water, but sometimes dry
<i>Lágo</i>	A lake <i>or</i> standing pool, but always full of water
<i>Ribeiro</i>	A brook, a stream of water, with a gentle <i>or</i> natural current
<i>Ribeirínho</i>	A rivulet, a streamlet
<i>Pláno, or plantície</i>	A plain
<i>Pénha, or rócha</i>	A rock
<i>Penháscó</i>	A great rock
<i>Desérto</i>	A desert <i>or</i> wilderness

<i>Despenhadeiro</i>	A precipice
<i>Bósque</i>	A wood
<i>Bósque pequeno</i>	A grove, or thicket
<i>Pedáço de chaõ sem árvores, dêntro de hum bósque</i>	A glade in a wood
<i>Pomár, or vergél</i>	An orchard
<i>Prádo,</i>	A meadow
<i>Ramáda</i>	A bower
<i>Fónte</i>	A fountain
<i>Trigo</i>	Wheat
<i>Trigo candial</i>	The best wheat
<i>Trigo bretánha</i>	Red wheat
<i>Centéo</i>	Rye
<i>Feráã</i>	Meslin, mixed corn, as wheat and rye, &c.
<i>Treméz</i>	The corn of three months growth
<i>Espélta</i>	Spelt
<i>Espiga</i>	Ear of corn
<i>Cabeça da espiga</i>	The grain at the top of the ear of corn
<i>Batnha, dônde sáhe a espí- ga depóis de formada</i>	The husk in which the ear of corn is lodged
<i>Legúmes</i>	Pulse
<i>Grãos de bico</i>	Spanish pease
<i>Lentilha</i>	A lentil
<i>Tramóço, or tremóço</i>	A lupine
<i>Feijóens</i>	French-beans
<i>Feijão sapáta, or bájes</i>	Kidney-beans
<i>Feijão fradinho</i>	A sort of small French beans with a black spot
<i>Chicharo</i>	Chicklings, a sort of peas
<i>Carréta</i>	A waggon
<i>Cárro</i>	A cart
<i>Róda</i>	A wheel
<i>Caímbas</i>	The felloes of the wheel
<i>E'ixo</i>	The axle-tree of a wheel
<i>Ráyo da róda</i>	The spoke of a wheel
<i>Currál de bóys</i>	An ox-stall
<i>Currál de ovéllhas</i>	A sheep-fold
<i>Currál de cábras</i>	A house for goats
<i>Chiqueiro de pórcos</i>	A hog's-sty
<i>E'erva</i>	Grass
<i>Trigo em érva</i>	Green corn
<i>Seára</i>	Standing corn



<i>Tárro</i>	A milk-pail
<i>Cincho</i>	A cheese-vat, to make cheese in
<i>Enxada</i>	A mattock, a hoe
<i>Enxadaõ, or alviaõ</i>	A mattock
<i>Cánga</i>	A yoke for oxen
<i>Congálhos</i>	The arms of the yoke used for oxen
<i>Sébe</i>	A hedge or fence
<i>O que faz sébes</i>	Hedger
<i>Fouce roçadoura de que úzaõ para fazer sébes</i>	Hedging-bill.
<i>Témpe de tosquia e a festa que nelle fazem os rústicos</i>	The sheep-shearing, the time of shearing sheep
<i>Cantiga dos segadôres des- póis de acabádo o témpe da séga</i>	Harvest home
<i>Sárça</i>	A bramble
<i>Máta</i>	A thicket, a forest
<i>Máto</i>	A heath
<i>Leira, or taboleiro</i>	A bed in a garden
<i>Chórro de água</i>	A water-spout
<i>Veréda</i>	A path
<i>Rásto</i>	A track
<i>Césta</i>	A basket
<i>Cabáz</i>	A frail, a pannier
<i>Cabána, or choupána</i>	A cottage, a hut
<i>Cabáço</i>	A dry hollow gourd used to keep seeds in

---

Côusas pertencêntes à  
Guerra.

---

*Things relating to War.*

<i>Serviço or vida militar</i>	Warfare
<i>Militár or servir na guerra</i>	To serve in the army
<i>Artilharia, artilharia, or artilheria [haria</i>	Artillery
<i>Canháõ, or peça de artil-</i>	A cannon
<i>Canháõ de ferro</i>	Iron cannon
<i>Canháõ de brônze</i>	Brass cannon
<i>Alma do canháõ</i>	The mouth of a cannon
<i>Fogáõ do canháõ</i>	The touch-hole of a cannon
<i>Culátra do canháõ</i>	The breech of a cannon

<i>Botão, or extremidade da culatra</i>	The pummel
<i>Bálas encadeadas</i>	Chain-shots
<i>Bála de canhão</i>	A cannon-bullet, cannon-ball, <i>or</i> cannon-shot
<i>Carréta de canhão</i>	The carriage of a cannon
<i>Pólvora</i>	Gun-powder
<i>Méyo canhão</i>	A demi-cannon
<i>Canhão dobrado</i>	A double cannon
<i>Canhão pára batér húma praça</i>	A battering cannon
<i>Canhão de vinte e quatro</i>	A twenty-four pounder
<i>Calibre</i>	Caliber
<i>Carregár</i>	To load
<i>Escorvár</i>	To prime
<i>Fazér pontaria</i>	To level
<i>Petréchos, or munições de guerra</i>	Military stores
<i>Encravár húma péça</i>	To nail up a gun
<i>Descavalgár húma péça</i>	To dismount a gun
<i>Desparár</i>	To fire
<i>Tíro de péça</i>	A cannon shot
<i>Trém de artilharia</i>	The train of artillery
<i>Colubrina</i>	A culverin
<i>Falconéte</i>	A falconet
<i>Petárdo</i>	A petard
<i>Pedreiro</i>	A swivel gun, <i>pederero, or paterero</i>
<i>Bómba</i>	A bomb
<i>Bombárda</i>	A great gun, a bombard
<i>Morteiro</i>	A mortar-piece
<i>Granáda</i>	A grenade
<i>Espingárda</i>	A firelock
<i>Pistóla</i>	A pistol
<i>Carabina</i>	A carabine
<i>Mosquéte</i>	A musket
<i>Machadínha</i>	A battle-ax
<i>Lança</i>	A lance
<i>Alabárda</i>	An halbert
<i>Partasána</i>	A partizan
<i>Píque</i>	A pike
<i>Calár os píques pára resis-tír á cavalaria</i>	To present the pikes against the cavalry
<i>Alfänge</i>	Scymeter
<i>Espáda</i>	A sword

<i>Disembainhár a espáda</i>	To unsheath the sword
<i>Púnho da espáda</i>	The handle of a sword
<i>Maçãa da espáda</i>	The pommel of a sword
<i>Guarnição da espáda</i>	The hilt of a sword
<i>Fólha da espáda</i>	The blade of a sword
<i>Metér mão á espáda</i>	To clap one's hand on one's sword
<i>Matár</i>	To kill
<i>Ferir</i>	To wound
<i>Desbaratár</i>	To rout
<i>Saqueár</i>	To sack
<i>Punhál</i>	A poniard
<i>Bayonéta</i>	A bayonet
<i>Calár a bayonéta</i>	To fix the bayonets
<i>Capacéte</i>	A helmet
<i>Morrião</i>	A morrion
<i>Viséira</i>	The vizor of an helmet
<i>Gorjál, or góla</i>	The gorget
<i>Peito de armas</i>	A breast-plate
<i>Couráça</i>	A cuirass
<i>Espaldár</i>	The back-plate
<i>Cossoléte</i>	A corslet
<i>Broqué</i>	A buckler
<i>Escúdo</i>	A shield
<i>Adága</i>	Dagger, a short sword
<i>Sáya de máilha</i>	A coat of mail
<i>Réy de armas</i>	The king at arms, or king of heralds
<i>Aráuto</i>	A herald
<i>Generál</i>	A general
<i>Tenénte generál</i>	A lieutenant-general
<i>Sargénte mór de batalha</i>	A major-general
<i>Sargénte mór</i>	Major
<i>Sargénte</i>	A serjeant
<i>Mariscál, or marichál</i>	Marshal
<i>Méstre de câmpo generál</i>	Camp-master general
<i>Coronél</i>	Colonel
<i>Méstre de câmpo</i>	Camp-master
<i>Coronél de infantaria</i>	Colonel of foot
<i>Officiál de guérria</i>	An officer
<i>Brigadeiro</i>	Brigadier
<i>Tenénte coronél</i>	Lieutenant-colonel
<i>Ajudánte de sargénte mor</i>	Adjutant
<i>Ajudánte de tenénte de méstre de câmpo</i>	Aid de camp

<i>Capitão</i>	Captain
<i>Pósto de capitão</i>	Captaincy or captainship
<i>Tenente</i>	Lieutenant
<i>Corneta</i>	Cornet
<i>Alféres</i>	Ensign
<i>Bandeiras</i>	Colours
<i>Estandárte</i>	Standard
<i>Alféres de cavalaria que tráz o estandárte</i>	Standard-bearer
<i>Pagadór</i>	Pay-master
<i>Provedór des mantiméntos de húma armáda</i>	Purveyor
<i>Commissário</i>	Commissary
<i>Commissário geral</i>	Commissary-general
<i>Engenheiro</i>	Engineer
<i>Quartel mestre</i>	Quarter-master
<i>Cábo de esquadra</i>	Corporal
<i>Tambór, or caixa</i>	Drum
<i>Tambór or o que tóca tambór</i>	A drummer
<i>Baquétas</i>	Drum-sticks
<i>Cordéis de tambór</i>	Drum-strings
<i>Tóques do tambór</i>	The beats of a drum
<i>Tocár o tambór</i>	To beat a drum
<i>Alvoráda, or general</i>	The general, one of the beats of the drum
<i>Passar móstra</i>	To muster, to review forces
<i>Trombetéiro, or trombéta</i>	A trumpeter
<i>Pífano</i>	A fife or fife
<i>Sóldo</i>	Wages, or pay for soldiers
<i>Soldádo</i>	A soldier
<i>Soldádo que está de sentinella</i>	Soldier on duty
<i>Entrár de guarda</i>	To mount, or go upon the guard
<i>Sentinella</i>	Duty, centinel
<i>Rendér a guarda, sentinellas, &amp;c.</i>	To relieve the guard, &c.
<i>Blocár, or bloqueár</i>	To block up
<i>Infánte, or soldádo de pé</i>	A foot soldier
<i>Granadeiro</i>	Grenadier
<i>Bigódes</i>	Whiskers
<i>Dragaõ</i>	Dragoon
<i>Soldádo de cavállo</i>	Trooper, or horse-soldier
<i>Montár a cavállo</i>	To get on horseback



<i>Apear-se</i>	To alight
<i>Guárda da pessoa real, or</i> <i>archeiro</i>	Life-guard-man
<i>Couracéiro</i>	Cuirassier
<i>Mosquetéiro</i>	Musketeer
<i>Fuziléiro</i>	Fusilier
<i>Alabardeiro</i>	Halberdier
<i>Genisero</i>	Janissary
<i>Soldádo armádo com lança</i>	A spearman
<i>Soldádo que léva píque, or</i> <i>piqueiro</i>	A pikeman
<i>Besteiro, or soldádo que</i> <i>peléja com bésta</i>	Cross-bow-man
<i>Pionéiro</i>	A pioneer
<i>Minéiro, or minadór</i>	Miner
<i>Bombardeiro</i>	A bombardier
<i>O tiro da artilharía, or o</i> <i>espáço que a bala despa-</i> <i>rada córre; Alcance</i>	Gunshot, or the space to which a shot can be thrown
<i>Artilheiro</i>	Matross, also a gunner, <i>or</i> cannoneer
<i>A arte da artilharía</i>	Gunnery
<i>General de artilharía</i>	General of artillery
<i>Voluntário</i>	A volunteer
<i>Recrútas</i>	Recruits
<i>Exploradór, or corredór</i> <i>de exército</i>	Scout
<i>Espia</i>	Spy
<i>O que leva víveres ao exér-</i> <i>cito, or vivandéiro</i>	Sutler
<i>Soldádo que faz correrías</i>	A marauder, a soldier that goes a marauding
<i>Timbále or atabale</i>	Kettle-drum
<i>Infantería</i>	The infantry
<i>Cavalaría</i>	Cavalry
<i>Cavalaría ligéira</i>	Light-horse
<i>Vanguárda</i>	The vanguard
<i>Córpo de batálha</i>	The main body of an army
<i>Retaguárda</i>	The rear
<i>Córpo de resérva</i>	The corps de reserve
<i>Córpo de guárda</i>	The corps de guard
<i>Piquéte</i>	The piquets of an army, <i>or</i> piquet guard
<i>A'la</i>	The wing of an army
<i>Batalháõ</i>	Battalion

<i>Destacaméto</i>	Detachment
<i>Regiméto</i>	Regiment
<i>Companhia</i>	A company
<i>Esquadrão</i>	A squadron
<i>Mochila</i>	Knapsack
<i>Bagagem, or bagáge</i>	Baggage
<i>Batedôres do câmpo</i>	Discoverers
<i>Almazém, or armazém</i>	Magazines
<i>Murálias</i>	Walls
<i>Améa, ou améya</i>	A battlement
<i>Parapeito</i>	The parapet
<i>Castélllo</i>	A castle
<i>Fôrte</i>	A fort
<i>Fortaléza</i>	A fortress
<i>Fortificação</i>	Fortification
<i>Tôrre</i>	A tower
<i>Citadélla, or cidadélla</i>	A citadel
<i>Baluárte</i>	Bulwark
<i>Fileira</i>	A file
<i>Cortina</i>	A curtain
<i>Méya lúá</i>	Half moon
<i>Troneira</i>	A loop-hole
<i>Térra-pléno</i>	A platform of earth
<i>Rebelim, or revelim</i>	A ravelin
<i>Contrascárpa</i>	Counterscarp
<i>Barreira</i>	A barrier
<i>Falsabrága</i>	A faussbraye
<i>Fósso</i>	A ditch
<i>Guarita</i>	A centry-box
<i>Casamáta</i>	A casemate
<i>Corredôr, or estrada enco- bérta</i>	The covered way
<i>Cestôens</i>	Gabions
<i>Estacáda, or palissáda</i>	A palisade
<i>Redúto</i>	A redoubt
<i>Ataláya</i>	A watch tower
<i>Mánta, or Manteléte</i>	A mantelet, or cover for men from the shot
<i>Faxina</i>	Fascines
<i>Mina</i>	A mine
<i>Fazér voár a mína</i>	To spring a mine
<i>Trincheira</i>	A trench
<i>Abrir as trincheiras</i>	To open the trenches
<i>Câmpo</i>	Camp
<i>Viveres</i>	Provisions

<i>Bisóhno</i>	A new recruit
<i>Batálha</i>	A battle
<i>Dár batálha</i>	To give battle
<i>Escaramúça</i>	A skirmish
<i>Sítio, or cerco</i>	A siege
<i>Quartél</i>	A quarter
<i>Encamisáda</i>	A camisado
<i>Sortída</i>	A sally
<i>Batér</i>	To batter
<i>Brécha</i>	A breach
<i>Pontáõ</i>	A pontoon
<i>Escaláda</i>	An escalade
<i>Assálto</i>	An assault
<i>Dar assálto</i>	To storm
<i>Tomár por assálto</i>	To take by storm
<i>Chamáda</i>	The chamade
<i>Capitulár</i>	To capitulate
<i>Capitulaçáõ</i>	Capitulation
<i>Térgoas</i>	Truce
<i>Guarniçáõ</i>	Garrison
<i>Prebóste</i>	A provost
<i>Prebóste-generál</i>	A provost marshal
<i>Léva</i>	Levy
<i>Levantár soldádos, or fazér léva de génte</i>	To raise men, to levy, or raise soldiers
<i>Levantár o sítio</i>	To raise the siege
<i>Levantár o cámpo</i>	To decamp
<i>Assentár o cámpo</i>	To pitch one's camp
<i>Cámpo volánte</i>	A flying camp
<i>Campánha</i>	A campaign
<i>Metér-se em campánha</i>	To begin the campaign, to open the field
<i>Guerreár</i>	To war, to fight
<i>Péça de campánha</i>	A field-piece
<i>Forrágem</i>	A forage
<i>Quarteís de invérno</i>	Winter quarters
<i>Dar quartél</i>	To give quarter
<i>Aquartelár-se</i>	To take quarter
<i>Marchár</i>	To march
<i>Marchár com bandeíras despregádas</i>	To march with flying colours
<i>Tocár a recolhér</i>	To beat tap-tow
<i>Entregár húma práça</i>	To surrender a place
<i>Fila da vanguárda</i>	Front rank
<i>Fila do céntro</i>	Centre rank

<i>Fila da Rectaguárda</i>	Rear rank
<i>Diréita</i>	Right
<i>Esquérda</i>	Left
<i>Témpos</i>	Motions
<i>Exercício</i>	Exercise.
<i>Féchos</i>	Lock
<i>O Caõ or Perro da Arma</i>	Cock
<i>Crónha</i>	Butt
<i>A bóca da Arma</i>	Muzzle
<i>O cáno</i>	The barrel
<i>Varéta</i>	Ramrod
<i>Gatilho</i>	Trigger
<i>Pellotáõ</i>	Platoon
<i>Batalháõ</i>	Battalion
<i>A'la</i>	Wing
<i>Devisáõ</i>	Division
<i>Linha ou Fileira</i>	Line
<i>Caçadóres</i>	Riflemen
<i>Flânco</i>	Flank
<i>Estádo Mayór</i>	Staff
<i>Frénte</i>	Front
<i>Infantaria Ligeira</i>	Light infantry
<i>Regulaméntos</i>	Regulations

---

 Palávras de Comâdo.

---

 Military Words of Com-  
mand.

<i>Sentído</i>	Attention
<i>Armas ao Hombro</i>	Shoulder arms
<i>Descançár sobre as Armas</i>	Order arms
<i>Metér as Bayonétas</i>	Fix bayonets
<i>Apresentár as Armas</i>	Present arms
<i>Calár as Bayonétas</i>	Charge bayonets
<i>Descançár as Armas</i>	Support arms
<i>Tirár as Bayonétas</i>	Unfix bayonets
<i>Cruzár as Armas</i>	Pile arms
<i>Preparár</i>	Make ready
<i>Carregár</i>	Load
<i>Tirár o Cartúcho</i>	Handle cartridge
<i>Escorvár</i>	Prime
<i>Tirár as Varétas</i>	Draw ramrods
<i>Atuchár o Cartúcho</i>	Ram down cartridge
<i>Armas á Cara</i>	Present
<i>Fógo</i>	Fire



<i>Metér o cartúcho</i>	Cast about
<i>Fógo por pelotões</i>	Firing by platoons
<i>Fógo de Filas</i>	File firing
<i>Alto</i>	Halt
<i>Formár em linha</i>	To form in line
<i>Fógo obliquo</i>	Oblique firing
<i>Formár</i>	Form
<i>Márcha</i>	March
<i>Ordem cerráda</i>	Close order
<i>Desfilár</i>	To file
<i>Colúmna cerráda</i>	Close column
<i>Meia vólta á esquerda</i>	On your left backward wheel
<i>Voltár</i>	Wheel
<i>Avançár</i>	Advance
<i>Cerrár as Filéiras</i>	Close the ranks

---

 Navegação.

---

 Navigation.

<i>Navío</i>	A ship
<i>Não</i>	A large ship
<i>Não de guerra</i>	A line-of-battle ship
<i>Navío de carga, or mer-</i> <i>cantíl</i>	A merchant-ship, a mer- chantman
<i>Navío veléiro</i>	A very good sailer, <i>or a</i> ship that sails well
<i>Navío rancéiro</i>	A bad sailer
<i>Galé</i>	A galley
<i>Galeáça</i>	A galleass
<i>Galeão</i>	A galleon
<i>Galeóta</i>	A galliot, a small galley
<i>Comître</i>	The boatswain of a galley
<i>Fragáta</i>	A frigate
<i>Carráca</i>	A carrack
<i>Fústa</i>	A foist
<i>Pináça</i>	A pinnace
<i>Bárca de passágem</i>	A ferry-boat
<i>Bárca</i>	A boat
<i>Bárca</i>	A bark, great boat
<i>Canóa</i>	A canoe
<i>Gondóla</i>	Gondola, a small boat, much used in Venice
<i>Esquífe</i>	A skiff
<i>Chalúpa, or balándra</i>	A sloop
<i>Chalúpa pequéna</i>	A shallop

<i>Bergantim</i>	A brigantine, <i>or</i> brig
<i>Balsa</i>	A float
<i>Capitania</i>	The admiral's ship
<i>Almiranta</i>	The vice-admiral's ship
<i>Armada</i>	A fleet, a navy
<i>Fróta</i>	A fleet of merchant ships
<i>Esquadra</i>	A squadron, part of a fleet
<i>A bórdo</i>	On board
<i>Pópa</i>	The poop, stern, <i>or</i> steerage
<i>Próa</i>	The prow, <i>or</i> head
<i>Péças de próa para dar caça ao inimigo</i>	Chase guns
<i>Tartána</i>	A tartan
<i>Brulóte</i>	A fire-ship
<i>Falúa</i>	A felucca
<i>Batél, or bateira</i>	A small bark, a wherry
<i>Caravéla</i>	A caravel
<i>Sórte de patáxo pára ser- viço de húma não de guérria</i>	A tender
<i>Náo de linha</i>	A line-of-battle ship
<i>Guárda cósta</i>	A guard-ship
<i>Galeóta da quá l se lánçam as bómbas</i>	Bomb-ketch
<i>Navío que sérve pára an- dár a córso</i>	A cruiser
<i>Corsário</i>	A privateer
<i>Hýacte</i>	Yacht
<i>Navío de transporte</i>	A transport
<i>Náo da India Oriental</i>	East-India-man
<i>Náo da India Occidental</i>	West-India-ship
<i>Sórte de embarcação pe- quéna Hollandéza de hum só mastro</i>	A Dutch dogger
<i>Navío pára levár carvão</i>	A collier
<i>Embarçaçóens pequénas</i>	Small craft
<i>Embarcação, or bárco gránde que sérve pára levár fazéndas a bórdo</i>	A barge, a lighter
<i>Embarcação gránde, ou ca- ravéla, que sérve pára commerceár pélla cósta</i>	A coasting vessel
<i>Embarcação de avízo</i>	Advice-boat
<i>Paquète</i>	Packet-boat
<i>Bárco de pescár</i>	A fishing-boat
<i>Láncha</i>	Boat

<i>Rémos</i>	Oars
<i>Pá do rémo</i>	The blade of the oar
<i>Sentina</i>	The well
<i>Lástro, or lásto</i>	Ballast
<i>Lastár or lançar lástro ao navio</i>	To ballast a ship
<i>Mástro or árvore</i>	A mast
<i>Mástro gránde</i>	The main mast
<i>Mástro de mezéna</i>	The mizen mast
<i>Mástro do traquéte</i>	The fore mast
<i>Gurupés</i>	The bowsprit, or boltsprit
<i>Gávea</i>	The round-top, main-top, or scuttle of a mast
<i>Quilha</i>	The keel
<i>Vérga, or enténa</i>	A yard
<i>Laiz or extremidades das vérgas</i>	The yard-arm
<i>Práncas, que cóbrem os costados do navio da parte de fóra</i>	Side-planks, or side of a ship
<i>Véla *</i>	A sail
<i>Véla méstra, or a véla do mastro gránde</i>	The main sheet
<i>Véla da Gávea</i>	The main-top-sail
<i>Véla do joanéte do mástro gránde</i>	Main-top-gallant-sail
<i>Papafigos</i>	The mizen and fore-sail
<i>Mezéna</i>	Mizen-sail
<i>Gáta, or véla de cima da mezéna</i>	Mizen-top-sail
<i>Traquéte</i>	The fore-sail
<i>Velácho</i>	The fore-top-sail
<i>Joanéte do traquéte</i>	The fore-top-gallant-sail
<i>Cevadéira</i>	The sprit-sail
<i>Véla latína</i>	A shoulder-of-mutton sail
<i>Fazér força de véla</i>	To crowd the sail
<i>Mastaréos</i>	The topmasts, or top-gallant-masts
<i>Mastaréo da mezéna, or mastaréo da gáta</i>	Mizen-top-mast
<i>Portinhóla</i>	A port-hole
<i>Bandéiras</i>	The colours
<i>Flémulas or galhardetes</i>	Streamers, pendants

\* By *vela* is often meant the ship itself.

<i>Agulha de mareár</i>	The mariner's compass
<i>Bitácola</i>	Bittacle
<i>Costúras do navío</i>	The seams of a ship
<i>Léme</i>	Helm, <i>or</i> rudder
<i>Cána do léme</i>	The whip, <i>or</i> whip-staff
<i>Cubérta</i>	Deck
<i>Cubérta corrída</i>	Flush fore and aft
<i>Escotilhas</i>	The hatches ; scuttles
<i>Escotilhão</i>	A room by the hatches, to keep the provisions
<i>Castéllo de pópa</i>	The hind castle
<i>Castéllo de próa</i>	The fore castle
<i>Garrár a áncora</i>	To drive ; <i>or</i> when a ship drags her anchor
<i>Ancora</i>	The anchor
<i>Metér a áncora na láncha,</i> <i>or bóte depóis de levan-</i> <i>tála</i>	To boat the anchor
<i>Ancora de rebóque</i>	A kedger
<i>Ancora de esperánça</i>	Sheet anchor
<i>U'nhas da áncora</i>	The flocks of an anchor
<i>Argóla da áncora</i>	The ring of an anchor
<i>Estár a áncora a píque</i>	Is for the anchor to be a-peak
<i>Amárta</i>	A cable
<i>Picár, or cortár as amár-</i> <i>ras</i>	To cut the cables
<i>Sónda, or prúmo</i>	The sounding lead
<i>Cutélos</i>	Studding sails
<i>Maré</i>	The tide
<i>Bosína</i>	A speaking trumpet
<i>Preparár hum navío, de,</i> <i>vélas, córdas, &amp;c.</i>	To rig a ship
<i>Pilóto</i>	Pilot, <i>or</i> steersman
<i>Escrivão</i>	A purser
<i>Pilotágem</i>	Pilotage
<i>Cárta de mareár</i>	Sea-chart
<i>Capitão</i>	A captain
<i>Capitão tenénte</i>	First lieutenant
<i>Contraméstre</i>	A boatswain
<i>Marinheiro</i>	A sailor
<i>Camaróte</i>	A cabin
<i>Marinheiro que he camar-</i> <i>ada ou perténce ao mésmo</i> <i>rancho</i>	A messmate
<i>Torménta</i>	A tempest



<i>Borrásca</i>	A storm
<i>Bonança</i>	Fair weather
<i>Calmaria</i>	Calm
<i>Vénto em pópa</i>	The wind full a-stern, a forewind
<i>Navio arrasádo em pópa</i>	A ship that sails before the wind
<i>Derróta</i>	The course, or way of a ship
<i>Alár a bolína</i>	To sharp the main bowling, to haul up the bowling
<i>Ir pela bolína</i>	To tack upon a wind, sail upon a bowling
<i>Nó da bolína</i>	The bowling knot
<i>Barlavénto</i>	Windward
<i>Ganhár a barlavénto</i>	To get the wind
<i>Barlaventear, or deitár a barlavénto</i>	To ply to windward
<i>Sotavénto</i>	Leeward
<i>Escovéns</i>	Hawsers
<i>Escótas</i>	Tacks
<i>Veláme, córdas, e o máis que he necessário pára preparar hum navio</i>	Tackle, or tackling, the rigging of a ship
<i>Córda</i>	A rope
<i>Enxárcias</i>	Shrouds
<i>Arribár</i>	To put into a harbour
<i>Bombórdo</i>	Larboard
<i>Estibórdo</i>	Starboard
<i>Ló</i>	Loof
<i>Metér de ló</i>	To loof, or keep the ship nearer the wind
<i>Bómba</i>	A pump
<i>Dár á bómba</i>	To pump
<i>Bálde pára deitár ágoa na bómba</i>	Pump-can
<i>Escúma que sáhe da bómba depóis de ter tirádo a ágoa</i>	Pump-suck
<i>Navio, cúja ágoa se não póde tirár com a bómba</i>	A ship that is stoaked
<i>Mánga de cóuro por ónde sáhe a ágoa da bómba</i>	Pump-dale
<i>Bráço da bómba</i>	The pump handle
<i>Faról</i>	Light, lantern, or lighthouse
<i>Vénto</i>	Wind

Rósa da Agúlha, ou dos Vêntos.	<i>The Fly of the Mariner's Compass.</i>
Nórte	North
Nórte 4 <sup>a</sup> a nordéste	N. by E.
Nor nordéste	N. N. E.
Nordéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a nórte	N. E. by N.
Nordéste	N. E.
Nordéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a léste	N. E. by E.
Les nordéste	E. N. E.
Léste, 4 <sup>a</sup> a nordéste	E. by N.
Léste	East
Léste 4 <sup>a</sup> a suéste	E. by S.
Lés suéste	E. S. E.
Suéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a léste	S. E. by E.
Suéste	S. E.
Suéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a sul	S. E. by S.
Susuéste	S. S. E.
Sul 4 <sup>a</sup> a suéste	S. by E.
Sul	South
Sul 4 <sup>a</sup> a sudoéste	S. by W.
Susudoéste	S. S. W.
Sudoéste 4 <sup>a</sup> sul	S. W. by S.
Sudoéste	S. W.
Sudoéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a oéste	S. W. by W.
Oés sudoéste	W. S. W.
Oéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a sudoéste	W. by S.
Oéste	West
Oéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a noroéste	W. by N.
Oés noroéste	W. N. W.
Noroéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a oéste	N. W. by W.
Noroéste	N. W.
Noroéste 4 <sup>a</sup> a nórte	N. W. by N.
Nor noroéste	N. N. W.
Nórte 4 <sup>a</sup> a noroéste	N. by W.
Vênto travessaõ, or tra- vessia	Contrary wind
Dar a embarcaçãõ a travéz	To hull
Pairár	To ply to and again in one's station
Esporaõ	Beak
Colhér hum cábo	To coil a cable
Largár mais cábo	To pay more cable
Abrir ágoa	To leak, or spring a leak
Fazér agoáda	To take in fresh water

<i>Arpár hum navío</i>	To grapple a ship
<i>Fatêxa</i>	Grapple
<i>Pedáço de lóna breáda que se põem ao redór domásto e das bómbas para que a ágoa não penétre</i>	Tarpaulin
<i>Passadór</i>	A fidd, or pin of iron to open the strands of ropes
<i>Córda com que se prénde o bóte, or láncha á pópa do navío</i>	Boat rope, or gift-rope
<i>Apíto</i>	A boatswain's call
<i>Abadérnas</i>	Nippers
<i>Abíta</i>	Bits
<i>Emproár</i>	To steer right forward, to turn the prow straight forward
<i>Guínár o navío</i>	To yaw, or make jaws
<i>Parte superior, or máis álta da pópa de hum navío</i>	The tafferel
<i>Apagafanões</i>	Leech-lines
<i>Arreigádas</i>	Puttocks
<i>Briões</i>	Bunt lines
<i>Barredóuras</i>	Bow-studding-sails
<i>Bartidóuro</i>	Boat's skit
<i>Bastárdos</i>	Parrels
<i>Bigóta</i>	A dead-eye
<i>Botálos</i>	Studding-sail-booms
<i>Braceár</i>	To brace
<i>Bráços</i>	Braces
<i>Bragueíro, or vergueíro</i>	The rudder's rope
<i>Brandáes</i>	Back-stays
<i>Buçárdas</i>	Breast-hooks
<i>Cachólas</i>	Cheeks
<i>Cadáste</i>	Stand-post
<i>Cadernál</i>	A large block with more than one shive
<i>Cavérnas</i>	The floor-timbers
<i>Colhedóres</i>	Lines of the shrouds
<i>Compassár hum navío</i>	To trim a ship
<i>Cossóuros</i>	Trucks
<i>Cráca</i>	The foulness of the ship's bottom
<i>Cabrestante</i>	The capstan
<i>Dar cáça</i>	To chase

<i>Cúrvas</i>	The knees
<i>Mézas da guarnição</i>	Chain-wales
<i>Enbornáes</i>	Scupper-holes
<i>Poraõ</i>	The hold of a ship
<i>Máca</i>	Hammock
<i>Convéz</i>	Deck or quarter-deck
<i>Camaróte do cirurgiaõ</i>	Cockpit
<i>Fréte</i>	Freight
<i>Cárga</i>	Cargo
<i>Ordem que o capitaõ recébe para dár á véla</i>	Sailing orders
<i>A acçám de imbarcár se</i>	Embarkation
<i>Desembárque</i>	Landing
<i>Embárgo</i>	Embargo
<i>Ancorágem</i>	Anchorage
<i>Batálha navál</i>	Naval battle
<i>Caravéla mexeriqueira, ou de espía</i>	A ship for espial, or look out
<i>Arriár, or arreár</i>	To veer
<i>Arreár ás vélas</i>	To strike sail
<i>Arreár bandeira</i>	To strike the flag
<i>Levantár férro, levár áncoras, levar ferro, levar-se, or levar</i>	To weigh anchor
<i>Léva</i>	The action of weighing or taking up the anchor
<i>Boleár a peça</i>	To move a gun towards starboard or larboard
<i>Péça de léva</i>	The signal gun
<i>Rebocár, ou levár de rebóque</i>	To tow
<i>Fazér costúras</i>	To splice
<i>Passágem</i>	Passage
<i>Passageiro</i>	Passenger
<i>Viágem</i>	Voyage
<i>Navió cujo capitaõ tem cártas de represálias</i>	Letters of marque
<i>Querenár hum navío</i>	To careen a ship
<i>Breár as costúras do navío</i>	To pay the seams of a ship
<i>Dar á cósta</i>	To run a-ground or on shore
<i>Soluçár a náó</i>	Is for a ship to roll, or to float in rough water
<i>Naufragár</i>	To suffer a wreck, to be wrecked
<i>Naufrágio</i>	Shipwreck
<i>Patraõ, or méstre de náó</i>	Shipmaster



<i>Carpentéiro de navíos</i>	Shipwright
<i>Estaleiro</i>	Stocks
<i>Embarcár</i>	To ship
<i>Embarcár</i>	To go aboard, to take shipping
<i>Gruméte</i>	The meanest sort of sailors ; or servant to the sailors
<i>Rapáz que séve cómo móço do navio</i>	Ship-boy
<i>Rapáz que séve ao capitão</i>	A cabin-boy
<i>Calafáte</i>	A calker
<i>Calafetár hum navio</i>	To calk a ship
<i>Calaféto</i>	Oakham
<i>Arsenal, ou ribeira das náos</i>	An arsenal, a store-house, a dock-yard
<i>Emmasteár hum navio</i>	To fit a ship, or vessel, with masts
<i>Remár</i>	To row
<i>Remadór</i>	Rower
<i>Forçádo</i>	Galley-slave
<i>Despenseiro</i>	Steward
<i>Marinheiros, e toda a outra gente que pertence ao navio</i>	The crew of a ship
<i>Chúsma</i>	Crew of galley slaves
<i>Guarniçaõ da náo</i>	Marines, soldiers who serve on board of ships
<i>O sobrecárga do navio</i>	Supercargo
<i>Balestilha</i>	Cross-staff
<i>Quadránte</i>	Quadrant
<i>Outánte</i>	Hadley's quadrant
<i>De ré</i>	Aft
<i>Paravánte</i>	Fore
<i>Situaçaõ de húma côsta, ilha, &amp;c. a respeito de qualquér ótro lugar</i>	The bearing
<i>Quarenténa</i>	Quarantine
<i>Baliza</i>	Sea mark
<i>Lárga</i>	Large
<i>Amarár</i>	To bear off
<i>Caçar a véla</i>	To turn the sail to the wind side
<i>Caceár hum navio</i>	It is said of a ship that is hurried away from her course by strong winds, tides, &c.
<i>Lançar hum navio áo már</i>	To launch a ship

<i>Entrár com vénto frésco e bóm no póрто</i>	To bear in the harbour
<i>Bórdo</i>	Tack
<i>Bórdo, or bándá</i>	Broadside
<i>Navío de álto bórdo</i>	First rate man of war
<i>Cáça</i>	Chace
<i>Présá or tomadía</i>	Prize, or capture
<i>Estár de vergadálto</i>	To stand for the offing
<i>Véntos demonçaõ, ou geroes</i>	Trade winds
<i>Andár de consérva</i>	To keep company together, to sail under a convoy
<i>Dar, ou fazér hum bórdo</i>	To tack the ship, or tack about, or to bring her head about
<i>Estár á cápa, ou por-se á cápa</i>	To lie by at sea, to back the sails
—————	
Do Commércio, e do que lhe pertence.	<i>Of Trade, and of Things relating to it.</i>
<i>Cónta</i>	Account
<i>Cónta de vénda</i>	Account of sales
<i>Fazér húma cónta</i>	To cast up an account
<i>Pedír cóntas</i>	To call to an account
<i>Dar á cónta</i>	To pay on account
<i>Cónta corrénte</i>	Account current
<i>Dinheíro de contádo</i>	Ready money
<i>Fundos Publicos</i>	Stocks
<i>O que negocéa em comprár e vendér açcóens</i>	Jobber
<i>Ballânço</i>	Balance
<i>Fárdo</i>	Bale
<i>Báncó</i>	Bank
<i>Banqueíro</i>	Banker
<i>Québra</i>	Bankruptcy
<i>Falído, or quebrádo</i>	Bankrupt
<i>Ajúste, or concérto</i>	Bargain
<i>Tróca</i>	Barter
<i>Portadór</i>	Bearer
<i>Lançadór</i>	Bidder
<i>Létra de cámbio</i>	Bill of exchange, a draught
<i>Negociár húma létra de cámbio</i>	To negociate a bill of exchange
<i>Partída</i>	Parcel
<i>Conhecíméto</i>	Bill of lading

<i>Escritura de obrigaçãõ</i>	Bond, engagement
<i>Guárdalivros or o que em huma casa de negocio tem a seu cargo os livros</i>	Book-keeper
<i>Occupaçãõ, or negocio</i>	Business
<i>Comprador</i>	Buyer
<i>Dinheiro</i>	Cash
<i>Pôrte, or carréto</i>	Carriage
<i>Caxéiro or o que guárda a caixa</i>	A cashier, or cash-keeper
<i>Cénto</i>	Cent
<i>Certidaõ</i>	Certificate
<i>Câmbio</i>	Change, exchange
<i>Freguez</i>	Chap, chapman, or customer
<i>Góstos</i>	Charges
<i>Baráto</i>	Cheap
<i>Cáro</i>	Dear
<i>Rocibo da alfândega</i>	Clearance, or cocket
<i>Commissaõ</i>	Commission
<i>Mercancia</i>	Commodity
<i>Compromisso</i>	Compromise
<i>Consignaçãõ</i>	Consignment
<i>Consumo</i>	Consumption
<i>Conteúdo</i>	Contents
<i>Contráto</i>	Contract
<i>Correspondente</i>	Correspondent
<i>Préço</i>	Price, rate
<i>Alfândega</i>	Custom-house
<i>Guárdas d'alfândega</i>	Custom-house officers
<i>Guárdas que estaõ vigián- do até que os navios estéjaõ descarregádos</i>	Tidesmen, or tide waiters
<i>Feitoria</i>	Factory, settlement
<i>Escritório</i>	Counting-house
<i>Crédito</i>	Credit
<i>Acredór</i>	Creditor
<i>Corrénte</i>	Current
<i>Costúme</i>	Custom
<i>Contratador</i>	Dealer
<i>Tráfego, or negocio</i>	Dealing, traffick
<i>Dívida</i>	Debt
<i>Devedór</i>	Debtor
<i>Dinheiro desembolçado</i>	Disbursement
<i>Descónto</i>	Discount
<i>Extrácto, or cópia</i>	Docket

<i>Depósito</i>	Deposit
<i>Direitos que a alfandega torna a dar aos exportadores de certas fazendas, que ja os tinhão pago na supozição de serem para consumo interiôr : servindo isto para animar o commercio</i>	Draw-back
<i>Acredôr importúno</i>	Dun
<i>Cópia</i>	Duplicate
<i>Corretôr</i>	A broker
<i>Corretôr de létras de câmbio</i>	Exchange-broker
<i>Asseguradôr, or seguradôr</i>	Insurer or under-writer
<i>Endosso</i>	Endorsement
<i>Endossadôr</i>	Endorser
<i>Abarcadôr</i>	Engrosser
<i>Levantamênto de preço</i>	Enhancement
<i>Entrada or assênto no registo</i>	Entry
<i>Equivalênte</i>	Equivalent
<i>Exigência</i>	Exigency
<i>Despêza</i>	Expence
<i>Extracção, or exportação</i>	Export or exportation
<i>Extorsão</i>	Extortion
<i>Feitôr, or commissario</i>	Factor
<i>Féira</i>	Fair
<i>Fio, or arâme no qual se enfião os papéis num escriptório</i>	File for papers
<i>Quátro, cinco, &amp;c. por cénto</i>	Four, five, &c. per cent.
<i>Fréte</i>	Freight
<i>O que fréta hum navio</i>	A freighter
<i>Cabedal or quantia de dinheiro destinádo pára alguma côusa</i>	Fund
<i>Gânho</i>	Gain, or profit
<i>O que ganha</i>	Gainer
<i>Fazendas or effeitos</i>	Goods, effects
<i>Estréa</i>	Handsel
<i>Escritúra or lettra</i>	Hand-writing
<i>Entráda</i>	A custom for imported commodities
<i>Importadôr</i>	Importer
<i>Rênda</i>	Income



<i>Interesse</i>	[cio	Interest
<i>Communicaçãõ, or commér</i>		Intercourse
<i>Inventário</i>		Inventory
<i>Insufficiência, or fálta de méyos para pagar</i>		Insolvency
<i>Factúra</i>		Invoice
<i>A'rras</i>		Jointure
<i>Escritúra de arrendaménto</i>		Lease
<i>Arrendadór</i>		Lessee
<i>Livro de razaõ</i>		Ledger-book
<i>Empréstimo</i>		Loan
<i>Dinheiro emprestádo</i>		Money lent
<i>Cárta</i>		Letter
<i>Sobrescrito da cárta</i>		The direction of a letter
<i>Fechár húma cárta com si-néte</i>		To make and seal up a letter
<i>Mála em que o corréo tráz as cárta</i>		Mail
<i>Hypothéca</i>		Mortgage
<i>Acredór hypothecário</i>		Mortgagee
<i>Fiadór</i>		Bail
<i>Pagaménto</i>		Payment
<i>Fálta de pagaménto</i>		Non-payment
<i>Escrito de dívida</i>		Note, or promissory note
<i>Dóno</i>		Owner
<i>Pacóte</i>		Pack, a truss
<i>Serapilheira</i>		Packcloth, wrapper
<i>Brabánte</i>		Packthread
<i>Máço de cárta</i>		Packet of letters
<i>Companheiro de alguém no negócio, or sócio</i>		Partner
<i>Sociédáde or companhía no negócio</i>		Partnership
<i>Penhór</i>		Pawn or pledge
<i>Contrato do segúro de mercanciás</i>		Policy of insurance
<i>Segúro</i>		Insurance
<i>Protestár húma létra</i>		To protest a bill
<i>Aceitár húma létra</i>		To accept a bill
<i>Protésto</i>		Protest
<i>Sacár húma létra</i>		To draw a bill
<i>Corréo aónde se lançaõ as cárta</i>		Post-office
<i>Corréo que léva cárta</i>		Post-man or letter carrier
<i>Póрте de cárta</i>		Postage

<i>Dinhêiro que se pága aos marinheiros por terem carregádo o navio</i>	Primage
<i>Capital</i>	Principal, or capital
<i>Pérdas e danos</i>	Losses and damages
<i>Importância</i>	Proceed
<i>Importância líquida</i>	Neat proceed
<i>Proméssa</i>	Promise
<i>Bens</i>	Property
<i>Pontualidade</i>	Punctuality
<i>Cômpra</i>	Purchase
<i>Recíbo</i>	Receipt
<i>Recâmbio</i>	Re-exchange
<i>Arbitro, or louvâdo</i>	Referee or umpire
<i>Louvamêto, or arbitrio</i>	Reference
<i>Regatão</i>	Regrater
<i>Quitação</i>	Release
<i>Reméssa</i>	Remittance
<i>Vênda das côusas por miúdo, cómo fazem os mercadóres de retalho</i>	Retail
<i>Mercadór de retalho</i>	Retailer
<i>Riquêzas</i>	Riches, wealth
<i>Vênda</i>	Sale
<i>Padrão</i>	A pattern
<i>Amóstra</i>	Sample
<i>Sinête</i>	Seal
<i>Lácre</i>	Sealing-wax
<i>Ajustamêto de cõntas</i>	Settlement of accounts
<i>Mercadór que tem loja</i>	Shop-keeper
<i>Lívro em que o mercadór de loja tem súas cõntas</i>	Shop-book
<i>Contrabandista</i>	Smuggler
<i>Fazênda de contrabâdo</i>	Contraband, or prohibited goods, goods smuggled, or run
<i>Fazêr contrabâdo</i>	To run, to smuggle prohibited goods
<i>Modélo, or fiél dos pézos e medidas públicas</i>	Standard measure
<i>Armazém or Almazém</i>	Warehouse
<i>Sobrescrevénte</i>	Subscriber
<i>Sobscripção</i>	Subscription
<i>Tára</i>	Tare
<i>Fazênda roím</i>	Trash of goods

<i>Risco</i>	Risk
<i>Júros</i>	Interest
<i>Usurário</i>	Usurer
<i>Usúra</i>	Usury
<i>Mercancias</i>	Wares
<i>Valór</i>	Worth, or value
<i>Avaria</i>	Average
<i>Direítos</i>	Duties or custom
<i>Tribúto, or contribuiçãõ</i>	Cess, tribute
<i>Sísa</i>	Excise
<i>Sisetro</i>	Exciseman
<i>Cáes</i>	Wharf
<i>Direíto que se pága, por desembarcár fazéndas no cáes</i>	Wharfage
<i>Collectór do mésmo direíto, ou tribúto</i>	Wharfinger
<i>Dízimos</i>	Tithes
<i>Dizimadór, or dizimeiro</i>	Tithe-gatherer
<i>Lôuça vidrada, sem ser da Chína</i>	Dutch-ware
<i>Mercadór de atacádo</i>	Wholesale dealer
<i>Vénda que se faz por partidas</i>	Wholesale

Da Moéda, ou Dinheiro  
Portuguêz.

*Of the Portuguese Coin.*

This mark \* is prefixed to the imaginary money.

* <i>Reál</i>	A ree, equal to $\frac{27}{400}d.$
<i>Dés réis</i>	10 rees, $\frac{27}{40}d.$
<i>Vintém</i>	A vintin, $1\frac{7}{20}d.$
<i>Tostáõ, ou 5 vintéms</i>	A testoon, $6\frac{3}{4}d.$
4 <i>Tostóens, ou hum crusado</i>	A crusade, 2s. 3d.
<i>Crusadonóvo, ou 24 vintéms</i>	A new crusade, 2s. 8 $\frac{3}{4}$ d.
8 <i>Tostóens</i>	8 testoons, 4s. 6d.
<i>Hum quáрто de óuro, ou 12 tostóens</i>	12 testoons, 6s. 9d.
* <i>Milréis, ou 10 tostóens</i>	A milree, 5s. 7 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.
16 <i>Tostóens</i>	16 testoons, 9s.
<i>Méya moéda de óuro</i>	Half moidore, 13s. 6d.
3,200, ou 32 <i>tostóens</i>	32 testoons, 18s.
<i>Moéda da óuro de 4,800</i>	A moidore, 1l. 7s.
<i>Péça de 6,400</i>	Joanese, 1l. 16s.
<i>Dóbraõ ou 12,800</i>	128 testoons, 3l. 12s.

COLLECÇÃO

A COLLECTION

DE

OF

Adágios Portuguezes.

Portuguese Proverbs.

*A A'GOA o dá, a ágoa o léva*

*Na ágoa envolta pesca o pescadór*

*Está cómo o peixe n' ágoa  
Trazér a ágoa pára o moinho*

*Levár ágoa ao már  
As ágoas estão baixas  
O que não póde al sér,  
déves soffrér*

*Cómo cómo hum alárve  
Metér a pálha na albárda  
Alazaõ tostádo ántes mórto  
que cançádo*

*Húma disgráça alcánça a óutra*

*Estár na aldéa, e não vér  
as casas*

*Quem trabálha, tem alfáya  
Fállo-lhe em álhos, re-  
spóndeme em bugálhos  
Em tẽmpo nevádo o álho  
vále hum cavállo*

WHAT is got over the devil's back will be spent under his belly ; also lightly come, lightly go  
To fish in troubled waters, (to make a benefit of public troubles)

He lives in clover  
To bring grist to the mill

To carry coals to Newcastle  
He or she is at a low ebb  
What can't be cured must be endured

He eats like a thresher  
To cheat, to impose upon  
A dark sorrel horse will die before he'll jade

One mischief draws on another

We say, you can't see wood for trees : or to be like the butcher that looked for his knife when he had it in his mouth

He that works has furniture  
I talk of chalk, and you of cheese

Garlick in the foggy weather is as good as a horse ; it means that garlick is a good defence for travellers against dampness and cold weather



<i>Tézo como hum álho</i>	As stiff as garlick ; that is a healthy, strong, robust person
<i>Súa álma, sua páлма Na almoéda tem a bárba quéda</i>	As you brew, even so bake At a sale keep your beard on your chin still ; that is, let not your beard wag too fast in bidding, lest you overbid and repent
<i>Pagár os áltos de vasío</i>	To have but little or no sense at all
<i>Quem áma a beltráo, áma a séu caõ</i>	Love me, love my dog
<i>Cáda qual áma séu semel- hãnte</i>	Like will to like, or like loves like
<i>Também os ameaçados cómem páõ</i>	Threatened folks eat bread ; we say, threatened folks live long
<i>Cóntas de pérto, e amígos de lónge</i>	Even reckonings make long friends
<i>Tam bom he Pedro cómo séu ámo</i>	Like master, like man
<i>Furtár o carneíro, e dar os pés pello amór de Déos</i>	We say, to steal the goose and give the giblets in alms
<i>Nem hum dédo faz maõ, nem húma andorinha veráo</i>	One swallow does not make summer. <i>Una hirundo non facit ver,</i> says <i>Horace</i>
<i>Levár páлhas, e arálhos</i>	To sweep stakes
<i>Na aréa abérta o jústo pécca</i>	That is, it is opportunity that makes the thief
<i>De hum arguetiro, fazer hum cavalleíro</i>	We say, to make mountains of mole-hills
<i>Com árte, e com engáno se víve méyo áнно ; com en- gáno, e com árte, se víve a óutra páрте</i>	'That is, all a man's life is a cheat
<i>Quem a bóa árvore se chéga, bóa sómbra o cóbre</i>	That is, he that relies on good worthy people, reaps a benefit
<i>A'sno mórtó, ceváda úo rábo</i>	A day after the fair, or after meat, mustard
<i>A'sno que tem fome, cárdos cóme</i>	We say, hungry dogs will eat dirty pudding

- Sôpa de mel não se fez pára a bóca do ásno* Good things are not fit for fools
- Máis quero ásno que me leve, que cavállo que me derrúbe* Better be an old man's darling, than a young man's warling
- Máis val má avênça que bóa sentença* It is better to agree at any rate than go to law
- Não deítes azeíte no fogo* Do not throw oil into the fire
- Da mão á bóca se pérde a sópa* Much falls between the cup and the lip
- Em bóca cerráda não éntra móscas* A close mouth catches no flies
- Quem tem bóca vái a Róma* That is, a man may go any where, if he has language to speak for himself and ask his way
- Pélla bóca mórrre o peixe* Much talking brings much woe
- Cáda bofarinheiro lóuva séus alfinétes* Every man thinks his own geese swans
- Quem tem quátro, e gásta cinco, não ha mistér bolsa nem bolsinho* He that hath four and spends five, hath no need of a purse
- Cavár vái pella vínha por onde vái a máy, vái a filha* Like father like son
- Matár dós coéllhos de húma cajadáda* We say, to kill two birds with one stone
- Quem cánta, seus máles espánta* The person who sings makes easy his misfortunes; that is, singing causes him not to reflect on it so much as he otherwise would
- Deítar a cápa a tóuro* To throw one's cloak at the bull; that is, to venture all a man has, to save his life
- Víva el-réy, e dá cá a cápa* Let the king live, and give me the cloak; that is spoken of persons who, under a pretence of authority, rob and plunder other people, and at the

- Andar de capa cahida* To be behind-hand in the world
- O cão com raiva de seu dono tráva* A mad dog bites his own master ; there is no trusting to madmen, or people in a rage
- Quem com cães se lança, com púlgas se levanta* We say, lie with beggars and you will get fleas
- A carne de lóbo dente de cão* That is, to return railing for railing ; or, as our modern proverb says, give him a Rowland for his Oliver ; the Latins say, *par pari referre*
- Quem faz casa na praça, huns dizem que he alta, outros que he baixa* That is, a man in public business can't please every body ; or, as Solon says, 'tis rare that statesmen can all parties please
- A cavállo dado não ólhes o dente* Never look in the mouth of a gift horse
- Quem quer cavállo sem tácha, sem elle se ácha* 'Tis a good horse that never stumbles
- Cóbra boa fama, e deita-te a dormir* When your name is up, you may lie a-bed till noon
- Fazér as cóntas sem a hóspeda* To reckon without the hostess ; or, as we say, the host
- Do contádo cóme o lóbo* The wolf eats of what is counted ; that is, thieves will steal, though they know it will be missed, much more if they think it will not
- Em casa de ladrão não fálles em córda* You should not mention a halter to any whose relations or friends have suffered by it ; that is, no man should be hit in the teeth of his disgrace
- Do couro lhe sáhem as corréas* The thongs come out of his skin ; that is, he pays for it

- Cortar o vestido conforme o pánno* To cut one's coat according to the cloth
- Cría o córvo, tirárvos-há o olho* It is said of a person that, being received in distress, defrauds or grows too great for him that entertained him
- Tánta cúlpa tem o ladrão cómo o consentidór* The receiver is as bad as the thief
- Dádivas quebrántaõ pénnhas* Gifts break rocks; that is, kindness overcomes the hardest hearts; and bribes or presents corrupt the most resolved
- Melhór he fazer de bálde que estár debálde* It is better to work for nothing than to be lazy and do nothing at all
- Deitár azeíte no fogo* To make bad worse. *Horace says, Oleum addere camino*
- Naõ he o démo tam feio cómo o pintaõ* We say, the lion is not so fierce as his picture
- Primeíro saõ déntes, que paréntes* We say, near is my coat, but nearer is my skin, &c. *Terence says, Heus proximus sum egomet mihi*
- Lá vái a língua, ónde o dénte grita* To scratch where it itches
- Quándo cúidas metér o dénte em segúro, toparáz o duro* Harm watch, harm catch. *Horace says, —et fragili quærens illidere dentem —Offendet solido—*
- Dár com a língua nos déntes* To contradict one's self, to belie
- Quem naõ fálla, naõ o óuve Déos* A man may hold his tongue in an ill time; also spare to speak and spare to speed
- Ventúra te dé Déos, filho; que sabér póuco te bástá* God give you good luck, child, for a little learning will serve your turn; because it is fortune that raises men more than merit
- Cáda qual por si, e Déos por tódos* Every one for himself, and God for all



- Em bons dias, boas obras*      The better days the better deeds
- Para dia de saõ ceréjo*      We say, when two Sundays come together, that is never
- Túdo póde o dinheiro*      Money governs the world
- O hómem propõem, e Déos dispõem*      Man proposes, and God disposes
- Dórme cómo hum arganáz*      He sleeps like a dormouse
- A bom entendedor poucas palavras bastaõ*      A word to the wise is enough
- Gáto escaldado da ágoa fria ha médo*      We say, a burnt child dreads the fire
- No escudellár verás quem te quér bem, ou mal*      That is, people's affections are discovered by their liberality
- Esmolou saõ Matthéus, esmolou pára os séus*      Charity begins at home
- Naõ ha melhór espélho que o amigo vélho*      There is no better looking-glass than an old friend; that is, such a one will not flatter a man, but tell him the truth
- Nem estopa com tiçóens, nem molhér com varóens*      That is, conversation of women is dangerous; it is not good jesting with edged tools
- Fallár sem cuidár, he atirár sem afrontár*      To let one's tongue run, without reflecting on what one says, is like shooting at random
- Fálla pouco e bem, térte háõ por alguém*      Talk little and well, and you'll be counted somebody; that is, you'll be esteemed
- Quém a fama tem perdida, mórto ánda nesta vida*      He who has lost his reputation is as good as dead whilst living
- A quem má fama tem, nem accompánhes, nem dígas bem*      Do not keep company with, nor be fond of, one that has an ill name
- Aproveitador de farélos, esperdiçador de farinha*      That is, one that saves at the spiggot and lets it run out at the bung; also, penny wise and pound foolish

<i>Naõ fazem boa farinha</i>	They can't set their horses together
<i>Quem má a faz nélla jáz</i>	Self do self harm
<i>Ágora dá pão e mel, e depois dará pão e fel</i>	After sweet meat comes sour sauce
<i>Língua doce como mel, e coração amargoso como fel</i>	An honey tongue, an heart of gall
<i>Batér o ferro quando está quente</i>	To beat the iron whilst it is hot, or to make hay whilst the sun shines
<i>Quem com ferro máta, a ferro morre</i>	He who kills by the sword dies by the sword
<i>Carregado de ferro, carregado de medo</i>	He who is loaded with iron is loaded with fear; that is, he who loads himself with armour and weapons against danger, discovers he is much afraid
<i>Quem te faz festa, não soendo fazer, ou te quer enganar, ou te ha mistér</i>	He that makes more of you than he is wont to do, either designs to cheat you, or stands in need of you
<i>Naõ fies, nem profies, nem arréndes, vivirás entre as géntes</i>	Do not trust, nor contend, nor hire, and you'll live among men; that is, you'll live peaceably
<i>Mijár claro, dar húma figa ao médico</i>	Tell the truth and shame the devil
<i>Se não bebe na taverna, fólga nélla</i>	We say, he does not smoke but smokes
<i>Achou fórma pára o seu sapáto</i>	He has found a last to his shoe; that is, he has met with his match
<i>Naõ sejáis fornheiro se téndes a cabeça de manteiga</i>	Do not undertake to be a baker if your head is made of butter; that is, do not take upon you any business you are unfit for
<i>A'o hómem ousádo a fortuna lhe dá a mão</i>	Fortune favours the bold
<i>Rôupa de francézes</i>	Things left at random, or exposed to be pillaged
<i>Caír da frigideira nas brasas</i>	To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire

- Dizem os filhos ao soalheiro,  
o que ouvem dizér a séus  
páys ao fumeiro* Little pitchers have great  
ears
- Perto vái o fumo da châma* We say, there is no smoke  
without some fire
- Quem húma vêz fúrta, fiél  
núnca* He who once steals, is never  
trusty; or, once a thief,  
always a thief
- Mal vái ao fúso quândo a  
bárba não anda em cima* Alas for the spindle when  
the beard is not over it!  
By the spindle is meant  
the woman, and by the  
beard is meant the man
- Cáda terra com séu úso,  
cáda róca com séu fúso* So many countries, so many  
customs
- Quântas cabéças, tántas  
carapúças* Several men, several minds
- Quem lhe doér a cabéça que  
a apérte* We say, if any fool finds the  
cap fit him, let him put it  
on
- Se quéres sabér quem hé o  
villaõ, mételhe a vára na  
máõ* Set a beggar on horseback,  
and he will ride to the  
devil
- Não ha rósa sem espínhos* There is no rose without  
thorns, there is no sweet  
without some sweat
- Andár, andár, vír morrérr  
á beíra* To eat an whole ox and  
faint at the tail. This pro-  
verb is spoken when any  
body falls short of a thing  
after having used all his  
endeavours
- Quem não déve, não téme* Out of debt out of danger
- Quem quândo póde, não  
quér, quândo quér, não  
póde* It is good to make hay while  
the sun shines
- Hómem honrádo não ha  
mistér gabádo* We say, a good face needs  
no band
- Hómem grânde, bêsta de  
páo* This proverb intimates, that  
things are not to be valued  
by their bulk, but accord-  
ing to their intrinsic worth  
and value; and 'so we say,  
a lark is better than a  
kite

- Debáixo de má cápa jáz bom bebedór* A tattered cloak may cover a good drinker ; that is, men are not to be judged by outward appearance
- Quem muito abraça, pouco aperta* All grasp, all lose ; or covet all, and lose all
- No açbugue, quem mal falla, mal ouve* He that speaks knavishly shall hear knavishly. *Terence* says, *Qui pergit ea, quæ vult, dicere, ea, quæ non vult, audiet*
- Quem em mais álto náda, mais présto se afoga* This is, the highest charges are the more liable and nearer to the downfall
- Hóspede com sol, ha honór, Hóspeda formósa, dáno faz á bólsa* First come, first served  
A beautiful hostess, or landlady, is bad for the purse
- O hóspede e o peixe aos três días féde* Fresh fish, and new come guests, smell when they are three days old
- Hórta sem ágoa, cása sem telhádo, molhér sem amór, marido sem cuidádo, de graça he cáro* That is, a garden without water, a house untiled, a wife without love, and a careless husband, are all alike, being all stark nought
- Hónra ao bóm para que te hónre, e ao máo pára que te não deshónre* Honour a good man, that he may honour you ; and an ill man, that he may not dishonour you
- Hónra hé dos ámos, a que se faz aos criádos* The honour done to servants redounds to their masters
- Officio de conselho, hónra sem provéito* An office in the council is honour without profit ; that is, to be of the council of a town, by which nothing is got in Portugal
- Hómem apercebido, méyo combatído* A man that is prepared, has half the battle over



## DIÁLOGOS

## FAMILIARES.

## FAMILIAR

## DIALOGUES.

<i>TÊNHA</i> <i>vm. muito bons dias</i>	GOOD morrow, sir
<i>Cómo está</i> <i>vm.?</i> ou <i>cómo passa</i> <i>vm.?</i>	How do you do, sir?
<i>Bem, não muito-bém, vóu passádo</i>	Well ; not very well ; so, so
<i>Muito bem para servir a</i> <i>vm.</i>	Very well to serve you
<i>A's ordens de</i> <i>vm.</i>	At your service
<i>Fico-lhe muito obrigado</i>	I am obliged to you
<i>Agradecido</i>	I thank you
<i>Cómo está, ou passa o sen- hór seu irmão?</i>	How does your brother do ?
<i>Muito bem, não muito bém</i>	He is very well ; not very well
<i>Elle terá gósto de ver a</i> <i>vm.</i>	He will be glad to see you
<i>Não teréi tempo para hir a vélo hóje</i>	I shall have no time to see him to-day
<i>Faça favôr de assentár-se</i>	Be pleased to sit down
<i>Dá húma cadeira ao senhór</i>	Give a chair to the gentleman
<i>Não hé necessário</i>	There's no occasion
<i>Tenho que hir a fazer húma visita aquí nesta visin- hança</i>	I must go to make a visit in the neighbourhood
<i>Vm. tem préssa</i>	You are in haste
<i>E'u logo voltaréi</i>	I'll be back, or return pre- sently
<i>Adéos méu senhór</i>	Farewell, sir
<i>Fólgo de vér a</i> <i>vm. com boa saúde.</i>	I am glad to see you in good health
<i>Béijo as maõs de</i> <i>vm.</i>	I kiss your hand
<i>Sóu criádo de</i> <i>vm.</i>	I am your servant
<i>Sóu muito seu criádo</i>	Your most humble servant

II. Para fazer huma Visita  
de Manhaã.

ONDE está teu ámo?

Ainda dorme?

Naõ, senhõr, elle está acor-  
dado

Está elle ja levantado?

Naõ, senhõr, elle ainda  
está na cama

Que vergõha de estar ain-  
dana cama a éstas horas!

Ontem á nõite fui para a  
cama taõ tarde, que naõ  
me púde levantar cedo  
esta manhaã

Que fizeraõ vm<sup>as</sup>. depõis  
de cea?

Dançaõmos, cantamos, ri-  
mos, e jugamos

A que jõgo?

A'os cõntos

Quãto me pèza de o naõ  
tèr sabido!

Quem ganhõu? quem per-  
deõ?

Eu ganhèi dez moèdas

Atè que horas jugaraõ  
vm<sup>as</sup>?

Atè duas horas depõis da  
mèya nõite

A que horas fõi vm. para a  
cama?

A' s três, ás três horas e  
mèya

Que horas saõ?

Que horas lhe parèce a vm.  
que sejaõ

Parèceme que apénas saõ  
õito

Sím! õito! ja deraõ dez

Entãõ he preciso que me  
levãte quãto mais de-  
prèssa pudèr

II. *To visit in the Morn-  
ing.*

WHERE is your master?

Is he asleep still?

No, sir, he is awake

Is he up?

No, sir, he is still a-bed

What a shame 'tis to be a-  
bed at this time a-day

I went to bed so late last  
night I could not rise  
early this morning

What did you do after sup-  
per?

We danced, we sung, we  
laughed, we played

At what game?

We played at piquet

How grieved am I, I did  
not know it!

Who won? who lost?

I won ten moidores

Till what hour did you  
play?

Till two in the morning

At what o'clock did you go  
to bed?

At three, half an hour after  
three

What's o'clock?

What do you think it is?

Scarce eight, I believe yet

How! eight! it has struck  
ten

Then I must rise with all  
speed

## III. Para vestir-se

QUEM está ahí ?

Que quer vm. ?

Despáxa-te, acénde o lume,  
e véste-me

Dá-me a minha camisa

Eila aquí está, senhór

Naõ está quente, está mui-  
to fria

Eu a aquestraréi, se vm.  
quizér

Naõ, naõ; tráze-me as  
minhas méyas de séda

Húma déllas está róta

Da-lhe hum pónto, concér-  
ta-a

Dei-a ao que as concérta

Fizéste-bem

Onde estão as minhas  
chinélas

Onde está a minha róupa  
de chámbré ?

Pentéa-me

Dá-me o méu lenço

Eis aquí hum lavado

Dá-me o que está na mín-  
ha algibéira

Dei-o á lavandéira, elle  
estáva sújo [róupa ?

Tróuxe élla ja a minha

Sím, senhór, enaõ fálta nada

Tráze-me os méus calçóens

Que vestido quer vm. para  
hóje ?

O mésmo de óntem

O alfaiate ha de trazér  
lógo o séu vestido [hé

Bátem á pórtá, vé lá quem

Hé o alfaiate

Déixa-o entrár

## III. To dress one's self.

WHO is there ?

What will you please to  
have ?

Be quick, make a fire, dress  
me

Give me my shirt

Here it is, sir

'Tis not warm, 'tis quite  
cold

If you please I'll warm it

No, no ; bring me my silk  
stockings

One of them 'is torn

Stitch it a little, mend it

I have given it to the stock-  
ing mender

You have done right

Where are my slippers ?

Where is my night gown

Comb my head

Give me my handkerchief

Here is a clean one

Give me that which is in my  
pocket

I gave it to the washer-wo-  
man, it was foul

Has she brought my linen ?

Yes, there wants nothing

Bring me my breeches

What clothes will you wear  
to-day ?

Those I wore yesterday

The taylor will bring your  
cloth suit presently

Somebody knocks, see who  
it is

It is the tailor

Let him come in

IV. O Senhór e o Alfaiáte.

IV. *The Gentleman and the Tailor.*

TRAZEIS o meu vestido?

DO you bring my suit of clothes?

*Sim, senhór, eilo aquí  
Há muito tempo que estou  
esperando por elle*

Yes, sir, here it is  
You make me wait a great  
while

*Naõ púde vir até agora  
Naõ estava acabado  
Ainda naõ estava forrado  
Quer vm. vestir a casaca  
para vér se lhe está bém?  
Vejámos se está bem feita*

I could not come sooner  
It was not finished  
The lining was not sewed  
Will you please to try the  
close coat on?

*Ténho para mim que lhe  
hája de agradár  
Parêce-me muito comprida*

Let us see whether it be  
well made  
I believe it will please you

*He costume, agora de tra-  
zêlas compridas  
Abotoái-a*

It seems to me to be very  
long  
They wear them long now

*He muito apertada  
Assim deve sér para que lhe  
estêja bém ao corpo  
Naõ saõ as mángas dema-  
siadamente largas?  
Naõ, senhór, estaõ-lhe ad-  
mirávelmente*

Button it  
It is too close  
To fit properly, it ought to  
be close  
Are not the sleeves too  
wide?

*Os calçõens saõ muito aper-  
tados?*

No, sir, they fit very well

*E' sta he a móda de agora  
Este vestido está-lhe bizar-  
ramente*

The breeches are very nar-  
row

*He muito cúrto, muito com-  
prido, muito grande,  
muito pequeno*

That is the fashion  
This suit becomes you  
mighty well

*Téndes feito a vossa cõn-  
ta?*

'Tis too short, too long, too  
big, too little

*Naõ, senhór, naõ tive têm-  
po*

Have you made your bill?

*Trazêi-a amanhã, e pa-  
gárvos hei*

No, sir, I had no time

Bring it to-morrow, I'll  
pay you



## V. Para almoçar.

*To breakfast.*

*TRÁZE-nos alguma coisa para almoçar*

*Sim, senhor, ha linguiças e pastelinhos*

*Gosta vm. de presunto ?*

*Sim, traze-o; comeremos huma talhada d'elle*

*Estende hum guardanapo sobre aquella mesa*

*Dá-nos pratos, facas, e garfos*

*Lava os copos*

*Dá huma cadeira ao senhor*

*Assente-se vm. assente-se ao pé do lume*

*Naõ tenho frio, aqui ficaréi muito bem*

*Vejamos se o vinho he bom*

*Dá cá aquella garráfa com aquelle copo*

*Faça favor de provar aquelle vinho*

*Cómo lhe agráda; que diz vm. d'elle ?*

*Naõ hé máo, he muito bom*

*Eis aqui as linguiças, tira aquelle prato*

*Cóma vm. linguiças*

*Ja comi algumas, ellas são muito boas*

*Dá-me de beber*

*A' saúde de vm.*

*Bom proveito faça a vm.*

*Dá de beber ao senhor*

*E'u bebi áinda agora*

*Os pastelinhos eraõ bem bons*

*Estávão hum pouco máis cozidos que devião estar*

BRING us something for breakfast

Yes, sir, there are some sausages and petty-patees

Do you choose the gammon of bacon ?

Yes, bring it; we will eat a slice of it

Lay a napkin on that table

Give us plates, knives, and forks

Rinse the glasses

Reach the gentleman a chair

Sit down, sir; sit by the fire

I am not cold, I shall be very well here

Let us see whether the wine be good

Give me that bottle and a glass

Taste that wine, pray

How do you like it? what say you to it?

It is not bad, it is very good

Here are the sausages, take away this plate

Eat some sausages, sir

I have eat some, they are very good

Give me some drink

Your health, sir

Much good may it do you

Give the gentleman some drink

I drank but just now

The petty-patees were very good

They were baked a little too much

*Vm. não come*

*Tenho comido tanto, que  
não poderéi jantar*

*Vm. está zombando, vm.  
não tem comido nada*

*Tenho comido com muito  
gosto, tanto das lingui-  
ças como do presunto*

You do not eat

I have eat too much, I shall  
not be able to eat any  
dinner

You only jest, you have eat  
nothing at all

I have eat very heartily  
both of sausages and  
gammon of bacon

VI. Para fallár Portuguêz.

*CÔMO vái vm. com o séu  
Portuguéz?*

*Está vm. ja muito adian-  
tado nelle?*

*Ainda me falta muito;  
não séi quasi nada*

*Dizem porém que vm. o  
falla muito bém*

*Prouvéra a Déos que assim  
fósse!*

*Os que dizem isso, estão  
muito enganados*

*Estéja vm. na certéza que  
assim mo disséraõ*

*Pósso fallár algumas pa-  
lávras que aprendi de cór*

*E unicaménte o que hé ne-  
cessário para começár a  
fallár*

*O começár não he bastánte  
he preciso que vm. acábe*

*Falle vm. sémpre ou bém  
ou mal*

*Tenho médo de dar érros*

*Naõ tenha vm. médo; a  
língua Portuguêza não  
hé difficil*

*Conheço isso, e também que  
élla he muito engraçada*

*Que felicidade sería a mí-  
nha se eu a soubésse bém!*

VI. *To speak Portuguese.*

HOW goes on your Por-  
tuguese?

Are you much improved in  
it now?

Far from it; I know no-  
thing almost

It is said, however, you  
speak it very well

Would to God it were true!

Those that say so are much  
mistaken

I assure you I was told so

I cau say a few words which  
I have learnt by heart

Only so much as is neces-  
sary to begin to speak

The beginning is not all,  
you must make an end

Be always speaking, whe-  
ther well, or ill

I am afraid to commit blun-  
ders

Never fear; the Portuguese  
language is not hard

I know it; and that it has  
abundance of graces

How happy should I be, if  
I were master of it!

<i>A applicaçãõ hé o único méyo para aprendê-la</i>	Application is the only way to learn it
<i>Quãto tẽmpo há que vm. aprẽnde?</i>	How long have you been learning?
<i>Apẽnas há hum mẽz</i>	Scarce a month yet
<i>Cõmo se chãma o sêu mẽstre?</i>	What is your master's name?
<i>Chãma-se—</i>	His name is—
<i>Hã muito tẽmpo que o conhẽço</i>	I have known him a great while
<i>Elle tem ensinãdo a mûitos dos mẽus amĩgos</i>	He has taught several friends of mine
<i>Nãõ lhe diz elle ser preciso que fãlle sẽmpre Portuguẽz?</i>	Does not he tell you that you must constantly talk Portuguese?
<i>Sim, senhõr, assim me diz mûitas vẽzes</i>	Yes, sir, he often tells me so
<i>Põis, porquẽ nãõ fãlla vm.?</i>	Why do not you talk then?
<i>Com quem quẽr vm. que eu fãlle</i>	Who would you have me talk with?
<i>Com os que fallãrem com vm.</i>	With those who shall talk to you
<i>E'u quizẽra fallãr, mas nãõ me atrẽvo</i>	I would fain talk, but dare not
<i>He preciso que vm. nãõ tẽnha mẽdo, nem se pẽje dos que o ouvirem fallãr</i>	You must not be afraid, you must be bold

## VII. Do Tẽmpo.

*QUE tẽmpo faz?*  
*O tẽmpo estã admirãvel*  
*O tẽmpo estã roĩm*  
*Faz frĩo? faz cãlma?*  
*Nãõ faz frĩo, nãõ faz cãlma*  
*Chõve? nãõ chõve?*  
*Nãõ o crẽyo*  
*O vẽnto estã mudãdo*  
*Terẽmos chũva*  
*Hõje nãõ há de chovẽr*  
*Chõve, Chõve a cãntaros*  
*Estã nevãndo*  
*Trovẽja*

VII. *Of the Weather.*

WHAT sort of weather is it?  
 It is fine weather  
 It is bad weather  
 Is it cold? is it hot?  
 It is not cold, it is not hot  
 Does it rain? does it not rain?  
 I do not believe it  
 The wind is changed  
 We shall have rain  
 It will not rain to-day  
 It rains, it pours  
 It snows  
 It thunders

<i>Cáhe pédra</i>	It hails
<i>Relampaguéa</i>	It lightens
<i>Faz muita cálma</i>	It is very hot
<i>Geóu a nóite passáda ?</i>	Has it freezed last night ?
<i>Naõ, senhór, mas agóra está geándo</i>	No, sir, but it freezes now
<i>Paréce-me que há nevoéiro</i>	There appears to me to be a great fog
<i>Vm. naõ se engána, assim hé</i>	You are not mistaken, it is very true
<i>Vm. tem hum gránde catarro or de flúxo</i>	You have caught a violent cold
<i>Há quinze días que o ténho</i>	I have had it this fortnight
<i>Que horas são ?</i>	What's o'clock ?
<i>He cédo, naõ he tárde</i>	'Tis early, 'tis not late
<i>He témpo de almoçar ?</i>	Is it breakfast-time ?
<i>Póuco fálta para sérem horas de jantár</i>	'Twill be dinner-time immediately
<i>Que faremos depóis de jantár ?</i>	What shall we do after dinner ?
<i>Daremos hum passéyo, or iremos passear</i>	We'll take a walk
<i>Vámos dár húma vólta</i>	Let us take a turn now
<i>Naõ vámos fóra com éste témpo</i>	We must not go abroad this weather

---

VIII. Para perguntár que Nóvas há.

---

VIII. *To enquire after News.*

<i>QUE vai de nóvo ? or que nóvas há ?</i>	WHAT news is stirring ?
<i>Sábe vm. alguma cóusa de nóvo ?</i>	Do you know any news ?
<i>Naõ ténho ouvido náda de nóvo</i>	I have heard none
<i>De que se fálta pélla cidáde ?</i>	What's the talk of the town ?
<i>Naõ se fálta de náda</i>	'There's no talk of any thing
<i>Naõ téndes ouvido fallár de guérra ?</i>	Have you heard no talk of war ?
<i>Naõ ouço fallár náda disso</i>	I have heard nothing of it
<i>Porém fálta-se de hum cérco</i>	There's a talk however of a siege
<i>Fallóu-se nísso, mas naõ hé verdáde</i>	It was so reported, but it is not true



<i>A'ntes péllo contrário fál- lase de páz</i>	On the contrary there's a talk of peace
<i>Assím o créyo</i>	I believe so
<i>Que se diz na córte?</i>	What say they at court?
<i>Fállase de húma viágem</i>	They talk of a voyage
<i>Quándo vos parece que el réy partirá?</i>	When do you think the king will set out?
<i>Naõ se sábe. Naõ se diz quándo</i>	'Tis not known, they do not say when
<i>O'nde, or para ónde se diz que elle irá?</i>	Where do they say he'll go?
<i>Huns dizem que irá para Flándres, e ótros para Alemánha</i>	Some say into Flanders, others into Germany
<i>E que diz a Gazéta?</i>	And what says the Gazette?
<i>E'u naõ a lí</i>	I have not read it
<i>He verdáde o que se diz do Sr. — ?</i>	Is it true what's reported of Mr. — ?
<i>Póis que se diz delle?</i>	What of him?
<i>Dizem que está ferído mor- talménte</i>	They say he is mortally wounded
<i>Muito me pesaria dísso; elle he hum hómem de bem</i>	I should be sorry for that, he's an honest man
<i>Quem o ferío?</i>	Who wounded him?
<i>Dóus marótos que o inves- tiraõ</i>	Two rogues that set upon him
<i>Sábe-se o porqué?</i>	Is it known upon what ac- count?
<i>A noticia que córre hé, que dêu num delles hum bo- fetaõ</i>	The report is, that he gave one of them a box on the ear
<i>E'u naõ créyo isso; nem éu taõ póuco</i>	I don't believe it. Nor I neither
<i>Eilo vái, cédo saberémos a verdáde</i>	However we shall soon know the truth

## IX. Para escrevêr.

*DA' I-ME húma fólha de  
papél, húma pénnna, e hú-  
ma póuca de tinta*  
*I'de ao méu quáрто, e acha-  
reís em cima da méssa túdo  
o que vos fór preciso*  
*Naõ há pénnas*

## IX. To write.

**GIVE** me a sheet of paper,  
a pen, and a little ink  
Step to my closet, you'll  
find on the table what-  
ever you want  
There are no pens

- Há grãnde quantidãde del-  
las na escrivãnhã*  
There are a great many in  
the standish
- Não prestão para nãda*  
They are good for nothing
- Lã há òutras*  
There are some others
- Não estão aparãdas*  
They are not made
- Onde estã o vòsso canivete?*  
Where is your penknife?
- Sabéis vòs aparãr pennis?*  
Can you make pens?
- E'u apãro-as a mêu mòdo*  
I make them my own way
- E'sta não estã mã*  
This is not bad
- Em quãnto acãbo estã cãr-  
ta, fazêime o favòr de  
fechãr as òutras, e fazêr  
hum mãço dellas*  
While I make an end of this  
letter, do me the favour to  
make a packet of the rest
- Que sëllo quêr vm. que êu  
lhe põnhã?*  
What seal will you have me  
put to it?
- Sella-o com 'o mêu sinete,  
or com as mínhas ármãs*  
Seal it with my cypher, or  
coat of arms
- Com que lâcre quer vm. que  
as fêche?*  
What wax shall I put to it?
- Fechãi-as com o vermêlho  
ou com o prêto; sêja quãl  
fôr não impòrta*  
Put either red, or black, no  
matter which
- Tem vm. pôsto a dãta?*  
Have you put the date?
- Parêce-me que sim, mas  
ãinda não a assinêi*  
I believe I have, but I have  
not signed it
- A quãntos estãmos hõje do  
mêz?*  
What day of the month is  
this?
- A òuto, a dèz, a quĩnze, a  
vĩnte*  
The eighth, the tenth, fif-  
teenth, twentieth
- Põnde o sobrescritto?*  
Put the address
- Onde estã a arêa?*  
Where is the powder?
- Vòs nũnca tẽdes arêa*  
You never have powder or  
sand
- Ahĩ há algũma no arêiro*  
There's some in the sand box
- Ahĩ estã o sêu criãdo; quêr  
vm. que êlle lêve as cãr-  
tas ao corrêo?*  
There's your servant, will  
you let him carry the let-  
ters to the post-office?
- Lêva as mínhas cãrtas ao  
corrêo, e não te esqueças  
de pagãr o pòrte*  
Carry my letters to the post-  
office, and don't forget to  
pay postage
- Não tẽho dinhêiro*  
I have no money
- Ahĩ estã hũma moêda de  
òuro*  
There's a moidore
- Vãi deprêssa, e vem lógo*  
Go quickly, and return as  
soon as possible

X. Para comprár.

X. To buy.

QUE quer vm. ?

WHAT do you want, sir ?

Quéro hum bom pánno fino  
para hum vestido

What would you please  
to have ?

Ténha vm. a bondáde de  
entrár, e verá o máis bello  
pánno que há em Lóndres  
Déixe-me vér o melhór que  
vm. tem

I want a good fine cloth to  
make me a suit of clothes  
Be pleased to walk in, sir,  
you'll see the finest in  
London

Aquí tem vm. hum. excel-  
lente, que agóra se cos-  
túma trazér

Shew me the best you have

He hum bom pánno, mas a  
cór não me agráda

There's a very fine one, and  
what's worn at present

Ahí tem vm. outra péça que  
tem a cór máis clara

'Tis a good cloth, but I don't  
like the colour

Agrádame a cór, mas o  
panno não he fórte, não  
tem córpo

There's another lighter piece

Véja ésta péça ; vm. não  
achará em nenhúma  
parte outra taõ boa cómo  
élla

I like that colour well, but  
the cloth is not strong, 'tis  
too thin

Quánto péde vm. por cáda  
ána ?

Look at this piece, sir, you'll  
not find the like any  
where else

O séu jústo preço he —

What do you ask for it an  
ell ?

Sr. não he méu costúme pôr-  
me a regateár ; fáca-me  
favór de dizér me o últi-  
mo preço

It is fairly worth —

Ja disse a vm. que aquélla  
he o séu jústo preço

Sir, I am not used to stand  
haggling ; pray tell me  
your lowest price

He múito cáro, dar lhe héi  
a vm.—

I have told you, sir, 'tis  
worth that

Naõ pôsso abatér hum  
ceitíl

'Tis too dear, I'll give  
you—

Vm. não há de vendér por  
ésse preço

I can't bate a farthing

Vm. quíz sabér o último  
preço, e eu disse-lho

You must not charge that  
price

You asked me the lowest  
price, and I have told you

*Hóra vámos, córte vm. lá dúas ánas délle*

*Assegúro-lhe a vm. cómo hómem de bem que sou, que não gånho náda com vm.*

*Ahí tem vm. cinco moédas de buro, dé-me a demasia*

*Ténha a bondáde de dáreme outra em lugar desta, porque não he de pézo*

*Ahí esta outra*

*A Déos, criádo de vm.*

Come, come, cut off two ells of it

I protest, on the word of an honest man, I don't get any thing by you

There's five moidores, give me the change

Be pleased, sir, to let me have another for this, it wants weight

There's another

Farewell; sir, your servant

XI. Para húma Journáda.

*QUANTAS légoas há daquí a N.?*

*Ha búto légoas*

*Nós não poderémos chegar lá hóje, hé muito tarde*

*Não hé senão méyo día, vm<sup>as</sup> aínda têm bastánte, témpo*

*Hé a estráda bóa?*

*Não he muito bóa passãose bósques e ríos*

*Há algúm perigo nélla?*

*Não há notícias disso; hé estráda réal em que se encóntra génte a cáda pássso*

*Póis não dizem que há ladróens nos bósques?*

*Não ha de que tér médo, nem de día, nem de nóite*

*Por ónde se vái?*

*Quándo vm<sup>as</sup> chegárem ao pé do outéiro, he preciso, que tómem á mão diréita*

*Póis não hé necessário subír hum outéiro?*

XI. *For a Journey.*

HOW many leagues is it from this place to N.?

It is eight leagues

We shall not be able to get thither to day, it is too late

It is not more than twelve o'clock, you have time enough yet

Is the road good?

So, so; there are woods and rivers to pass

Is there any danger upon that road?

There's no talk of it, it is a highway, where you meet people every moment

Do not they say there are robbers in the woods?

There's nothing to be feared either by day or night

Which way must one take?

When you come near the hill, you must take to the right hand

Is it not necessary to ascend a hill then?



*Naõ, Sr. naõ há outro  
outeiro senaõ húma pe-  
quena ladéira, (or des-  
cida) no bósque*

*Cústa a atinár com o ca-  
minho pélllo méyo dos  
bósques?*

*Vm<sup>es</sup> naõ pódem errá-lo  
Lógo que vm<sup>es</sup> sahírem do  
bósque, lembrem-se de  
tomár á maõ esquérda*

*Vm<sup>es</sup> múitos ánnos, fico-lhe  
múito obrigádo*

*Vámos, vámos, senhóres,  
tomémos hum cavállo*

*Onde está o marquéz?*

*Elle foi adiánte*

*E'lle há de estár esperándo  
por vós lógo alí fóra da  
cidade*

*Fiquem-se embóra, sen-  
hóres, a Déos*

*Fáçaõ vm<sup>es</sup> múito bóa jor-  
náda*

No, sir, there is no other  
hill but a little declivity  
in the wood

Is it a difficult way through  
the woods?

You can't lose your way  
As soon as you are out of  
the wood, remember to  
keep to the left hand

I thank you, sir, and am very  
much obliged to you

Come, come, gentlemen,  
let's take a horse

Where is the marquis?

He is gone before

He'll wait for you just out  
of the town

Farewell, gentlemen, fare-  
well

I wish you a very good  
journey

---

XII. Da Cêa e da Pousáda.

*COMQUE assim estámos  
chegádos á estalágem*

*Apeémo-nos, senhóres*

*Péga nos cavállos déstes  
senhóres, e tráta délles*

*Vejámos agóra o que vm.  
nos há de dár para ceár*

*Hum capaõ, méya dúzia de  
pómbos, húma saláda,  
seis codornizes, e húma  
dúzia do calhándras*

*Quérem vm<sup>es</sup> mais algúma  
côusa?*

*I'sto he bastánte, dái-nos  
algúm vínho que séja  
bóm, e húma sobremésa*

---

XII. *Of Supper and  
Lodging.*

SO, we are arrived at the  
inn

Let's alight, gentlemen

Take these gentlemen's  
horses, and take care of  
them

Now let's see what you'll  
give us for supper

A capon, half a dozen of pi-  
geons, a sallad, six quails,  
and a dozen of larks

Will you have nothing else?

That's enough, give us some  
good wine, and a deSSERT

- Dêixem v<sup>ras</sup> isso por minha  
Cônta, eu lhes prométo  
que fiquem bem servidos  
Alumia aos senhores  
Dái-nos de ceár o máis de-  
préssa que fór possível  
Antes que v<sup>ras</sup> tenhaõ des-  
calçádo as bótas, estará  
a cea na méssa  
Ténde cuidádo que trágaõ  
para cima as nossas  
málas e pistólas  
Descalçái-me as bótas, e  
despóis iréis vér se tem  
dádo algúm féno aos ca-  
vállos  
Leváí-os ao río, e ténde  
cuidádo que lhes dém  
algúma avéa  
E'u teréi cuidádo de tudo,  
estéjaõ v<sup>ras</sup> descançádos  
Senhores, a cea está prómp-  
ta, está na méssa  
Nós vámos já  
Vámos ceár, senhores, para  
nos hírmos deitár cedo  
Sentémo-nos, senhores, sen-  
témo-nos á méssa  
Dái-nos de bebér  
A saúde de v<sup>ras</sup> méus se-  
nhóres  
He bóm o vínho?  
Naõ he máo  
O capañ, naõ esta bem as-  
sádo  
Dái-nos húmas póucas de  
laránjas, e huma póuca  
de pímenta  
Porque naõ come v<sup>ras</sup> destes  
pómbos?  
Eu tenho comído hum pómb-  
bo, e três calhándras  
Díze ao estalaja déiro que  
lhe querémos fallár*
- Let me alone, I'll please you,  
I warrant you  
Light the gentlemen  
Let's have our supper as  
soon as possible  
Before you have pulled your  
boots off, supper shall be  
upon the table  
Let our portmanteaus and  
pistols be carried up stairs  
Pull off my boots, and then  
you shall go to see whe-  
ther they have given the  
horses any hay  
You shall carry them to the  
river, and take care they  
give them some oats  
I'll take care of every thing,  
don't trouble yourself  
Gentlemen, supper is ready,  
it is upon the table  
We'll come presently  
Let's go to supper, gentle-  
men, that we may go to  
bed in good time  
Let us sit down, gentlemen,  
let's sit down at table  
Give us some drink  
To your health, gentlemen  
Is the wine good?  
It is not bad  
The capon is not done  
enough  
Give us some oranges, and  
a little pepper  
Why don't you eat of these  
pigeons?  
I have eaten one pigeon and  
three larks  
Tell the landlord we want  
to speak with him

XIII. Do Saltáre do Corrêr.	XIII. <i>Of Jumping and Running.</i>
<i>HORA</i> vámos, quer <i>vm.</i> saltár?	COME, will you go to jumping?
<i>Naõ</i> hé bóm saltár lógo despóis de comér	It is not good to jump immediately after dinner
<i>De que módo de saltár gósta</i> <i>vm. máis?</i>	What leaping do you like best?
<i>O máis commúm</i> he a pés juntos	The most usual is with one foot close to the other
<i>Quer vm. que saltémos só</i> <i>com hum pé?</i>	Shall we hop with one leg?
<i>Cómo vm. quizér</i>	As you please
<i>Este hé hum salto muito</i> <i>gránde</i>	This is a very great leap
<i>Quántos pés saltóu vm.?</i>	How many feet have you leap'd?
<i>Máis de quátro</i>	More than four
<i>Apósto que salto por cima</i> <i>daquelle barráncó</i>	I lay I leap clearly over that ditch
<i>Vm. salta com hum páo</i> <i>comprido</i>	You jump with a long stick
<i>Démos húma carreira</i>	Let us run races
<i>Quer vm. que corrámos a</i> <i>pé ou a caválo?</i>	Shall we run on foot or on horseback?
<i>De húma e óutra sórte</i>	Both ways
<i>Díga vm. dónde se há de</i> <i>começár, e ónde se há de</i> <i>acabár</i>	Appoint the race
<i>Começémos a corrêr da qui</i>	This shall be the starting place
<i>Correrémos até chegár a</i> <i>ésta árvore</i>	This tree shall be the goal
<i>Ténho corrido três vézes</i> <i>désde o lugar assinaládo</i> <i>até a árvore</i>	I have run three times from the starting-place to the tree
<i>Vm. náõ esperóu pello sinál</i> <i>para principiár a corrêr</i>	You did not stay for the signal to start
<i>Aquélle caválo corréo</i> <i>muito bém</i>	That horse has run his race very well
<i>Quántas carreiras tem elle</i> <i>dádo?</i>	How many heats has he run?
<i>Três ou quátro</i>	Three or four
<i>Vm. tem ganhádo</i>	You have won the plate

CARTAS  
DE  
COMMERCIO.

LETTERS  
ON BUSINESS, OR  
MERCANTILE AFFAIRS.

Senhor F. F. 30 de Janeiro  
Londres. de 1827.

Mr. F. F. The 30th of Jan.  
London. 1827.

*RECEBI' as suas de 3 e 5 do passado, no dia 5 do corrente, vindas pelo navio F. F. capitão B. B. pelas quaes vejo, Vm<sup>ce</sup> preténde carregár as fazendas que recommendei ao seu cuidado pela minha última, no primeiro navio para esta.*

*Inclúsas remeto a Vm<sup>ce</sup> mais algumas amóstras, porém dezejo que queira recomendar ao tintureiro, que as côres sejaõ vivas e firmes.*

*Pelo último navio que daqui partio lhe remeti a conta de venda, da sua partida de meias de seda, e das três caixas de chapeós, pelo navio A; e achándo Vm<sup>ce</sup> algumas partidas de qualquer destes dous géneros, que lhe agrádem, as póde mandar, pois saõ agora mui procurádos; deve comtudo tér muito cuidado em que sejaõ da última móda. Tenho veri-*

YOURS of the 3rd and 5th of last month, came to hand on the 5th current by the ship F. F. captain B. B.; and therein I take notice, that you intend to put on board the next good ship bound hither, the goods I recommended to your care in my last. Herewith I send you more patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your dyer, that the colours may be lively and durable. By the last ship I remitted you account of sales of the parcel of silk stockings, and the three boxes of hats, by the ship A; and if you meet with a parcel of either, or both, to your mind, please to send them, such articles being now in demand, but great care must be taken of the fashion and make. I have taken care to secure your twenty pipes of oil for the first ships in



*ficado o ajuste das 20 pipas azeite da safra proxima, para partirem pelos primeiros navios: igualmente tenho carregado no navio N. Capitão F. as suas 20 pipas de vinho tinto; assim como também as doze e três quartos de branco, cuja factura remeto inclusa: os conhecimentos, lhos remeteréi pelo correio. Heide estimar chégue tudo a salvamento. Hé quanto por hora se me offeréce a dizêrlhe; no entretanto sóu*

*De Vm<sup>a</sup> muito  
Veneradór e Criado.*

the season, and put on board the ship N. capt. F. your twenty pipes of red, and twelve pipes and three hogsheads of white wine, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the bills of lading shall be sent by the post, and I hope will come safe to hand; which being all that is necessary at present, I remain,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

1. *Senhór Diógo Jones.*

*VOU por ésta avisár a Vm<sup>a</sup> que pélo navio Derby, lhe remetêi duás saquinhas de diamantes, importádo em pagódas 4,396. 25 fan. 10 casks, em retórno dos seus fundos em meu poder; osquães fiz registrar nos livros da companhia em conformidáde com as suas ordems.*

*Inclusos achará o conhecimento, factura e a sua conta corrente fecháda, que desejo cheguem a salvamento e me alegrarei de que faça grandes interéces.*

*Cómo eu estou para voltar para a Európa, á minha chegáda a Lóndres, terei*

Mr. James Jones.

Sir;

THESE will advise you, that by this ship, the Derby, I have made the return of your stock in my hands, viz. two bulses of diamonds, amounting to pagodas 4,396, 25 fan. 10 casks, having registered them according to your order in the company's books; inclosed is a bill of lading, together with invoice, and your account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good account. As I am returning to Europe, at my arrival in London, I shall have the honour to see you,

COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c. 333

a honra de o vér, e lhe daréi entaõ huma relação exacta do commercio da India.

Tenho o gôsto de sér,  
De Vm<sup>ca</sup> reverénte Crd<sup>o</sup>  
e Veneradór.  
Forté de S. Jorge.  
12 de Jan. 1826.

and give you an exact account of the trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir,  
Your humble Servant.  
Fort St. George,  
Jan. 12, 1826.

Lisboa, 4 de Março de 1825.

Sñr. Joaõ Ferrier,  
Londres.

*ACHO-ME favorecido com a sua de 3 do passado, e véjo, que em execucao ás minhas ordems, Vm<sup>ca</sup> tém comprado os quinhentos barrís de arenques de fumo, a 111. por last. Estou certo que esse hé o menor preço por que Vm<sup>ca</sup> os póde obter, e não tenho a menor duvida que haõ de correspondér na sua qualidade.*

*O meu navto se está a aparelhar pára os ir buscar, e visto elle não demandár mais de nove pés d'água, poderá mesmo carregár no seu cáes (como Vm<sup>ca</sup> teve a bondade de me dizér) o que poupará quatro pennys por barril, de despézas. Julgo que elle poderá carregár sette centos barrís, ou mais. O capitão visto não ter despézas a fazer, não necessitará de dinhéiro.*

*Agradéço-lhe muito a sua informasaõ relativaménte*

Lisbon, 4 March, 1825.

Mr. John Ferrier,  
London.

Sir,

I AM favoured with yours of the 3rd of last month, and find, in compliance with my order, you have bought the five hundred barrels of red herrings, at 111. per last. I make no doubt, but that was the lowest price you could get them for, and the goodness of them corresponds. My ship is getting ready with all speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your quay, as she draws no more than nine feet of water (as you are pleased to mention), which will save the charge of fourpence per barrel; I judge she will carry seven hundred barrels, or more. The captain will not have occasion for any money, so will want no supply. I thank you for the information you gave me in relation to the exchange between Lon-

334 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

ao câmbio entre Londres e esta praça, mas como julgo as remessas sobre o Exchequer hum pouco arriscadas, Vm<sup>ca</sup> se servirá sacár sobre mim ao câmbio mais vantajoso possível, ficando na certéza, que as suas lèttas serão pagas com a punctualidade do costume.

Tenho o gôsto de sér.  
De Vm<sup>ca</sup>. m<sup>to</sup>. Atténto Ven<sup>to</sup>.

don and this place, but as I look upon the remittance of the money hence as hazardous in Exchequer bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious exchange possible, and your bills at the usual course, which shall meet with all due honour from,

Sir,  
Your humble servant.

Londres, 18 de Março  
de 1826.

Sñr. J. Morrice,  
Cadiz.

TENHO recebido em seu devido tempo as suas diferentes cartas, assim como também a minha conta corrente, a qual tenho lançado nos meus livros em conformidade com Vm<sup>ca</sup>.

A sua última hé de 29 do passado, e nella me manda o recibo das três lèttas, emportando em seis mil péças de oito, que meu irmão Jozé lhe remetêu por minha conta e ordem: espero fazer triste negócio com ellas depois de hum desembólço de tanto tempo, e com hum câmbio tão desfavorável. Acho que os limites que elle lhe dêu, fóraõ muito abáxo do câmbio, e preço da prata: porém visto eu ter esperádo

London, March 18, 1826.

Mr. J. Morrice,  
Cadiz.

Sir,

YOUR several letters came to hand in due time, as did my account current, which I have noted in conformity with you; your last to me was of the 29th ult., wherein you give me receipt of the three bills, amounting to six thousand pieces of eight, which my brother Joseph sent to you for my account and by my order; I shall make but a sad bargain of them, after so long a disbursement; besides they cost me a dear exchange; I find his limits to you were much under the price of plate and exchange: now since I have waited all this time, and there being no probability of their

*tódo este témpo, e não havér probabilidade de hum ou outro baixár, Vm<sup>o</sup> se servirá remetér-me o meu dinhéiro, ao câmbio corrente, para ésta praça, ou Amsterdam, como lhe parecer máis conveniênte aos meus interésses.*

*Se o preço do cochenilha, ou da prata descésse tânto, que Vm<sup>o</sup> julgásse sér máis conveniênte para mim, empregár o meu dinhéiro em qualquér destes dôis géneros, do que remetér-me lètras, nésse cázo o poderá fazer, deichândo eu isso inteiramente á sua disposição, na certéza de que tratará dos meus interésses, com o mesmo disvélo cómo se fóssem séus próprios.*

*Estimaria saber da chegada do cambóy, porque poderia sér produzísse alguma mudânça favorável no commercio, e que cada hum podésse fazer úso dos séus capitâes; pois ao presénte as circumstancias não convídaõ a náda. Hé quánto por agóra se me offeréce a dizêrlhe. No entretânto ténho o gosto de sér*

*De Vm<sup>o</sup> m<sup>to</sup> Attênto  
Ven<sup>o</sup> e Criado.*

falling, be pleased to send my money, as the exchange comes, either for this place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to account. If the plate or cochineal should fall to a price which you may conceive will answer better than by remittance at a due exchange, in such case invest my money in either of them, this I shall leave entirely to you, being persuaded you will act in my affairs as if they were your own. I should be glad to hear of the fleet's arrival; for, perhaps, it might give some favourable turn to business, so that one could make some use of one's money, for at present it does not invite one to any thing; which is all from,

Sir,  
Your humble Servant.



336 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

Londres, 3 de Abril  
de 1826.

Sen<sup>rs</sup> Mills & C<sup>o</sup>.

Porto.

*ESTA serve de informar a Vm<sup>ca</sup> que de sexta feira a iota dias se haõ de abrir os livros do Banco de Inglaterra, para pagar os devidendos vencidos até aquêlle dia, em que eu não deicharei de receber o que lhes pertence dos juros respectivos até a esse tempo, em virtude dos poderes que me conferirão para esse fim, e depois de os ter recebido, lhos remeterei.*

*Deos guarde a Vm<sup>ca</sup>  
m<sup>tos</sup> annos.*

*De Vm<sup>ca</sup> m<sup>to</sup>  
Ven<sup>er</sup> e Crd<sup>o</sup>.*

London, 3rd of April,  
1826.

Messieurs Mills & Co.

Oporto.

THIS may serve to inform you that the books will be opened at the Bank of England on Friday se'nnight, to pay the dividends due up to this time to the parties concerned, when I shall be ready to receive whatever belongs to you both, with the respective interests thereon, by virtue of your powers given to me for that purpose, and on receipt thereof, shall remit the same to you, whom God preserve many years.

Your most humble  
Servant.

Hum Escrito, ou Bilhete  
aberto, a hum Amigo ou  
Vezinho, em qualquer  
ocasiaõ.

*AO Senr. G. S. que seu  
creado T. M. lhe róga o  
favór, de lhe enviar pelo  
portadór*

*de que agora pre-  
cisa, e por que lhe ficará  
muito obrigado.*

*A short open Note or  
Message, to a friend or  
neighbour, for any thing.  
upon occasion.*

TO Mr. G. S. that his  
most humble servant, T.  
M. desires the favour of  
him to send by the bearer  
having  
immediate occasion for it,  
and by which he will greatly  
oblige him.

Carta, ou Instrumento de  
Procuração.

*SAIBAM* todos quantos  
este instrumento, ou carta  
de procuração virem, que  
eu, A. B., de Londres, hó-  
mem de negócio, tenho  
nomeado e constituído e  
por esta presente nomeo,  
ordeno, constituo e faço o  
senhor B. C. de  
negociante, méo verdadeiro  
e legitimo procurador, por  
mim e em meu nome e ao  
meu uso, póde demandar,  
arecadar, e receber de T.  
B. negociante a sóma de  
a mim devida pelo  
ditto T. B. dando e por  
esta concedendo ao meu  
ditto procurador o meu  
poder plenario e autori-  
dade de exercitar, e de usar  
de todas e taes acções e  
óutras cousas em direito  
necessárias, para a co-  
brança da ditta dívida, e em  
meu nome, de dar, e fazer  
quitações óu óutras descár-  
gas, e geralmente de fazer  
e executar na materia so-  
breditta taõ plenariamente  
como se eu mesmo fizesse  
ou pudesse fazer, estando  
pessoalmente presente; ra-  
tificando, confirmando, e  
outórgando toda e qualquer  
cousa que o ditto meu pro-  
curador legitimamente fizér  
ou causar de se fazer nella  
por esta presente. Em tes-  
temunha do que assinei e

*A Letter of Attorney.*

KNOW all men by these  
presents, that I, A. B., of  
London, merchant, have  
named and constituted, and  
by these presents do name,  
ordain, appoint, and make  
my trusty friend, B. C. of  
merchant,  
my true and lawful attor-  
ney, for me, and in my  
name, and to my use, to  
demand, sue for, recover,  
and receive of T. B. of  
merchant, the  
sum of \_\_\_\_\_ to me  
due and owing by and from  
the said T. B. giving, and  
hereby granting unto my  
said attorney, my full power  
and authority to use and  
exercise all such acts,  
things, and devices in the  
law, as shall be necessary  
for the recovering of the  
said debt, and give acquit-  
tance, or other discharges,  
in my name; to make and  
give, and generally to do  
and execute on the premi-  
ses, as fully as myself  
might or could do, were I  
personally present; rati-  
fying, confirming and al-  
lowing all and whatsoever  
my said attorney shall  
lawfully do, or cause  
to be done therein, by  
these presents. In wit-  
ness whereof I have here-  
unto set my hand and

338 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

*sellei ésta em aos 20 dias  
do mês de Março de 1826.*

*Por A. B.*

*Assinado e sellado*

*diãnte de*

*T. A. }  
M. B. } Testemunhas.*

seal, the 20th of March,  
1826. A. B.

Sealed and delivered  
in the Presence of

T. A.

M. B.

Carta, ou o Instrumêto de  
Fretamêto.

*ESTA carta, ou instru-  
mêto de fretamêto con-  
tratado, feito aos  
dias do mês de do  
anno de do naci-  
mêto de nôsso Senhor  
Jesus Christo, &c. Entre  
T. B. mestre, debaixo de  
Deos, do navio nomeado,  
de dozêntas e cin-  
coênta tonelâdas que ao  
presênte está surto e ancor-  
ado no rio de de  
húma parte, e E. T. M.  
B. L. &c. homens de negó-  
cio da outra parte: Cer-  
tificaõ que o ditto mēstre  
tem dado em aluguel e fre-  
tado o ditto navio aos dit-  
tos hómens de négocio e que  
elles os dittos homens de  
négocio têm tomado em  
aluguel pella viagem aos  
concértos e ás condições,  
a saber: o ditto mēstre faz  
concértos, promete e otórga,  
por elle mēsmo, seus testa-  
mentéiros, e administra-  
dores, e com os dittos ho-  
mens de négocio, e qual-  
quer dēlles, ou séus, e a  
qualquer dos seus testamen-*

*The Copy of a Charter-  
Party of Affreightment.*

THIS charter party of  
Affreightment, indented,  
made the  
of the month of  
anno domini,  
between T. A. master,  
under God, of the good ship  
or vessel, called the  
of the burthen of  
tons, or thereabouts, now  
riding at anchor, in the  
river of of  
the one part, and E, T, M,  
B, L, &c. merchants, of the  
other part, witnesseth, that  
the said master has granted  
and let the said ship to  
freight unto the said mer-  
chants, and that they the  
said merchantshave accord-  
ingly hired her for the  
voyage, and upon the terms  
and conditions following:  
that is to say, the said mas-  
ter doth covenant, promise,  
and grant for himself, his  
executors, and administra-  
tors, to and with the said  
merchants, and either of  
them, their and either of  
their executors, administra-  
tors, and assigns, by these

téiros, administradores, e constituintes, por estes presentes; que o ditto navio forte e saõ de quilha, e bem provido de mantimentos, enxárcias e gente, e aparelhado de todas as cousas convenientes e necessarias para fazer a viagem adiante declarada; com o primeiro vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos permittir despõs da data da presente, patirá do porto de com todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que as dittos homens de negõcio ou os seus constituintes, entremẽtes carregaráõ ou meteráõ abórdo d'elle e com elle em direitura dará á véla e applicará ao como o vento e o tempo máis favorecérem ao ditto navio na sua viagem; e em chegádo taõ perto do ditto lugar de elle o ditto mestre ou os seus constituintes dentro de dias de trabalho para se contárem logo despõs de tal sua chegada, não sómente descargaráõ, entregaráõ as dittas fazendas e mercadorias metidas abórdo do ditto navio ao sobre ditto, aos dittos homens de negõcio, aos seus feitõres ou constituintes, ou a algũs ou algũm d'elles a salvamento e bẽm acondicionadas, salvo o risco dos máres, e o tolhimẽto de principes e gover-

presents; that the said ship, strong and sound, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and appavelled, with all things fit, needful and necessary, for the performance of the voyage, hereafter mentioned, shall, with the first fair wind and weather, which God shall send, after the date of these presents, depart from the port of with all such goods and merchandize as the said merchants, or their assigns, shall in the mean time lade and put on board of her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto as wind and weather shall best serve for the said ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said place of he the said master, or assigns shall and will, within working days next from and after such her arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said goods and merchandize put on board the said ship at aforesaid, unto the said merchants, their factors, or assigns, or some or one of them, in safety, and well conditioned, the dangers of the seas, and restraint of princes and rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said ship, of and



*nadóres, mas também receberáõ, tornarãõ a carregár, e tomarãõ abórdo do ditto navio, de e dos dittos hómens de negócio, dos séus feitóres ou constituíntes, ou de algúns ou algúm délles, tôdas as tâes fazéndas e mercadorias que elles ou qualquer délles ali caregarãõ, ou meteraõ abórdo d'elle até o compriméto intéiro da carga do ditto navio; a saber: tánto quánto bém se poder arrumár debaixo da cubérta no convés, e adiante do mastro grãnde, salvo o lugar para os mantíméntos, enxárcias e aparelhos do ditto navio, e os dittos dias de trabalho sêndo acabádos, ou o ditto navio sêndo ali mais depréssa despachádo, o que priméiro succedér, elle o ditto méstre ou os seus constituíntes com a priméira bóa occasião de témpo e vénto favorável em dereitura navegarãõ e tornarãõ a vir côm o ditto navio e a sua carga, do ditto póрто de descaregar, e recaregar de aqui dêntro de*

*diã de trabalho logo despóis da entráda do ditto navio dáda na alfândega desta ditto elle o ditto méstre ou os séus constituíntes descaregarãõ e entregaráõ as dittas fazéndas e mercadorias carregádas abórdo do ditto na-*

from the said merchants, their factors, or assigns, or some or one of them, all such goods and merchandize, as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said ship's full and complete lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole hole, and between decks, afore the main mast, room only reserved for the said ship's provisions, tackle, and apparel, and the said

working days being expired, or the said ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said master, or his assigns, shall and will, with the then next opportunity of wind and weather from her said unlading and relading port of aforesaid, directly sail, return, and come back with the said ship and lading unto the port of and here within working days next after the said ship shall be entered in the custom-house of this said

he the said master, or his assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said goods and merchandizes, laden on board the said ship at her lading and relading aforesaid, unto the said merchants, their executors, administrators, or assigns, in safety,

vio ao seu descarregar e  
 recarregar *sobre*  
 ditto, aos ditto's homens de  
 negócio, e os seus testamen-  
 téiros, administradores, ou  
 constituintes, a salvamento,  
 salvo o risco dos mares e o  
 tolhimento de principes e  
 governadores, e assim se  
 acabará a ditto destináda  
 viagem *e os dit-*  
 tos homens de negócio con-  
 cêrtam, prometem, e otôr-  
 gam por elles mesmos e  
 qualquér d'elles, ou seus, e  
 qualquér de seus testamen-  
 téiros, administradores, e  
 constituintes por esta pre-  
 sente: que os seus tes-  
 tamentéiros, administra-  
 dores, feitôres ou constitu-  
 intes não sómênt. descarre-  
 garão e recarregarão o ditto  
 navio ao seu pôrto, de des-  
 carregar, e recarregar de  
*sobre ditto,*  
 e despacharão e descar-  
 regarão o mesmo nêste  
*na manéira e*  
 fórma acima declaráda:  
 e dentro dos cêrtos dias  
 e têmesos sôbre nomeádos;  
 mas também por intêiro  
 de tôdo o frête que  
 se vencêr, para se pagar  
 pedir por e duránte ésta  
 presênte destináda viagem;  
 bêm e verdadeiramente pa-  
 garão ou causarão que se  
 pague ao ditto mêtstre, aos  
 seus testamentéiros, admi-  
 nistradores ou constitu-  
 intes *a somma de*  
 de dinhéiro cor-

and well conditioned, the  
 dangers of the seas, and  
 restraint of princes and  
 rulers, excepted, and so end  
 the said intended voyage;  
 and the said merchants do  
 covenant, promise, and  
 grant, for themselves, and  
 either of them, their, and  
 either of their executors  
 and administrators, to and  
 with the said master, his  
 executors and administra-  
 tors, and assigns, by these  
 presents, that their  
 executors, administrators,  
 factors, or assigns, shall and  
 will not only unlade and  
 relade the said ship, at  
 her unlading and relading  
 port of *aforesaid,*  
 and dispatch, and discharge  
 the same at this  
 in the manner and form as  
 above expressed, and with-  
 in the respective days and  
 times above mentioned, but  
 also shall and will, in full of  
 all freight to be due, pay-  
 able, or demandable, for or  
 during this present intended  
 voyage, well and duly pay,  
 or cause to be paid, unto  
 the said master, his execu-  
 tors, administrators, or as-  
 signs  
 the sum of  
 of lawful money of  
 in the manner and form  
 following: that is to say,  
 part thereof  
 within *days* after  
 the said ship shall be en-  
 tered into the custom-

342 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

rente de *na maneira*  
e fórma seguinte; a saber :  
*parte*

*délle d'entro em*  
*dias despóis da entrada do*  
*ditto navio dáda na alfán-*  
*dega de* *Item*  
*máis . . . . d'entro em*

*dias proximos seguintes,*  
*e o restante do ditto frète*  
*intéiro d'entro em*

*dias logo despóis da des-*  
*cárga do ditto navio aquí*  
*em* *sobre ditto,*

*E acórdase reciprocamente*  
*por e entre ámbas as partes*  
*por elles mesmos, os seus*  
*particuláres testamentei-*  
*ros, e administradores que*  
*tódos os gástos dos pórtos*  
*que se vencérem para pa-*  
*gáirse ou pedirse, durante*  
*esta presente destinada*  
*viagem; serão pagos e sa-*  
*tisfeitos na maneira e*  
*fórma seguinte: a saber*

*délles, p'ellos dittos*  
*hómens de negócio ou seus*  
*testamenteiros ou consti-*  
*tuíntes: Além disso, por,*  
*ésta se concérta que poderá*  
*sér e seja lícito aos, e*  
*p'ellos dittos hómens de*  
*negocio, os seus feitóres,*  
*ou constituíntes de retér o*  
*ditto navio em deténça ao*  
*seu póрто, descarga e re-*  
*cárga sobre ditto, e tambem*  
*em . . . . sobre ditto, tanto*  
*témpe e tantos dias que se*  
*requéirão, além dos dias*  
*certos acima apontados,*  
*sálvo que não passem*

*dias por intéiro; elles*

house of *Item*  
within *more thereof*  
*days then*

next following, and the  
remaining part of the said  
whole freight within  
days next after the said  
ship shall be delivered after  
lading here at

aforsaid; and it is mutually  
agreed by and between the  
said parties to these presents,  
for themselves, their several  
executors and administra-  
tors, that all port charges  
which shall grow due, pay-  
able, or demandable, during  
this present intended voy-  
age, shall be paid and  
satisfied in the manner and  
form following; that is to  
say,

thereof by  
the said merchants, their  
executors, factors, or as-  
signs, and the other  
thereof by the said master,  
his executors or assigns:  
further, it is hereby agreed,  
that it shall and may be  
lawful unto and for the said  
merchants, their factors, or  
assigns, to keep the said  
ship in demurrage at her  
unlading and relading port  
above mentioned, and also  
at aforsaid, over  
and above the respected  
days aforementioned, such  
other time and number of  
days as will be requisite, so  
as the same exceed not

*days in the whole, they*  
the said merchants, their  
factors, for each and every



os dittos homens de negócio, os seus feitôres, constituíntes por cáda húm e cáda tál dia pagándo ao ditto mēstre ou aos séus constituíntes de dia em dia, cómo mēsmo se vencér para se pagar, qualquér cōusa sobreditta em contrario não obstánte; e péllo comprímēto de tōdas, e de cáda, huma das cōusas acíma declarádas, as quâes por páрте e péllo que tōca ao ditto mēstre, aos séus testamentéiros, administradôres ou constituíntes e cáda húm délles são e devem de ser avidus, tidas, observádas e compridas, o ditto mēstre se obriga a si mēsmo, os seus testamentéiros, e administradôres, juntamēnte com o ditto navío, o seu fréte, enxárcias e aparélhos aos dittos homens de negócio, aos séus testamentéiros, administradôres e constituíntes, e cáda húm délles na sōma ou péna de dinheiro corrēnte de pára se pagar bém e verdadeirámēnte por ésta presente, e também péllo comprímēto de tōdas e de cáda huma das cōusas sétre dittas, os quâes por páрте e péllo que tōca aos dittos homens de negócio, aos séus testamentéiros administradôres, constituíntes ou qualquér délles, são e devem de sér guardádas, pagas, e compridas; os dittos há-

such day, paying unto the said master, or his assigns day by day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any thing aforesaid to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the performance of all and singular the premises, which on the part and behalf of the said master, his executors, administrators, and assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said master doth bind and oblige himself, his executors, and administrators, together with the said ship and her freight, tackle and apparel unto the said merchants, their executors, administrators, and assigns, and every of them, in the sum or penalty of                   pounds of lawful money of well and truly to be paid by these presents, and likewise for the performance of all and singular the premises, which on the part and behalf of the said merchants, their executors, administrators, and assigns, or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid and performed, the said merchants do bind and oblige themselves, their executors, and administrators, jointly and severally, together with their goods, to be laden on board the said



*mens de negócio sé obrigaõ a si mêmicos, os séus testaménteiros, e administradores, junta e separadamente cõm a suas fazendas que se caregaram abõrdo do ditto navio nesta presente destinada viagem, ao ditto mestre aos séus testaménteiros, administradores e constituíntes, e a cada hum delles, na semelhãnte sõma da pãna de de semelhãnte dinhẽiro correntẽ de para sãr pago bẽm e verdadeiramente por esta presente; em testemunha do que as partes sobredittas assinarãõ e setarãõ reciprocamente estas presentes cartas fretamento contratadas, ao dia e anno primẽiro actma declarado.*

T. B.

*Sellado e entregue  
diante de  
A. B.  
C. D.*

Apõlice de Seguro.

*EM o Nõme de Deos,  
Amen,  
tãnto no seu próprio nõme,  
cõmo, por, ou em o nõme,  
ou nõmes de tãdos e cada  
pessõa ou pessõas a quem  
o mẽsimo pertencẽr, põssa  
ou poderã pertencẽr, em  
parte ou em tãdo, faz o  
seguro, causa asi mẽsimo  
e a elles, e a cada hum  
delles, de assegurarẽse, per-*

ship, this present intended voyage, unto the said master, his executors, administrators, and assigns, and every of them, in the like sum and penalty of of like lawful money of also well and truly to be paid by these presents. In witness whereof, the parties aforesaid to these present charter-parties indented, have interchangeably put their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

T. B.

Sealed and delivered in  
the presence of  
A. B.  
C. D.

*A Policy of Assurance.*

IN the Name of God,  
Amen, as well  
in his own name, as for and  
in the name and names of  
all and every other person  
and persons to whom the  
same doth, may, or shall  
appertain, in part, or in all,  
doth make assurance, and  
cause himself and them,  
and every of them, to be  
insured, lost, or not lost

*didos ou não perdidos  
sobre qualquér género de fa-  
zênduse mercadorias quaes-  
quér, carregadas, ou para  
se carregarem, abórdo do  
bóm navio por nóme*

*do porte de  
toneladas, de que hé méstre  
debáixo de Déos P. M. ou  
quém quér que fôr por  
méstre do ditto navio, ou o  
méstre, délle se nomée ou  
nomeará; principiâdo a  
aventúra sobre as dittas  
fazêndas e mercadorias de,  
e logo despóis de carregál-  
las abórdo do ditto navio*

*e assim se continuará  
e ficará até que o ditto  
navio côm as dittas fazên-  
das e mercadorias quâes-  
quér chegar*

*e as  
mêsmas ahí descarregadas  
em salvamêto; e será  
lícito parao ditto navio,  
nesta viágem, de parár e  
delêrse em quâesquér pór-  
tos, ou lugáres*

*sém  
prejuízo a éste Seguro. As  
dittas fazêndas e mercado-  
rias por concérto, são, e se-  
ráo avaliadas em*

*Sém que se dé outra conta  
dêllas mêsmas, tocânte as  
aventúras e riscos com que  
nós os seguradóres nos  
contentamos e que tomámos  
sobre nós nesta viágem;  
ellas são dos máres, das  
náos de guérta, de fôgo,  
inimígos, corsarios, lad-  
rões, roubadóres, alijamên-  
tos ou fazêndas perdidas e  
deitadas no már, lettras de*

upon any kind  
of goods and merchandize  
whatsoever, laden or to be  
laden aboard the good ship  
called the burthen

tons, or there-  
abouts; whereof P. M. is  
master, under God, for this  
present voyage

or whosoever else shall go  
for master in the said ship,  
or by whatsoever name or  
names the said ship, or  
the master thereof, is or  
shall be named or called;  
beginning the adventure  
upon the said goods and  
merchandise from and im-  
mediately following the  
lading thereof aboard the  
said ship

and so  
shall continue and endure  
until the said ship, with  
the said goods and mer-  
chandise whatsoever shall  
be arrived and the  
same there safely landed;  
and it shall be lawful for  
the said ship in this voyage  
to stop and stay at any  
port or places

without prejudice to this  
assurance. The said goods  
and merchandise by agree-  
ment, are and shall be  
valued at without

further account to be given  
for the same, touching the  
adventúres and perils which  
we the assurers are con-  
tented to bear, and do take  
upon us in this voyage;  
they are of the seas, men-  
of-war, fire, enemies,



*párte, os nóssos herdeiros, testamentéiros, administradores e constituintes pello verdadeiro cumprimento das cósas acima declaradas, confessando que estamos págos e satisfeitos do que se nos déve ácônta dèste segúro.*

*Em testemunha do que nós os seguradores, assinamos ao pé dèste, com as quantias assegúradas, &c.*

*Eu A. B. sôu contênte com esté segúro por cém livras Esterl. L. em de £. 100.*

tors, and assigns, to the assured, their executors, administrators, and assigns, for the true performance of the premises, confessing ourselves paid the consideration due unto us for this assurance, by

In witness whereof, we the assurers have subscribed our names and sums assured in

I A. B. am contented with this assurance for one hundred pounds. Witness my hand the 15th } £.100  
of March, 1826. }

Conhecimento.

*DIGO eu T. B. de mestre ou capitão que sôu do navío que Déos salve por nóme que ao presênte está surto e ancorado no pôrto de para com o favôr de Déos seguir a sua viagem ao pôrto de aõnde hé minha diréita descárga, que hé verdáde, que recebí, e ténho carregado dèntro do ditto navío debáixo de cuberta enxúta e bém aõndicionada de marcado comamarca de fóra, o qual me obrigo o prométo, levãndome Déos a bóm salvamêto e ditto navío ao ditto pôrto, de entregár em nóme do sobre ditto a T. M,*

*A Bill of Lading.*

SHIPPED, by the grace of God, in good order, and well-conditioned, by in and upon the good ship called the whereof is master under God for this present voyage and now riding at anchor in and by God's grace bound for to say being marked and numbered as in the margin, and are to be delivered in like good order, and well-conditioned, at the aforesaid port of the danger of the seas only excepted, unto Mr. or his assigns, he or they paying for the said goods with primage



*auzêntea quem sêus poderes  
tivér pagãndome de  
frête para assim com-  
prir e guardár, obrigo min-  
ha pessoa, e bêms e ditto  
navio; em certêsa do qual  
dei tres conhecimêtos de  
hum theór, assinãdos por  
mim ou por meu escrivãõ;  
hum comprido os outros naõ  
vãlhaõ; feito em 14 de  
Março de 1826 Annos.*

*Ignóro o conteúdo.*

and average, as is accus-  
tomed. In witness whereof,  
the master and purser of  
the said ship has affirmed  
to three bills of lading, all  
of this tenor and date; the  
one of which three bills  
being accomplished, the  
other two to stand void.  
And so God send the good  
ship to her desired port in  
safety. Amen. Dated in  
the 14th of March  
1826.

Inside and contents un-  
known.

Instrumento ou Escritura  
de Compromisso.

*A TÓDOS quãntos êste  
presênte Instrumento ou  
escritúra de compromisso  
virem, de nós credôres de  
G. M. negociante de  
saúde; Cõmo o ditto  
G. M. ao presênte fica de-  
vendo e em dereito dêve a  
nós os credôres d'elle ditto  
G. M. várias e divêrsas  
sõmmas de dinhêiro, &c.  
As quães em rasãõ de  
muitas dívidas e algúmas  
dêllas mui grãndes, que  
tambem a êlle, naõ se pôdem  
arrecadár sem algúma di-  
laçãõ de tẽmpo, e por sêrem  
algúmas dêllas irrecuper-  
ãveis sem demãnda, elle  
está por óra muito desa-  
bilitãdo de fazer paga-*

*A Letter of Licence.*

TO all people, to whom  
this present writing shall  
come, we the creditors of  
G. M. of  
merchant, send greeting.  
Whereas the said G. M. at  
this present time, doth stand  
indebted, and doth justly  
owe unto us the said cre-  
ditors of him the said G. M.  
divers and sundry sums of  
money, &c. which, by rea-  
son of many debts, and  
some of them very great,  
that are likewise justly  
owing unto him, and can-  
not be had or recovered  
without some respite of  
time, and some of them not  
without suit, he is very  
much disabled at present  
to make payment unto us

*mêto a nós os seus acre-  
dôres da nossa intêira e  
jûsta dívida confôrme a  
sua vontade e desêjo; a  
respeito de que, elle nos péde  
com tódo o encarecimento  
que nós os dittos acredôres,  
e cada hum de nós fôssemos  
servidos de dár e concedér  
a elle o ditto G. M. aos seus  
testamentêiros, administra-  
dôres, ou constituíntes,  
tánta larguêsa ou dilação  
de têmpo pëllo pagamêto  
e satisfaçãõ de nossas dí-  
vidas particuláres, que lhe  
parecér jûsto, e rasãõ pëllo  
alcãnce e cobrança das  
dittas dívidas: Asabér,  
que nós e cáda hum de nós  
ficássemos contêntes a  
tomár e receber de nossas  
dívidas intêiras em  
para se repartírem em  
pártes, pára se pagárem  
em pagamêtos  
divérsos na manêira e  
fórma seguínte: Asabér, o  
primeiro pagamêto délla  
há de ser e o resto  
pagár-se-há em  
proximo pëllo in-  
têira pága e satisfaçãõ  
das dittas dívidas espece-  
ficádas; E pëllo máis  
plenário comprímêto dos  
vários pagamêtos sobre-  
dittos em tál manêira e  
fórma cómo acima se limita  
e declára; ao verdadêiro  
intênto déstas presêntes  
elle o ditto G. M. ao ou  
ântes do será obri-  
gádo a nós os dittos acré-*

the said creditors, of our  
whole and just debt, as he  
seems willing and desirous;  
in consideration whereof,  
he desires us, that we the  
said creditors, and every  
one of us, would be pleased  
to give and grant unto the  
said G. M. his executors,  
administrators, or assigns,  
such liberty or respite of  
time, for the payment and  
satisfaction of our several  
debts, as he thinks reason-  
able for the obtaining, get-  
ting, and recovering of the  
said debts: viz. That we  
and every one of us would  
be content to take, and ac-  
cept of our whole debts in  
to be divided in  
parts, to be paid  
at several pay-  
ments, in manner and form  
following: viz. The first  
payment thereof to be  
and the residue to be  
paid at next  
in full payment and satis-  
faction of the said several  
debts: and for the more  
full performance of the said  
several payments aforesaid,  
in such manner and form  
as is above limited and de-  
clared, according to the  
true meaning of these pre-  
sents, he the said G. M.  
shall and will, at, or before  
the become bound  
unto us the said creditors  
respectively, by one obliga-  
tion in due form of law to  
be made, including all and

dóres na mesma conformidade, por huma obrigação que se fará na melhor forma de deréito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos, na maneira acima limitada, em hum certo lugar ou lugares convenientes de nós os dittos acredores nomeados, e a pena de cada huma das obrigações há de ser dobrada da somma inteira, inclusa nella mesma, para ser a nós entregue e a cada hum de nós, os nossos testamenteiros, ou constituintes, ao ou antes do próximo seguinte da data desta; por esta causa sáibase; que nós os dittos acredores aqui a baixo assinados, e cada hum de nós para si em particular, e por seus testamenteiros, administradores e constituintes ao respeito do emcima especificado e declarado, por estes presentes, de vontade própria, consentimos, concordamos, ao e com o ditto G. M. ou seus testamenteiros, administradores e constituintes por estes presentes que nós os dittos acredores, e cada hum de nós, os nossos testamenteiros, administradores e constituintes, aceitarémos do ditto G. M. dos seus testamenteiros, administradores e constituintes, todas e cada huma de táes dívidas

every one of the payments in such sort as is above limited at some convenient place or places by each of us the said creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the penalty of every obligation to be doubled the whole sum included in the condition of the same to be delivered unto us, and every one of us, our executors or assigns, at or before the next ensuing the date hereof: Know ye, therefore, that we the said creditors, whose names are here under-written, and every one of us for his own part, and for his executors, administrators, and assigns, for the consideration above specified and expressed, do by these presents willingly consent, covenant, promise, and agree to and with the said G. M. his executors, administrators, and assigns, to accept of the said G. M. his executors, and assigns, all and every of the said debts and sums of money by the said G. M. unto us, and every one of us, owing, and paying upon such obligations, assurance and assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such manner and sort, and at such days and times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said creditors, and every of us, our, and

*e quantias de dinhéiro do ditto G. M. a nós e cada hum de nós, devidas e vendidas em virtude de táes obrigaçõens, segurança ou seguranças sobredittas, para se pagárem em tál modo e manéira, e aos táes dias e témpos que acima se limitaõ e requerem. E além disso, que nós os dittos credóres e cada hum de nós, ou nõssos e cada hum de nõssos testamentéiros, administradóres e constituíntes, em conformidáde á entrega da ditta obrigaçãõ a nós e a cada hum de nõssos testamentéiros, administradóres, e constituíntes, sellarémos, assinarémos, e na melhór fórma e direito entregarémos ao ditto G. M. a nõssa geral e sufficiénte descárgea, para sér rendida por elle o ditto G. M. ou séus testamentéiros, administradóres, e constituíntes, á data e á limitaçãõ, antes do dia e data desta obrigaçãõ nõva; em testemunha do que témos assinádo e selládo esta.*

*Datáda aos 15 de Maio  
de 1826.*

every of our executors, administrators, and assigns, respectively, upon the delivery of the said obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our executors, administrators, and assigns, shall and will, at the charge of the said G. M. his executors, administrators, and assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due form of law, deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient general release, for him, his executors, administrators, or assigns, to bear date and limitation, before the day of the date of this new obligation to be made for the debt. In witness whereof, we have hereunto set our hands and seals.

Dated the 15th of May  
1826, &c.



Lêtras de Cambio.

*Bills of Exchange.*

Londres, por 300 Milreis.  
5 de Junho, 1826.

London, for 300 Milreas.  
5th of June, 1826.

*A' VISTA desta minha priméira lêtra de cambio, pagará Vm. ao senhor T. M. ou ordem a somma de trezêntos Milreis em dinhéiro corrênte de Portugál, valór recebido do senhor T. D. como por aviso de*

*Seu Venerador e Creádo.*

*Ao Senhor T. M. Negociante em Lisboa.*

*T. M.*

AT sight of this my first bill of exchange, please to pay to Mr. T. M. or order, the sum of three hundred Milreas in current money of Portugal, value received of Mr. T. D. placing it to account, as per advice from, Sir,

Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. M. Merchant  
in Lisbon.

T. M.

Lisboa, 250l. Esterl.  
7 de Junho, 1826.

Lisbon, for 250l. Sterling.  
7th of June, 1826.

*A QUARÉNTA dias vista desta minha segunda letra de cambio (a primeira não sendo pága) pagará Vm. ao Senhor F. G. & Companhia, ou ordem a somma de dozêntas e cinquenta livras esterlinas em moéda corrente de Inglaterra, valór recebido do Senhor J. D. como por aviso de*

*Seu Venerador e Creádo.*

*H. S.*

*Ao Senhor T. B. Negociante em Londres.*

AT Forty days sight of this my second bill of exchange, my first and third not being paid, please to pay to Mr. F. G. and Company, or order, the sum of two hundred and fifty pounds sterling, in current money of England, value received of Mr. J. D. and place it to account, as per advice, from Sir,

Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. B. Merchant  
in London.

F. P.

Protesto de huma Letra  
de Cambio.

*A Protest of a Bill of Ex-  
change.*

*SAIBAM todos a quem  
ésta presénte escritúra  
tocár que aos do  
mêz de, do áнно de  
a requeriméto de P. C.  
negociante de eu  
M. N. tabaliaõ de nótas  
jurádo e admitido pella  
autoridade del Rei, &c. fúi  
á casa da moráda do senhor  
T. B. sôbre quem a letra de  
cambio acima referida hé  
sacáda, e mostréi a originál  
ao ditto T. B. requeréndo a  
sua aceitação délla: o qual  
me respondéo que não acei-  
taria a ditta létra por  
humas rasôens que escreve-  
ria ao senhor T. P. sacadór;  
pella qual rasão eu o ditto  
tabaliaõ protestei, por este  
presente protéstó, tánto  
côntra o ditto F. P. o sacadór  
cômo também côntra o ditto  
T. B. sôbre quem hé sacáda,  
demáis côntra todas as  
outras pessóas, endossa-  
dôres, ou outras nélla in-  
teressádas, por tódos os  
câmbios, recâmbios, dános  
e interésses quâesquer: em  
presença de H. J. S. T.  
chamados por testemúnhas  
a éste presénte ácto, féito  
no meu escritório em o dia  
e áнно acima declarado.*

*M. N. Notario Publico.*

KNOW all persons whom  
this present writing may  
concern, that the of  
in the year at  
the request of Mr. P. C. of  
the request of Mr. P. C. of  
merchant, I, M. N.  
public notary, sworn and  
admitted by authority of his  
most sacred majesty, did go  
to the dwelling-house or  
habitation of Mr. T. B.  
upon whom the above-  
named bill of exchange is  
drawn, and showed the  
original unto the said Mr.  
T. B. demanding his ac-  
ceptance of the same, who  
answered me he should not  
accept the same bill, for  
some reasons he should  
write Mr. F. P. the drawer;  
wherefore I the said notary  
did protest, and by these  
presents protest, as well  
against the said F. P. the  
drawer, as likewise against  
the said T. B. upon whom  
it is drawn; as also against  
all other persons, indorsers,  
or others therein concerned,  
for all changes, rechanges,  
damages and interest what-  
soever, in presence of H. J.  
and S. T. called for witnesses  
to this present act, done in  
my office in the day  
and year above mentioned.

*M. N. Notary Public.*

## Formas de Recibos.

*Forms of Receipts.*

Dinheiro recebido por  
inteiro.

*Money received in Full.*

*Recebi do senhor Thomas  
Crew, seis livras sete shi-  
lins seis pennys, resto de  
todas as contas, com o ditto.*  
A. B.

RECEIVED, 1st January  
1826, of Mr. Thomas Crew,  
six pounds seven shillings  
and sixpence, in full of all  
demands, per

1 de Janeiro.

A. B.

Dinheiro recebido por Conta  
de meu Amo.

*For another's Use.*

*Recebi do Sr. Jonas Lee,  
quatro livras e cinco shilins  
por conta de meu amo  
Moises Trust.*

RECEIVED, 22nd Febru-  
ary, 1826, of Mr. Jonas Lee,  
four pounds five shillings,  
for the use of my master  
Moses Trust, per

C. D.

22 de Fevereiro 1826.

C. D.

Dinheiro recebido á cõta.

*Money received in Part.*

*Recebi, a 30 de Março,  
1826, do Sr. Jacinto Cook,  
o cinco livras cinco shilins,  
á cõta de doze livras e dez  
shilins, por conta de meu  
pai Antonio Truelove.*

RECEIVED, 30th of March,  
1826, of Mr. James Cook,  
five pounds ten shillings,  
in part of twelve pounds  
ten shillings, for my father,  
Anthony Truelove, per

E. F.

30 de Março 1826.

E. F.

Dinheiro recebido á cõta  
de Contas que não estão  
ajustadas.

*Money received on Accounts  
unsettled.*

*Recebi da senhora Mar-  
tha Rich, por maos de Pedro  
Cornet, onze livras á conta.*  
G. H.

RECEIVED, 24th April,  
1826, of Mrs. Martha Rich,  
by the hands of Peter Cor-  
net, eleven pounds on ac-  
count.

24 de Abril 1826.

G. H.

Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.

*Recebi, a 15 de Mayo, 1826, o empórte d'esta conta.*

I. K.

*When a Bill is paid in Full.*

RECEIVED, 15th May, 1826, the full contents hereof.

I. K.

Quando se paga dinheiro a Conta de hum ról.

*Recebi sete livras á conta deste rol.*

L. M.

6 de Junho de 1826.

*When a Bill is paid in Part.*

RECEIVED, 26th June, 1826, seven pounds in part hereof.

L. M.

Notas ou Obrigaçoes que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro imprestado.

Londres, 4 de Junho, 1826.

*Eu abaixo firmado prométo, pagar ao Sr. E. D. banqueiro do thesouro de sua Majestade, do Excise, ou á sua ordem, quarénta dias despóis da dáta desta obrigação quatro céntas e trinta livras por valór recebido.*

Christovão Wade.

£. 430

*Promissory Notes for a Man's Self.*

London, June 4th, 1826.

I PROMISE to pay to Mr. Edward Draper, cashier of his majesty's revenue of Excise, or order, forty days after date, four hundred and thirty pounds, value received

Christopher Wade.

£. 430

*Eu abaixo firmado prométo pagar ao Sr. Paulo Barker ou á sua ordem em sendo requerido, trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous shilins e seis pennys por valór recebido hoje 17 de Julho, 1826.*

Philip Venham.

£. 394 2 6

I PROMISE to pay to Paul Barker, esq. or order, on demand, three hundred and ninety-four pounds, two shillings, and six-pence, value received this 17th of July, 1826.

Philip Venham.

£. 394 2 6



356 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

*EU abaixo firmado prométo pagar ao Sr. J. T. ou á sua ordem, quarénta e nóve livras, e tres shilins 6 mezes despóis da dáta desta obrigação, por valor recebido em verdade do que asignei esta 24 de Agosto 1826.*

*W. J.*

£. 49 3 0.

[*N. B. Obsérvese que em nótas ou obrigações sempre se declára a sóma recebida sem a qual não são de nenhuma força nem tem authoridade.*]

I PROMISE to pay to Mr. J. T. or order, forty-nine pounds three shillings, six months after date, value received. Witness my hand this 24th of August, 1826.

W. J.

£. 49 3 0.

[N. B. Observe in promissory notes that the words "Value received" must be inserted, or they are of no force.]

---

---

PORTUGUESE  
GRAMMAR.

---

PART IV.

CONTAINING

SEVERAL USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING PASSAGES,

COLLECTED FROM THE BEST PORTUGUESE WRITERS.

**E**NTRE os bons ditos de Souzêni, poeta Persi-  
ano, se cõta, que bebêdo com outro poeta,  
seu amigo, certo licor, se queixáva, de que éra mu-  
ito quente e dizêndolhe, Amigo, “pobre de ti que  
daqui a poucos días te faráõ bebêr no inférno agoas  
sulfúreas, e ardêntes, que te abrazaráõ as entrân-  
has”—“Naõ impórta,” replicôu Souzêni; “basta-  
rá que me lêmbrê algum dos teus versos, que ellas se  
faráõ mais frias, que neve.”

---

Catharina Parthenay, sobrinha da célebre Anna  
Parthenay, dêu esta bella respõsta a Henrique IV.  
“Saíba vossa mag<sup>de</sup> que êu sôu muito pobre para ser  
“sua consórte; e que no mesmo tempo descêdo de  
“huma família muito illústre, para ser sua dama.”

Huma Princêza Cathólica, e de rara virtúde, vên-do reduzido o Marechal de Saxonia ás agoniás da móрте, disse, que éra para sentir o não se podêr rezár hum *De profundis* pella alma de hum que tínha feito cantár tantos *Te Deum*.

---

A Dom Christóvão de Moura, Marquêz de Castêllo Rodrigo, e Vice-Rey de Portugal por Dom Philipe Tercêiro, índo por huma sala do Páço de Lisbôa, hum soldádo honrado, que tínha bem servído na India, lhe dáva hum memoriál, e pedía, que se lembrásse dos seus papéis, porque havia largo têmpo, que andáva pretendêndo. Respondêo-lhe o Marquêz, que havia muíta Gente para despachár, e não se podiãõ despachár todos com brevidáde; o soldádo adiantãdo o passo se atravessôu diãnte sem descomposiçãõ, e fazêndo parár o Vice-Rey lhe disse com grande confiãça; “Senhór Dom Christóvão despáche Vs. os hómens, e deixe a Gente.” O Marquêz aceitôu o memoriál, e o despachôu no mesmo dia.

---

Mandãdo hum Fidálgo em Lisbôa abrir em huma rua os Alicérces para se fazêrem humas casas, sem licênça da câmera, passãdo poralli o procuradôr da cidade, pôz pêna aos officiães, que não trabalhássem na obra sem licênça dos Vereadôres; e os officiães dizêndo-o ao Fidálgo mandôu-lhes elle que não deixássem de trabalhár, e que não fizêsem caso do que dizia aquelle villãõ ruim; tornãdo fo procuradôr da cidade por allí e achãdo os officiães trabalhãdo, mandôu que déssem com elles no tronco; e não faltãdo quem lhe contásse o que o Fidálgo dissêra, têve-o em ôlho; e no tempo que elle hía atravessãdo pello Rocío para sua casa, sahío-lhe ao camínho a cavállo, e com huma lança que leváva, dãdo na sua sômbra, lhe disse: “Porque o

que disséstes, fôï em minha ausência, dôu em vós-sa sômbra ; se mo tivésseis ditto no rosto, déra na vossa pessôa.”

---

Abou Hanífal, o mais célebre doutôr dos Musulmanes, têndo recebído huma bofetáda, dísse ao que o tínha insultádo : “ Eu poderia vingárme, pagândovos na mesma moéda ; mas naõ quero fazêr. Podería accusárvos ao califè : mas naõ quero ser accusadôr. Podería nas minhas oraçôens queixárme a Dêos désta affronta ; mas nem isso quero fazêr. Por fim poderia pedír a Dêos, que se quer no día do juizo vos castigásse ; porê m o mesmo senhor me livre de semelhânte pensamênto ; mas ântes, se succedêsse que neste instânte chegásse áquelle formidável día ; e se a minha intercessãõ tivésse algúma efficácia para com Dêos, naõ quizéra por companhéiro senaõ a vós para entrár no Paraíso.” Que admirável exêmplo para os Christaõs aprendêrem a perdoár as injúrias !

---

#### *Da Peregrinaçãõ.*

PASSADAS que se daõ peregrinâdo, saõ degráos para a cása do desengâno. Das suas fôntes sáhem os rios muito pequênos, e crêscem corrêndo, e lévaõ mares ao mar. Hómens, que da sua terra naõ sáhem, saõ navíos, que acábaõ no estalêiro. A sabedoría cômo vinda do céo, anda neste globo terrêstre peregrina ; naõ he facil achála senaõ peregrinâdo ; errâdo por este mundo, se apprênde o naõ comettêr erros. Vapôres, que na terra éram lôdo, apartádos della se fazem estrêllas. Aos hómens que querem luzír, déve a pátria servír, como aos planêtas o horizônte, de berço, para ensáyo do seu luzimênto, longe do ponto órtivo e remontádos a mais alta regiaõ, apúraõ as influências, e duplicaõ as luzes. Que nome teriaõ



hoje no mundo Sócrates, Pithágoras, e Plataõ, e outros sábios da antiguidade, se a modo de cêpos, ou trôncos, que aõnde nascêraõ fâzem raiz e no seu primêiro chãõ apodrecem, nãõ buscáraõ fora da Patria as notícias, que lhes faltávaõ. Nãõ se ornára Hercules com os despójos dos Monstros, que domou, se os nãõ fôra buscár pelo mundo; á sua dilatada viagem dêvem os Argonautas a conquista do vello de ouro. Se nãõ corrêra Ulysses remótos climas, fôra a Aldêa de Ithaca de toda a sua gloria o theatro. Hómens perpétuamênte casêiros, saõ gallos, que só sábem do seu polêiro. Sábios peregrinos, imitaõ no seu curso as fôntes, que passãdo por vêas de prata, ouro, emeraldas, e saffiras, tómaõ, e comsigo lévaõ a flor de suas preciosas qualidades. Zombe embóra Plutarco dos que lóuvaõ a peregrinaçãõ, e diga, que sê parecem com os que júlgaõ as estrêllas errãntes mais nobres, e felices, que as fixas. Nãõ há escóla mais util para a vida, que as muítas vidas ou modos de vivêr, que na variedade das Naçóens se obsêrva. Vem-se muítas cousas nunca vistas; aprêndem-se muitas, que se nãõ sabíaõ, faz-se o hómem capaz de toda a casta de negócios, e folga de vêr este mundo, antes de sahir delle. Até para os príncipes, que das suas côrtes fâzem na terra o seu paraíso, bom he que peregrinem, para conhecêrem o mundo, que elles govêrnaõ. Os commodos, as delicias, os obsêquios dos subditos, pôdem dar a conhecêr a hum hómem, que nascêo soberãno, mas com este conhecimêto, nãõ o fazem digno da soberania: se nãõ sahira Alexandre da sua Macedonia, nãõ passára dos limites de régulo e nãõ chegára a avassallar o mundo.

---

*Do Tempo futuro.*

TRATE o hómem do prêsente, e nãõ quêira penetrar no futuro; quem de taõ longe póem a mira, nãõ pôde dar no alvo. Muítas vezes bom hé igno-

rár o que ha de succedêr ; porque se fôr bem, a dilacão hé tormênto ; e se fôr máo, o trabálho he sem provéito. Para futúros, não ha segurãnça. Ao Embaixadôr, que na guerra movída por Luiz XI. Rey de França, a Carlos Duque de Borgonha, procuráva attrahír ao Emperadôr Frederíco, com proméssa de se repartírem com elle os despójos, e os estádos, respondêo o dito Emperadôr com este apólogo : “ Tres caçadôres com a esperãnça de apanhárem hum urso, se compromettêraõ na repartiçãõ delle. Chegádos á boca da cavérna, sahío a féra com taõ grande impeto, que hum dos caçadôres botôu a fugír, outro subío a huma árvore, e o outro se estendêo no chaõ fingíndo-se mórtto ; chegòuse o urso a elle, poz-lhe o focínho no nariz, e nos ouvidos, e não lhe conhecêndo fôlego, nem sínal de vida, o deixòu por morto. O que estáva na árvore, dísse ao companhêiro ; hómem, que te dísse o urso, quando te fallòu á puridade, com o focínho nos ouvidos ? Disseme que éra mal feíto, dispôr da pelle, e carne do urso, antes de o vêrem morto. Com isto o Emperadôr dêu a entendêr ao Embaixadôr, que éra preciso apanhárem primêiro ao Duque de Borgonha, que depóis se trataría da repartiçãõ dos seus estádos. Dos succéssos do tempo futúro, só Deos tem certêza.”

---

*Dos Ricos.*

EM lugáres estereis, sem hervas, nem plantas produz a naturêza o ouro, para mostrár que os amadôres das riquêzas não tem fé, nem honra. Os ricos facinoròsos, que ainda que celebrádos nas histórias, são o oppróbrio da sua posteridade, poderíãõ ter bóa fãma, se lhes não facilitára este metal a execuçãõ de seus danádos intêntos. Em todas as idádes fôraõ as riquêzas antagonístas da virtúde ; ellas inventáraõ os mais enórmes delítos ; ellas ensináraõ os filhos a tirár a seus páis a vida ; en-

sináraõ os poderosos a opprimír os innocêntes, ar-ruinár as famílias, saqueár os templos, e despír os altáres ; ellas induziraõ os amigos a que faltassem á fé, incitáraõ os vassállos a negár aos príncipes a obediência, a os libidinósos déraõ meyos para violar a pudicícia das donzéllas, e estragár a honra dos maridos : finalmênte ellas ainda que boas para a vida civil, saõ causa de tôdos os máes ; e pôsto que os sábios se soubéraõ aproveitár déllas, a cobiça, e o máo uso das mesmas, enchêraõ o mundo tôdo de criminósos. Hómens ricos ordináriamênte se pérdem, por têrem muíto, e sabêrem pouco ; desprezaõ o sabêr, porque lhes parece, que para todo o género de vida, lhes basta o têr. A Aristippo perguntôu Dionysio, porque razáõ os filósofos frequentávaõ as cazas dos ricos, e náõ os ricos as dos filósofos. Respondêo Aristippo, que os filósofos conhêcem o que lhes falta, e os ricos ignóraõ o de que necessitaõ. Senhõres ricos, e filósofos pobres, náõ pôdem fazêr cousas grândes, porque a estes lhes falta dinhêiro, e áquêlles espírito. Dizía Diógenes, que muitos ricos saõ como as plantas, que nascem em desértos, e despenhadêiros, porque dos frutos, que ellas daõ, náõ cómem os homens, mas córvos, milháfres, e fêras ; também as riquêzas de muitos náõ saõ para sugêitos beneméritos, mas para chocarrêiros, espadachins, rufiões, e meretrizes.

*Estado da Lusitania até ao Tempo em que foi reduzida em Provincia Romana, Por A. C. do Amaral. Extrahido das Memorias da Academia de Lisbôa.*

HUMA historia sincéra envergonha-se da gloria vãã, que se busca em antiguidades mentirozas : Desgosta-se desses sonhos agradaveis, pasto de huma esteril recreação ; e se saborêa só com a ver-

dade pura. Tal hé a sorte deste escrito, derigido a fazer presentes aos Portugueses os verdadeiros costumes, e Leis de seus Maiores: rejeita tudo quanto a impostura, ou a credulidade moderna lhe conta dos Sêculos, que a Providencia quiz esconder-lhe: e se contenta com as escassas memorias, que pode colhêr dos raros monumentos antigos que lhe restaõ. Não tenta entrar pelas espêssas trevas dos primeiros 36 Sêculos do mundo, em que não acha quem o encaminhe. Pois que os Hebreos unicos guias Seguros, que introduzem em muitos outros paizes, nem hum só passo dão para este que habitamos; e apenas dão motivo a conjecturar, que das Colonias sahidas do Oriente para povoár a terra, algumas se estendêrão até a esta extremidade; mas nem donde, nem quando viessem o pode colhêr a historia.

Não acha depois dos Hebreos outros, de quem se fie, senão os Romanos: e ainda estes pouco lhe sabem dizêr de hum Paiz tão apartado, em quanto a ambição de o senhorear os não avizinha a elle: mal conservaõ huma obscura tradição de que a estas partes vieraõ Celtas, Iberos, Persas, Lusos, e Gregos: de huns apenas ficára resto na derivação do nôme; de outros na herança de alguns costumes. A navegação com que alguns Póvos do fundo do Mediterrâneo comêçaõ a enriquecer, as traz até estas ultimas Costas, e vai logo espalhar pello Mundo, a fama das ricas minas, e do fertil torrão deste Paiz desconhecido ainda, antes que da qualidade de seus habitantes: não tarda com tudo a mostrar-se esta; continúa a vir em busca dos thesouros descobertos á ambição estrangeira; e vé erguer daqui, quaes féras acossadas nos seus covís, homens bravos para defender os bens que a Providencia lhes destinára. E esta hé a primeira Scena que se nos representa no Terreno Lusitano; hum Campo de Batálha, continuáda já com os Fenicios, já com os Carthaginezes; que depois de disputarem



por largo tempo com estes Barbaros a sorte das armas, os deixaõ ainda por domár aos Romanos quando lhes cedem a conquista de Mundo. Mas ao justo motivo da defeza propria succedem depois outros, que facilmente põem as armas na mão a huns homens, a quem a falta do commercio, e de artes quasi não deixa outro meio de enriquecêr, que a pilhagem; nôme com que muitas das suas guerras são infamadas pelos Póvos mais polidos que elles. E o mesmo habito de peleijar lhes vai alimentando hum natural feróz, que já os não deixa accommodar com o socêgo da paz, e que os faz buscar inimigos dentro em caza, quando lhes faltaõ os de fóra.

Estes vicios, e virtudes de guerra, hé o que de principio nelles distinguem os Romanos, não os vendo senão armados no campo; e de que não podem deixar de dar testemunho estes mesmos vaidósos desprezadores de tudo o que não hé Romano. Mas em fim á medida que se lhes chegaõ mais perto, e se envolvem com elles, lá vão divisando por entre alguns claros, que as armas deixaõ, a forma do seu governo interiôr.

Vêm que este Terreno, que designaõ pelo nome de Lusitania, hé habitado de Póvos differentes independentes huns dos outros, e governados cada hum por suas Leis, costumes particulares; leis raras, e costumes singélos, ainda com a marca da Natureza não contrafeita.

Como a segurança propria hé quem só fórma estes córpos, não largaõ da liberdade que recebêraõ da natureza, mais que o puramente preciso para conservar essa mesma segurança. A guerra a que são dados he que os obriga a criar hum Superior, a que juraõ fidelidade; mas conseguida a paz, expira o governo do General, e a obediencia dos Soldados.

Se há que estabelecêr de novo para o bem commum do Sociedade, servem-se do meio usado das

puras Democracias, Assembléas geræes, em que cada pessoa tem o arbitrio de approvar, ou rejeitar o que se propõem : e ainda nesta acção respira o ar militar, em que são criados ; hum batêr da espada no broquel he o signal de approvaçãõ ; hum susurro inquieto o de desapprovar.

A' simplicidade da Legislaçãõ segue a das penas ; são os réos do crime capital apedrejados, e para que o horror do crime se extenda além ainda do castigo, todo o que passa depois da execuçãõ, hé obrigado a lançar alguma pedra sobre o cadáver do justicadõ.

Naõ desmente da parte Legislativa, a do Commercio interior ainda pouco sujeito a fraudes ; naõ os move a contratar a sêde insaciavel do ouro, que mal conhecem : as mutuas necessidades, a que só procuraõ soccorrêr, os ensina a trocar entre si as cousas precisas á vida. Estas lhes dictaõ tambem o que devem concedêr ao corpo ; comeres, e bebidas simples, quaes a Natureza as produsia : vestidos sem mais estudo que o do fim para que os usãõ ; câma sem regalo, nem despeza ; emfim a tudo o preciso para a conservaçãõ se accode com o menos apparato que pôde ser.

A esta sobriedade bem propria de si para dar a saude, e vigôr do corpo, ajuntaõ o trabalho aturado ; os homens o da guerra quasi contínua, e nos intervallos della o de exercicios semelhantes á guerra ; as mulheres o da cultura dos campos, e de todo o trato domestico, que com discreta economia lhes he cedido pelos homens occupados com as armas. E se faz memoria dos seus bailes, e cantares, naõ são tanto fructo do ocio, como do innocente prazêr da vida social.

Deste modo sobrio, e trabalhado de vida era consequencia a raridade de doenças : para alguma, que accaso haja, naõ hé venal a cura, nem o remedio, naõ se tendo alguém por desobrigado de con-

correr para hum officio de rigorosa humanidade ; hé o enfermo exposto em publico ; e os que tem sido feridos do mesmo mal ensinaõ os remedios com que conseguiraõ a saude.

Nos que habitavaõ as vizinhanças do Minho, como eraõ os Gronios, ou Gravios, os Amphilocios, e outros, se vem assaz retratados os costumes dos Gregos, de quem os Antigos querem que elles descendaõ : Jogos, e certames públicos, cazamentos, arte de augurar tudo hé de Gregos. Idólatras como seus Maiores, nada conservaõ da Religião pura que a Razão lhes mostrára, mais que o reconhecimento de que há hum. Ente maior que elles, a que devem dar culto : porém estragado este natural sentimento pela corrupçãõ do coração, imaginaõ Divindades indignas, a que honraõ com hum culto igualmente indigno. Se querem dar-lhes graças pello feliz successo de huma batalha, as mãos direitas doz prizioneiros saõ o triste troféo que lhes levantaõ. Se antes de qualquer acçãõ procuraõ saber o seu bom ou máo exito, dentro ás entranhas de hum inimigo he que vão buscar este fatal segredo : se querem fazer religioso hum juramento, hé preciso que as entranhas quentes de hum homem, e de hum cavallo lhes sirvaõ de banho, em que depois de mettidas as mãos, as põem sobre o altar, junto ao qual se deve fazer esta ridicula cerimonia. Emfim he sempre sangue o que applaca huns Deoses, que estes Idolatras guerreiros formavaõ á sua semelhança.

Estes saõ os poucos vestigios, e quasi apagados, que se encontraõ dos costumes domesticos dos Lusitanos, que de ordinario só se viaõ no campo de batalha, detendo, ou fazendo retroceder os passos aos Conquistadores do mundo. Mal o poderá crêr quem mede a força de hum Estado pelo fausto de seus habitadores, pela magnificencia de suas obras, e por todo o esplendôr que encanta os sentidos ; quem

naõ avalia quanto póde hum Povo, em que todos os individuos saõ aptos para a defesa da Patria, em que há tantos Soldados como homens endurecidos todos no trabalho, e todos animados do amôr da liberdade.

Hum Povo, como este, foi o que sem arte, e sem disciplina, em tendo na frente hum homem que o soubesse mandar, escarneu por muitas vezes das tropas mais bem reguladas, e deu muitos dias de mágoa, e de deslustre aos soberbos Romanos. Viriato, Sertorio, e ainda outros de menos nôme foraõ instrumentos da gloria Lusitana, que sobrepujando á emulaçãõ ficou eternizada nos escritos de seus mesmos inimigos, e nos marmores que o tempo consumidôr naõ acabou de gastar.

Por mais de Seculo e meio andáraõ os Romanos na porfiada lida de subjugar este ultimo pedaço da Hespanha que já contaõ toda por huma porçãõ certa dos seus dominios: todos os annos lhe nomeaõ Governadôr: mas por mais que tentem mandar Pretor como para Provincia pacifica, a cada passo se vem obrigados a lhe mandar Consul armado; depois de terem separado o seu Governo do de quasi todo o resto da Hespanha. E se de quando em quando algum destes Generaes consegue a gloria de a pacificar, e sujeitar ás Leis Romanas, pouco tempo lhe dura verde o louro; na sua mesma cabeça lhe murcha, ou ao mais tarde na de seu successor: até que a longa experiencia os desengana, que hé preciso mudar de systema; e que só costumando primeiro os Lusitanos a se sujeitar como amigos, hé que os poderãõ insensivelmente ir passando a obedecer como Vassallos.

---

*Sobre a Poesia Bucolica dos Poétas Portuguêzes. Por Joaquim de Foyos. Extrahido das Memorias de Litteratura da Academia de Lisbôa.*

ASSIM como entre as duas especies de oraçãõ, por



que o homem tanto excede aos outros animaes, se cultivou primeiro o Verso, assim de todas as sortes de Poesias parece ter sido primeira a Bucolica. Ainda que o genero humano não nascêo da terra, e dos duros troncos das árvores, como imagináraõ muitos Poetas, e parece que chegáraõ a crêr alguns Filósofos; com tudo depois do diluvio, espalhados os homens por toda a face da terra, e perdidos pouco a pouco os conhecimentos que herdáraõ de seus maiores, e só conservávaõ na Sociedade, hé summamente provavel, que huma grande parte delles viesse successivamente a passar por estes tres generos de vida: Selvagem, Pastoral, Agricola. Os muitos Póvos, que ainda hoje habitaõ, e se achaõ na primeira, ou segunda destas vidas, confirmaõ a verdade desta conjectura. Mas o homem, vivendo humá vida silvestre nós bosques, separado de toda a Sociedade, e sustentando-se unicamente de caça, e dos fructos espontaneos da terra, nem se acha em circumstancias de adiantar os seus conhecimentos, nem tem tempo para cultivallos, occupado, e attento todo em buscar o necessario fysico, que náõ pode achar sem muita difficuldade, e trabalho. E ainda que aconteça, que por vezes lhe sobre algum espaço livre destas continuas fadigas, satisfeitos todos os seus naturaes desejos, e appetites, cançado o côrpo, e entorpecidos os membros, lhe entorpeceraõ juntamente as faculdades da alma, desacostumadas a discorrer, e a exercitar-se em outros objectos, e se entregará docemente a o somno. Não succederá assim aos Pastores, que tendo gado, que com seu leite lhes subministre o sustento, e com suas pelles o vestido, passaráõ huma boa parte da sua vida quietos, e descansados, sem mais outro cuidado que o de conduzir, e defender os seus rebanhos, e manadas. Obrigados de necessidades mutuas, e attrahidos do natural deleite, que causa a companhia dos que tem as mesmas precisões que nós, e nellas nos podem dar

algum auxilio, e recebello, se chegarão, quando o permittir a abundancia dos pastos, huns para os outros, communicarão entre si os seus pensamentos, e desejos, praticarão sobre as cousas que mais amaõ, e celebrarão a sua felicidade.

Huma vez juntos os homens, e em ócio, contentes, e sem canção, impossivel hé, que não inventem diversos jogos, e toda a sorte de desenfado, e recreação para evitar o tedio de huma vida socegada, e satisfeita. Entre estes divertimentos não devia ter ultimo lugar a Poesia. As faculdades do homem tem huma natural disposição para ella ; ou a Poesia consista na imitação, como querem Platão, e Aristoteles, ainda que clara e distinctamente nunca nos dissessem o que esta imitação seja ; ou em huma oração levantada sobre as expressões vulgares, invertida com figuras, e harmoniosamente modulada, e compassada com o metro, e com o rhythmo. Em qualquer destas cousas que façamos consistir a Poesia, ou em todas ellas, para todas recebeo o homem da Natureza huma admiravel propensão.

As nossas sensações são não sómente a origem, e fundamento de todas as nossas idéas, mas transformando-se de diversos modos, são todos os nossos juizos, e raciocinios, as nossas artes, as nossas Sciencias, e, em huma palavra, tudo quanto sabemos, e conhecemos. Mas a imitação hé huma sensação facil, e para que está disposta a conformação dos nossos orgãos, e das nossas potencias, e por consequencia huma sensação, que nós achâmos por extremo grata, e deleitavel. Deste mesmo principio se segue outro, o qual aqui igualmente pertence, e vem a ser, que hé natural ao homem não só a oração, e a harmonia, mas tambem essa mesma oração variada com differentes tropos, e figuras ; isto hé, com diversos modos de exprimir as cousas, e os pensamentos, já com a mesma harmonia ; isto he, com o rhythmo, e já com o metro.

Conhecer-se-ha claramente a dependencia que estes dous principios tementre si, se considerarmos, que a imitação, (a qual eu já mostrei ser hum exercicio summamente gostoso ao homem, e hum modo facillimo assim de elle aprender como de communicar aos outros os seus sentimentos) huma vez feita, e praticada com a oração, traz necessariamente consigo todas aquellas variedades da mesma oração, que aponteí acima. Daqui vem affirmarem agudamente, e com razão justissima os mais célebres Filósofos, que quizeraõ descer a discussões deste genero, que a Poesia era taõ antiga, como o genero humano. Certamente parece ter nascido logo com as primeiras Sociedades, que elles formáraõ, e quando elles conservavaõ ainda muito, assim da rusticidade, como da singeleza, e innocencia natural. Do que parece, ou claramente provado, ou deduzido com assaz probabilidade, que a Poesia nasceo, e se inventou entre Pastores. Mas em que genero de Poesia se exercitariaõ estes primeiros homens? Naõ será difficil conhecello, se reflectirmos, qual seria a materia que, segundo as circumstancias em que se achavaõ, se lhes offerecia para os seus cantos. Aristoteles foi de parecêr, que dos primeiros inventores os que tinhaõ genio elevado imitavaõ accões illustres, e feitas por personagens grandes, e pelo contrario os que tinhaõ engenho mais rasteiro, cantavaõ as accões dos homens vis, em cujo vitupério compunhaõ obras ridiculas, assim como os outros se exercitávaõ em hymnos e encomios.

Porém este erudito, e intelligente Filosofo naõ fala naquelle lugar da primeira origem da Poesia rigorosamente, mas sim do modo com que ella, depois de inventada, se foi dividindo em diversas especies; porque suppõe tempos em que hé já grande a disigualdade dos homens; o que naõ tem lugar nas primeiras e simplicissimas sociedades de Pastores.

Hé pois summamente verosimil, que estes homens quizessem imitar aquellas cousas, que com mais frequencia se offereciãõ aos seus sentidos, que satisfaziaõ as suas necessidades, e que constituíãõ a bemaventurança da sua socegada vida, e felice estado, por que nellas empregavaõ toda a sua attençãõ, e cuidãdo. Cantariaõ pois os seus rebanhos, os montes e os valles, em que os apascentavaõ, os rios, e fontes, a que os levãvaõ a bebêr; a alva, e serêna madrugada, que os chamava ao trabalho; a sésta, que os convidava ao descanso; e os rafeiros, que lhes guardavaõ o gado. Cantariaõ, como era natural, as paixões e affectos da sua alma; porém não affectos violentos, e desesperados, que não eraõ próprios daquella vida, mas dôces e suaves, e que só lhes causavaõ aquella inquietaçãõ, e desasocego, a que se não pudesse seguir fim algum funesto.

Como estes argumentos são todos proprios da Poesia Bucolica, segue-se legitimamente, que ella foi a primeira, que no Mundo inventáraõ os homens. Sendo pois a Poesia Pastoral a primeira origem de toda a erudiçãõ humana, e os primeiros esforços, que fizeraõ as faculdades do homem para se pulirem, e cultivarem, justamente me persuadi, que a Academia instituida toda para utilidade pública, e que alem de outros mais gloriosos, e louvaveis empenhos, tomou a si o de dar a conhecer os principios, e progressos da nossa Litteratura, havia de levar em gosto que hum Socio seu tratasse dos merecimentos dos nossos Poetas Bucolicos. Deste trabalho, Senhores, posto que maior que minhas forças, me quiz encarregar, por ser dos mais leves e faceis, que taõ illustre corpo podia commetter a algum de seus membros.

Vós tratareis verdades sublimes, por extremo remotas, e escondidas á commum comprehensãõ dos homens; medireis o espaço immenso dos Céos; poreis Leis aos corpos mais vastos, mais distantes,



e até mais rebeldes do Universo ; com vossas porfiadas investigações, e rara sagacidade obrigareis a Natureza a que vos descubra, e patentêe aquillo mesmo, em que ella punha maior estudo em occultar. Assim para felicidade dos outros homens augmentareis, e aperfeçoareis os seus conhecimentos ; mas sereis muito particularmente felices vós, e feliz a Patria, em cuja utilidade haveis de empregar os vossos talentos, e todos estes trabalhos, e fadigas : e ella vo lo saberá agradecer com o premio, que só desejaõ as almas grandes, do louvôr e da gloria. Eu, gozando-me, e comprazendo-me do vosso alto merecimento, de que vós quizestes me coubesse tambem alguma parte, me contentarei com examinar a propriedade, e elegancia de huma palavra ; a verdade, novidade, e belleza de hum pensamento ; a innocencia, e sã singeleza de hum Pegureiro ; e isto *propter aquæ rivum*, ou quando muito, *sub ramis arboris altæ*.

Mas tornando ao meu assumpto, de que me fizeirão desviar os vossos justos louvôres, não são pouco relevantes, nem concorrem medianamente para a instrucção, e cultura dos homens os trabalhos dos Poetas. Negallo seria não conhecer o modo, por que se dilataõ, e aperfeçoãõ as nossas faculdades, e ignorar inteiramente a Historia dos varios progressos do entendimento humano. A restauração das letras, com que se desterrou a ignorancia, e barbaridade, a que nos tinhaõ reduzido as Nações do Norte, e as continuas irrupções dos Sarracenos, tem as suas sementes nos Trovadores Provençaes e Lombardos, que fructificando felizmente chegáõ a produzir os dous abalisados engenhos de Dante, e Petrarca. Cultivada por estes dous grandes homens, e por alguns mais seus contemporaneos a Lingua Toscana, preparou a Italia, e á sua imitação a toda a Europa para hum conhecimento profundo da Lingua Latina, e da Grega. Com taes

disposições, e auxilios se instruíraõ as Nações Europeas nas Artes, e Sciencias, e em toda a sorte de erudiçãõ daquelles sabios Póvos ; e inflammadas cada vez mais no desejo de saber, tem levado muitas das Artes, e Sciencias dos antigos a hum ponto incrível de perfeiçãõ, &c.

---

*Analyse e Combinações filosoficas sobre a Elocuçãõ e Estylo de Sá de Miranda, Ferreira, Bernardes, Caminha, e Camões. Pr. Francisco Dias.*

QUANDO entrei nesta composiçãõ, julguei que devia tomar hum ponto fixo, donde viesse deduzindo a sua analyse, e que o Sá de Miranda devia indispensavelmente formar a época, donde, segundo a ordem do tempo, havia de dimanar todo o seu progresso, como de hum escritor, que lançou os fundamentos da Poesia Portugueza. Mas antes que entrasse nesta diligencia, vi que me era de precisa necessidade fazer huma descripçãõ exacta do estado em que se achava a Lingua, quando o Poeta Miranda appareceu, e sondar as qualidades principaes da composiçãõ e estylo daquelle Padre da Poesia Portugueza, donde passou para Ferreira, para Bernardes, para Caminha, e ultimamente para Camões, o maior Poeta da Naçãõ, e o que mais enriqueceo, e apurou o nosso Idioma ; discorrendo por aquelles pontos, que mais me pareceraõ dignos de comparaçãõ no género Sublime, como mais nobre, e como aquelle que mais esforço pede da fantasía humana ; fazendo juizo de cada hum dos Poetas da Analyse, e finalmente indicando as origens donde nascêraõ as expressões, e fórmulas combinadas ; no que julge ter satisfeito ao Assumpto, que hé certamente mais difficiloso do que parece.

Na execuçãõ deste taõ trabalhoso argumento me conduzi, segundo as luzes, que pude adquirir na

lição de Aristoteles, Cicero, Longino, Quintiliano, e muito mais na de Locke, Condillac, Du Marsais, e em especial na do sobre todos sabio Commentario, que o grande Voltaire fêz ás Obras de Pedro Corneille, onde se vêem as regras do gosto na sua maior elevação.

Todas estas inaterias são novas em Portugal, e por consequencia não tive a quem seguir: e apezar dos defeitos, posso dizer,

..... *que aqui vereis presente*  
*Cousas, que juntas se áchão raramente.* Camões, Lus.

---

*Introducção.*

Hé o talento da palavra a mais nobre faculdade do ente racional, como instrumento, com que não só expõe ás suas idéas, mas até pinta os mais occultos sentimentos do espirito com rasgos tão vivos, e sublimes, que os faz passar aos corações mais izentos de interesse. Aquella Filosofía inata ao coração do homem, que preside a todas as acções, que mais o elévaõ, foi quem formou os sinâes representativos das suas idéas simples, e compostas; e quem, á força de infinitas combinações, lhe fez conceber o grande pensamento do transumpto mental consignado nas palavras por huma successão de idéas não interrompidas, cujo nexo constitue a pintura eterna não só do fysico, mas, o que hé mais prodigiõso, do moral humano.

Aquella mesma filosofia, que dirigindo e elevando o espirito humano desde as idéas simples até ás ímplexas, lhe dêo as primeiras noções da expressaõ simples he primitiva, como mais adaptada ás necessidades do homem; á proporção que lhe foi ampliando a esféra dos seus conhecimentos, lhe foi ministrando expressaõ compléxa, isto hé, figurada com a qual pinta aos olhos, e dá corpo, e vida ás mais sublimes abstracções, que pode concebêr o entendimento humano.

Deste immenso aggregado de idéas simplícies, e compostas, como consequencia natural, procedeo a vivacidade da expressãõ, e a riqueza das Linguas, que se eleváraõ ao mais distincto grão de perfeiçãõ, segundo o numero de acontecimentos, e revoluções notaveis; e muito mais segundo o trato frequente com as nações estranhas, e communicaçãõ social dos póvos entre si; por isso mesmo que das grandes crizes procede a effervescencia das paixões, que pondo em movimento, e actividade a massa das idéas, gera nóvos pensamentos, e nova elocuçãõ.

Daqui se infére, que os melhores de todos os idiomas devem forçosamente ser os daquelles póvos que mais revoluções experimentáraõ, e que melhor conhecêraõ as leis da Sociedade. Vê-se pois pello que nos ensina a historia, que as Nações mais puras e sábias, tanto na linguagem, como nos costumes, fôraõ quasi sempre as que situadas junto ao mar conhecêraõ mais cedo a necessidade da communicaçãõ dos póvos estranhos, por meio do Commercio; ou aquellas, cujos acontecimentos lhes déraõ lugar distincto nos annaes do genero humano.

Por isso vemos, que as Linguas geraes do Malabar, Coromandel, e da China regiões maritimas, assim como tambem a Arabe, saõ as mais bellas, e antigas de todas as Linguas da Asia. Os Póvos da Grecia, que gozando do mais formoso espectaculo da Natureza, experimentáraõ tantas, e taõ notaveis revoluções, inventaraõ o mais significativo, e harmónico de todos os Idiomas, onde se achaõ consignádos os mais insignes monumentos do génio, e dõnde procedêo a magestade da Lingua dos Romanos, naõ mais famosos pelas suas conquistas, que pelos escriptos immortaes, com que illustráraõ os Seculos. O mesmo se deve considerar dos Italianos, Francêzes, Hespanhóes, e Inglezes, cujos Idiomas tendo erigem na Lingua Latina, se tem elevado ao mais



alto ponto de perfeição possível, e nos quaes existem monumentos para quem todo o louvôr hé diminuto.

Mas este concurso de circumstancias parece, que ainda não foi a causa sufficiente da perfeição das Linguas: ainda ali se diviza hum vácuo, que precisa ser occupado. Aqui vem á Poesia com toda a sua pompa e magestade, desatando or vãos, pulindo e aperfeiçoando os Idiomas, dando a tudo alma, e vida, já elevando-se aos maiores assumptos nos louvôres do Ente Supremo, e no Panegyrico dos grandes homens, persuadindo a imitação das acções nobres, e dignas dos mais distinctos applausos. Ella lhe abre os seus thesouros: ella os enriquece; ella lhes dá força, elegancia, e harmonia, sem o que seriaõ huns cadáveres seccos, e inanimados. Sem a Poesia, nada seriaõ talvez os Gregos, e os Românos, que tanto enchêraõ o mundo com a fama das suas victorias, com a grandeza das suas acções, e muito mais com a perfeição, com que cultiváraõ todas as Artes de génio, de que tantos, e tão admiraveis testemunhos nos deixáraõ principalmente nos seus escritos. A Poesia pois, que tendo entre os antigos hum caracter de harmonia muito diverso da Poesia moderna, veio pella ignorancia dos Seculos a tal decadencia, que pouco faltou par ficar inteiramente ignorada.

Das reliquias da Lingua Latina, e Grêga se formáraõ os Idiomas modernos, com diversa Syntaxe; e com elles resuscitáraõ, ou por melhor dizer, formáraõ os Provençaes huma Poesia toda nova na disposição das cesuras, e combinações harmônicas.

Os Italianos restauradôres de quasi todas as Artes, fôraõ os primeiros, que tratáraõ a Poesia com dignidade, aperfeiçoando os metros, e harmonias, que os mesmos Provençaes, e Sicilianos tinhaõ inventado; e tanto se applicáraõ a ella, que já no decimo quarto Seculo era famoso Poeta o celebre Dante, quem fixou todas as accentuações harmonicas do hende-

casyllabo, que ficou sendo o mais necessario metro da Poesia Italiana, Castelhana, e Portugueza.

Entráraõ os Mouros em Hespanha, e com elles a Poesía : porem o desassocêgo da guerra não dêo lugar aos antigos possuidores desta Regiãõ, taõ infestada de Nações estranhas, a cultivar a Poesía seriamente, nem a pulir os seus Idiomas taõ cedo como os Italianos. Da longa dominaçãõ, que os Romanos tiveraõ em Hespanha se havia nella introduzido o uzo da Lingua Latina, que veio a ser vulgar : della, e de varios dialectos barbaros, se formáraõ os dous mais bellos, e sonoros Idiomas de Hespanha, e talvez da Europa, o Castelhana, e o Portuguez.

Estas duas Linguas se foraõ igualmente aperfeiçoando, de sorte que a hum mesmo tempo chegáraõ ao seu auge. Com tudo, sendo a Naçãõ Portugueza mais moderna, e occupando muito menos espaço de terreno, que a Castelhana, veio mais cedo a produzir monumentos, que assaz distinguíraõ, e acreditáraõ o seu Idiõma. As historias de João de Barros dadas á luz no meio do Seculo decimo sexto, e traduzidas em todas as Linguas cultas da Europa, fizeraõ mostrar ao Mundo litterário, que a Lingua Portugueza era a mais filha da Latina. Hum numero sufficiente de Escriitores, que logo depois vieraõ, acabáraõ de determinar o genio da Lingua, cujo character hé elegancia, e perspicuidade. Sendo pois a Lingua Portugueza desde a sua origem mui dôce e sonóra, resultado natural da quantidade proporcionada das suas vogâes e consoâtes, das quaes as primeiras, não são taõ frequentes e conjunctas, que enfraquêçaõ a harmonia, e fâçaõ languida e pouco notada, como se vê na Lingua Italiana ; nem as segundas com nimia frequencia se atropellaõ, e produzem sons rudes e asperos, como nas Linguas do Norte. Todas estas felices disposições, além do genio, convidávaõ a Naçãõ á cultura da

Poesia para que sempre teve natural inclinação. Deixemos a miúda investigação destas causas, a qual será mais propria de quem tentar escrevêr a historia de Lingua. Deixemos tambem as Poesías anteriôres ao Seculo de quinhentos, muitas das quaes existem em algumas Bibliothecas antigas, como as d' El Rei D. Diniz, na do Convento da Ordem de Christo em Thomar, e outras andaõ empregadas no celebre Cancioneiro de Resende, collecção preciosa, donde se podem extrahir as maiores luzes a respeito da Natureza, e origem da nossa Poesía : e começando a tratar do auge a que esta elevou a Lingua Portugueza ; as graças e numero que lhe communicou ; principiaremos a discorrêr de huma época mais vizinha a nos, e esta seja determinada pelo famôso Sá de Miranda.

Vejá-mos pois os assumptos, que este Poeta tratou, a qualidade de sua imitação em geral, o uzo que fez do hendecasyllabo, até ao seu tempo pouco ou nada conhecido em Portugal, e em toda a Hespanha ; como tratou, como aperfeiçoou o Sonêto, do qual se deve reputar inventor entre nós, novas graças que acrescentou á nossa Lingua, e como finalmente preparou aos Poetas, que lhe succedêraõ, hum novo caminho para se elevárem até a immortal Lusitada.

Mas antes que entremos neste exame, vejâmos primeiro o estado em que o Sá de Miranda, achou o Idioma.

A Nação Portugueza, que até ao fim do reinado de D. Fernando jazia na ignorancia, occupada unicamente da cultura das suas terras, quanto lhe era preciso para o consumo interiôr do Reino, e para entreter huma ligeira sombra de commercio exterior, continuamente vexado pella tyrannía Arabica, que infestando os mares, era eterno obstaculo á navegação ; vivendo como desterrada na solidão dos campos, sem communicação, nem policia, fallava

huma linguagem informe, e grosseira, chêa de sons rudes, que as Linguas barbaras lhe tinhaõ communicado ; e a pezar de ter huma origem taõ pura, como a Lingua Latina, donde procedia, só conserváva alguma energíá natural nascida das significações primitivas das suas vózes, que, alem de serem maculadas de infinitas anomalias, e dissonancias, eraõ privadas de translações, que daõ força e elevação a os Idiomas. Chêa pois de construcções erróneas, de diphtongos ásperos, e desinencias rudes, póbre de termos, sem idéa do uexo, que subsiste nas particulas, sem syntaxe, sem harmonia o seu periodo incertõ, e desunido vacillára sem carácter.

A grande revolução de D. Joaõ I. fazendo a mais viva commoção no genio dos Portuguezes, com ella lhe viéraõ novos estimulos de gloria, que eleva o espirito ; novas emprezas, novos pensamentos, nova força, nova energíá ás suas enunciações ; novos objectos do discurso, e nova linguagem. Hum Latim barbaro até alli organo das Leis, e instrumentos publicos, cessou de ser a linguagem do Fôro.

Da conquista de Ceuta nasceo a idéa, a grande idéa dos descubrimentos, que mostrando a necessidade de cultivar as Mathematicas, e a Astronomia, taes quaes existiáõ naquelles tempos obscuros, alargou a esféra da Mechanica, que fazendo novas investigações sobre a acção, dos ventos, e resistencia das agoas, extrahindo a somma da combinaçáo dos movimentos resultantes da acção e reacção destes dous Elementos, alcançou mais perfeito conhecimento das leis dos liquidos, e do equilibrio, e aperfeiçoou finalmente a Arte de navegar. Novos Astros, novos mares e costas, novas ilhas, novos mundos enchem de admiração tôdo o universo.



## EXTRACTOS POETICOS.

*From the third Canto of the Lusiad of Camões.*

ESTA'VAS linda Inez posta em sossêgo,  
 De teus annos colhêndo o dôce fruto,  
 Naquêlle engâno da alma, lédo, e cêgo,  
 Que a fortúna naõ deixa durár muito :  
 Nos saudósos câmpos do Mondêgo,  
 De teus formósos olhos núnca enxúto,  
 Aos montes ensinândo, e as ervínhas.  
 O nome, que no peito escripto tínhas.

Do teu príncipe alli te respondiaõ  
 As lembranças, que na alma lhe morávaõ,  
 Que sempre ante seus olhos te traziaõ :  
 Quando dos teus formósos se apartávaõ :  
 De noite em dôces sônhos, que mentiaõ,  
 De dia em pensamêntos, que voávaõ :  
 E quanto em fim cuidáva, e quanto via,  
 Éraõ tudo memórias de alegríá.

D'outras béllas senhôras, e princêzas,  
 Os dezejádos talamos engêita,  
 Que tudo em fim, tu puro amor desprezas,  
 Quando húm gesto, suáve te sugêita :  
 Vêndo estas namorádas estranhêzas,  
 O velho pay sesúdo, que respeita,  
 O murmurár do povo e a fantasía,  
 Do filho, que casársẽ naõ queria.

Tirá'r Inez ao mundo determína,  
 Por lhe tirar o filho, que tem prêso,  
 Crêndo co'sangue só da morte indina,  
 Matár do firme amôr o fogo acêso :  
 Que furôr consentío, que a espáda fina,  
 Que pôde sustentár o grande peso

Do furor Mauro, fòsse levantáda,  
Contra huma fraca dama delicáda ?

Traziaõ-na os horríferos algôzes  
Ante o Rey, ja movído a piedáde,  
Mas o pôvo com falsas, e ferózes  
Razôens, á morte crua o persuáde.  
Ella com tristes e piedósas vózes,  
Sahidas só de mágoa e saudáde  
Do seu Príncipe e filhos que deixáva,  
Que mais que a propria mórte a magoáva.

Para o céo cristalíno levantâdo,  
Com lágrimas os olhos piedósos,  
Os olhos, porque as mãos lhe estáva atâdo  
Hum dos duros minístros rigorôsos :  
E depois nos menínos atentâdo,  
Que taõ queridos tínha, e taõ mimósos,  
Cuja orfandáde como mãi temía,  
Para o avô cruel assim dizia.

Se já nas brutas feras, cuja mente  
Natúra fez cruel de nascimêto ;  
E nas áves agréstes, que somênte  
Nas rapínas aérias tem o intêto,  
Com pequênas crianças vio a gente,  
Têrem taõ piedôso sentimêto,  
Como coa mãy de Nino ja mostráraõ,  
E cos Irmãos, que Roma edificáraõ :

O'tu que tens de humâno o gesto, e o peito,  
Se de humâno he matár huma donzélla  
Fraca, e sem força só por têr sugêto  
O coraçãõ, a quem sôube vencêlla,  
A éstas criancínhas tem respêito  
Pois o naõ tens á morte escura délla,  
Môvate a piedáde sua, e minha,  
Pois te naõ move a culpa, que naõ tínha.

E se vencêdo a Maura resistêcia,  
A morte sabes dar com fogo e ferro,

Sabe tambem dar vida com clemência,  
 A quem para perdêlla não fêz erro.  
 Mas se te assi meréce esta innocência,  
 Põe-me perpétuo e mísero destêrro,  
 Na Scythía fria, ou lá na Libia ardênte,  
 Onde em lágrimas viva eternamênte.

Põe-me onde se use toda a feridáde,  
 Entre leôens, e tigres ; e veréi  
 Se nelles achar posso a piedáde,  
 Que entre peitos humanos não achéi ;  
 Alli co' amor intrínseco, e vontáde,  
 Naquêlle por quem môrro, criaréi  
 Estas relíquias suas, que aqui víste,  
 Que refrigerio séjaõ da mãi triste.

Quería perdoár-lhe o rey beníno,  
 Movído das palavras, que o magoãõ,  
 Mas o pertináz pôvo, e seu destino,  
 (Que desta sorte o quiz) lhe não perdõãõ  
 Arrancaõ das espádas de aço fino,  
 Os que por bom tal feito alli pregõãõ :  
 Contra huma dama, ó peitos carniceiros,  
 Ferózes vos mostráes, e cavalleiros ?

Qual contra a linda moça Policena,  
 Consolaçãõ extrêma da mãy velha,  
 Porque a sômbra de Achiles a condêna,  
 C' o ferro o duro Pirro se aparêlha :  
 Mas élla os olhos, com que o ar serêna  
 (Bem cômo paciênte, e mansa ovêlha)  
 Na mísera mãy postos, que endoudéce,  
 Ao duro sacrificio se offeréce :

Taes contra Inez os brutos matadóres,  
 No colo de alabástro, que sostinha  
 As óbras, cõ que amôr matôu de amôres  
 A'quelle, que depõis a fêz raínha :  
 As espádas banhândo, e as brâncas flôres,  
 Que ella dos olhos seus regádas tínha,

Se incarnicávaõ férvidos, e irósos,  
No futúro castígo naõ cuidósos.

Bem pudéras, ó sol, da vista dêstes,  
Teus ráyos apartár aquêlle dia,  
Cômo da séva mesa de Thyestes  
Quando os filhos por maõ de Atrêu comia :  
Vós ó concavos valles que pudéstes,  
A voz extrêma ouvir da boca fría,  
O nome do seu Pedro, que lhe ouvístes,  
Por muito grande espáço repetístes.

Assi como a bonína, que cortáda  
Antes de tempo fôï, cândida e bélla,  
Sêndo das mãos lascívas mal tratáda,  
Da menína, que a trôuxe na capélla,  
O cheiro traz perdido, e a côr murcháda,  
Tal está morta a pállida donzélla,  
Sêcas do rosto as rósas, e perdída  
A brânca, e viva cor, co' a doce vida.

As filhas do Mondêgo a morte escúra,  
Longo tempo chorâdo memoráraõ,  
E por memória etérna em fonte pura,  
As lágrimas chorádas transformáraõ,  
O nome lhe puzéraõ, que inda dura,  
Dos amôres de Inez, que alli passáraõ ;  
Vêde, que fresca fonte rega as flores,  
Que lágrimas saõ ágoa, e o nôme amôres.

*From the fifth Canto of the same.*

POREM já cinco sós éraõ passádos,  
Que dalli nos partíramos, cortâdo  
Os máres nunca de ôutrem navegádos,  
Prosperamênte os ventos assoprâdo ;  
Quâdo huma noite estando descuidádos,  
Na cortadôra proa vigiâdo,



Huma nuvem que os ares escuréce,  
Sobre nossas cabêças apparece.

Tam temerosa vinha, e carregada,  
Que pôz nos coraçõens hum grãde medo,  
Bramindo o nêgro már de lônge bráda,  
Como se dêsse em vaõ n'algun rochêdo :  
O' potestáde, disse, sublimáda,  
Que ameaço divíno, ou que segrêdo,  
Este clima, e este már nos apresêta,  
Que mór cousa parêce, que tormêta ?

Naõ acabáva, quãdo huma figúra,  
Se nos móstra no ár, robústa, e válida,  
De disfórme, e grandíssima estatúra,  
O rôsto carregádo, a barba esquállida :  
Os olhos, encovádos, e a postúra  
Medõnha, e má, e a cõr terrêna, e pállida,  
O bõca nêgra, os dentes amaréllos.

Tam grãde éra de mêmbrs, que bem pôsso  
Certificárte, que este era o segúndo,  
De Rhódes estranhíssimo Colósso,  
Que hum dos sete milágres foi do mundo :  
Co' hum tom de vóz nos falla horrêdo e grósso,  
Que parecêo sahir do mar profúndo,  
Arrepiãose as cárnès, e o cabêllo,  
A mi, e a todos, só de ouvílo, e vêlo.

E disse, o' gente ousáda mais que quãtas  
No mundo comettêraõ grãdes cousas ;  
Tu, que por guerras cruas, taes, e tantas,  
E por trabalhos vãos nunca repousas,  
Pois vedádos términos quebrãntas,  
E navegár meus longos mares ousas,  
Que eu tanto tempo há que guardo, e tenho  
Nunca arádos de estranho ou proprio lenho ;

Pois vens vêr os segrêdos escondidos  
Da naturêza, e do humido elemento,  
A nenhum grãde humãno concedidos  
De nóbre ou de immortal merecimento :

Ouve os damnos de mi, que apercebidos  
 Estaõ a teu sobêjo atrevimento,  
 Por tôdo o largo már, e pela terra,  
 Que inda hás-de subjugar com dura guêrra.

Sábe que quantas náos esta viágem,  
 Que tu fazes, fizérem de atrevidas,  
 Inimiga teráõ esta parágem  
 Com ventos, e tormêntas desmedidas.  
 E da primeira armada, que passagem  
 Fizér por éstas ondas insoffridas,  
 Eu farei de improviso tal castigo,  
 Que sêja mór o damno que o perigo.

Aqui espéro tomar, se naõ me engâno,  
 De quem me descubrio alta vingança ;  
 E naõ se acabará só nisto o damno  
 De vossa pertinace confiança ;  
 Antes em vossas náos vereis cada ânno  
 (Se hé verdade o que meu juizo alcança)  
 Naufrágios, perdições de toda sorte,  
 Que o menór mal de tódos seja a morte.

E do primeiro illustre que a ventura  
 Com fâma alta fizer tocár os Céos,  
 Serei eterna e nóva sepultura,  
 Por juizos incógnitos de Déos :  
 Aqui porá da Turca armada dura  
 Os sobêrbos e prosperos trophéos  
 Comigo de seus damnos o ameaça  
 A destruida Quilôa, com Mombaça.

Outro tambem virá de honráda fama,  
 Liberal, Cavalleiro, e namorado,  
 E comsigo trará a formósa Dama,  
 Que Amôr por gram mercê lhe terá dado :  
 Triste ventura e nêgro fado os châma  
 Neste terrêno meu, que duro, e irádo,

Os deixará de hum crú naufragio vivos,  
Para verem trabálhos excessivos.

Verão morrêr com fôme os filhos charos,  
Em tanto amôr gerados, e nascidos :  
Verão os Cáfres asperos, e aváros,  
Tirár á linda Dama os seus vestidos :  
Os crystallínos membros, e preclaros,  
A' calma, ao frio, ao ár verão despídos ;  
Despois de ter pizado longamênte  
Co' os delicados pés a arêa ardente.

E verão mais os ólhos que escapárem  
De tanto mal, de tanta desventura,  
Os dous amântes miseros ficárem  
Na férvida e implacabil espessura.  
Alli, despois que as pedras abrandarem  
Com lágrimas de dôr, de mágoa pura,  
Abraçados, as almas soltaraõ  
Da formósa e misérrima prisaõ.

Mais hia por diante o monstro horrêndo  
Dizendo nóssos fados, quando alçado  
Lhe dice eu : quem és tu que esse estupendo  
Córpo, certo me tem maravilhado ?  
A bôca, e os ólhos nêgros retorcêndo,  
E dândo hum espantôso e grânde brádo,  
Me respondêo com vos pesáda e amára,  
Como quem da pergunta lhe pezára :

Eu sou aquelle occulto e grande Cábo  
A quem chamáis vós outros Tormentório ;  
Que nunca a Ptolemêo, Pompónio, Estrábo,  
Plinio, e quantos passáraõ fui notório.  
Aqui toda a Africâna cósta acábo  
Neste meu nunca visto Promontório,  
Que para o Pólo Antártico se estend  
A quem vóssa ousadía tânto offênde.

Fui dos filhos aspérrimos da Têrra,  
Qual Encélado, Egêo, e o Centimão ;  
Chameime Adamastôr, e fui na guêrra  
Contra o que vibra os raios de Vulcão :  
Não que puzesse sérra sôbre sérra,  
Mas conquistando as ôndas do Occeão  
Fui Capitão do mar, por onde andáva  
A armáda de Neptuno, que eu buscáva.

Amôres da alta Espôsa de Pelêo  
Me fizéram tomár tamãha emprêza,  
Todas as Dêosas desprezêi do Céu,  
Só por amár das águas a Princeza :  
Hum dia a vi, co' as filhas de Nerêo,  
Sahir núa na práia ; e logo prêza  
A vontáde senti, de tall manêira  
Que inda não sinto cousa que mais queira.

Cômo fôsse impossivel alcançálla  
Pela grandêza fêa de meu gêsto,  
Determinei por armas de tomálla,  
E a Dóris este caso manifêsto :  
De mêdo a Dêosa então por mi lhe falla ;  
Mas élla co' hum formôso riso honêsto  
Respondêo : Qual será o amôr bastãte  
De Nympha que sustente o de hum Gigãte ?

Com tudo, por livrarmos o Oceão :  
De tanta guerra, eu buscarei maneira,  
Com que com minha hõnra escuse o dãmno :  
Tal resposta me torna a mensageira.  
Eu que cahir não pôde neste engãno  
(Que hé grande dos amãntes a ceguêira)  
Enchêram-me com grãndes abundanças  
O peito de dezêjos, e esperanças.

Já nescio, já da guêrra desistindo,  
Huma noite de Dóris promettída,  
Me apparece de longe o gêsto lindo,  
Da brãncá Thétis, unica despida :



Cômo doudo corrí, ne lônge abrindo  
 Os braços, para aquélla que éra vida  
 Deste côrpo ; e começo os ólhos bellos  
 A lhe beijar, as fáces, e os cabélllos.

Oh que não sei de nôjo cômo o cônte !  
 Que crêndo ter nos braços quem amáva,  
 Abraçado me achei co' hum duro mônte  
 De áspero mato, e de espessura bráva :  
 Estândo co' hum penêdo frônfe afrônfe,  
 Que eu pêlo rôsto angélico apertáva,  
 Não fiquei hómem naõ, mas mudo, e quêdo,  
 E junto de hum penêdo outro penêdo.

O' Nympha a mais formósa do Oceâno :  
 Já que minha presênça naõ te agráda,  
 Que te custáva ter-me neste engâno,  
 Ou fôsse mônfe, núvem, sônho, ou náda ?  
 De aqui me páрто irádo, e quási insâno,  
 Da mágoa, e da deshônra alli passáda,  
 A buscár ôutro múnido, ônde naõ visse  
 Quêdo de meu prânto, e de meu málo se risse.

Eraõ já nêste têmpo meus irmãos  
 Vencidos, e em miséria extrêma póstos ;  
 E, por mais segurár-se os Dêoses vaõs,  
 Aguns a vários mônfes sotopóstos :  
 E cômo contra o Céu naõ válem maõs,  
 Eu que chorândo andáva meus desgôstos  
 Comecei a sentir do fádo imígo,  
 Por meus atrevimêtos, o castígo.

Convérte-se-me a cárne em térra dura,  
 Em penêdos os óssos se fizéram :  
 Estes mêmbrós que vês, e ésta figura,  
 Por éstas lônegas águas se estendêram :  
 Emfim minha grandíssima estatúra  
 Neste remoto cábo convertêram  
 Os Dêoses ; e por mais dobrádas mágoas,  
 Me anda Thetis cercando destas ágoas.

Assim contáva, e co' hum medônho chôro,  
 Subito dante os ólhos se apartôu ;  
 Desfêz-se a nuvem negra, e co' hum sonóro  
 Bramído muito lônge o már soôu.  
 Eu, levantâdo as maõs ao sancto côro  
 Dos Anjos, que taõ lônge nos guiôu,  
 A Dêos pedi, que removêsse os dúros  
 Cásos que Adamastôr, contou futúros.

*From the second Canto of the same.*

OUVIO-LHE éstas palávras piedósas  
 A formósa Díone, e commovída,  
 De êntre as Nymphas se vái, que saudósas  
 Ficáraõ désta subita partída.  
 Já penétra as estrêllas luminósas ;  
 Já na tercêira Esféra recebída  
 Avânte pássa ; e lá no sexto Céu  
 Para ônde estáva o Padre se movêo.

E cômo hia affrontáda do camínho,  
 Taõ formósa no gésto se mostráva,  
 Que as estrêllas, o Céu, e o ar vizínho  
 E tudo quânto a vía namoráva.  
 Dos ólhos ônde faz seu filho o nínho  
 Huns espíritos vivos inspiráva,  
 Com que os Pólos geládos accendía,  
 E tornáva de fôgo a Esféra fria.

E por máis namorar o Soberâno  
 Pádre, de quem foi sêmpre amáda, e chára,  
 Se lhe apresênta assi cômo ao Troiâno  
 Na sélva Idea já se apresentára.  
 Se a víra o caçadôr, que o vulto humano  
 Perdêo, vêndo a Diana na água clára,  
 Nunca os famíntos gálgos o matáram ;  
 Que primeiro desêjos o acabáram.

Os crêspos fios de ôuro se espraziam  
 Pêlo côlo, que a néve escurecía :  
 Andândo, as lâcteas têtas lhe tremíam  
 Com quem Amôr brincáva, e naõ se vía :  
 Da álva pretína châmas lhe sabíam,  
 Onde o meníno as álmas accendía :  
 Pêlas lisas colúmnas lhe trepávam.  
 Desêjos, que cômo héra se enrolávam.

Co' hum delgado cendál as pártes cõbre,  
 De quem vergõha hé naturál repáro :  
 Porê m nem tudo escõnde, nem descõbre  
 O véo dos rôxos lírios pòuco aváro :  
 Mas para que o desêjo accênda, e dôbre,  
 Lhe põe diânte aquelle objecto ráro.  
 Já se sêntem no Céo, por tôda a páрте,  
 Ciúmes em Vulcâno, amôr em Márte.

E mostrândo no angélico semblânte  
 Co' o riso húma tristêza misturáda ;  
 Como dâma que foi do incâuto amânte  
 Em brincos amorôsos má l tratáda ;  
 Que se queixa, e se ri n' hum mêsmo instânte,  
 E se móstra êntre alêgre magoáda ;  
 Desta ártê a Dêosa, a quem nenhúma iguála,  
 Mais mimósa que triste a o Pádrê fála.

---

*From the first Idyl of Boccage.*

---

A'FOZ do Téjo, em brónca penedía,  
 Mináda pêlas ôndas salitrôsas,  
 Prisionêiro de amôr Tritaõ gemía.

Luziaõ lhe as espádoas escamósas,  
 Sustentáva o marítimo instrumênto,  
 O búzio atroadôr nas mãos callósas :

Cónchas da cõr do líquido Elemêto  
Parte do cõrpo enõrme lhe vestiaõ,  
Iguál na ligeirêza ao próprio vênto :

Da bárba sálsas gõtas lhe cahiaõ,  
E nos ólhos, que Amõr affogueáva,  
Em borbotões as lágrimas ferviaõ

Lília que hum Bósque próximo habitáva,  
Lília a Napéa, desdenhõsa, e bélla,  
Amorõsos clamõres lhe arrancáva :

Hum dia a vio na práia, e só de vèlla  
Seu coraçãõ feróz enfeitiçádo,  
Voõu, gemêndo, para os ólhos délla.

Das entrânhas do Pélago salgádo,  
Lõuco de Amõres, lõuco de suadádes.  
O queixõso Amadõr tinha saltádo :

Do Pai, que abáfa as nêgras tempestádes,  
Já, seu voráz tormênto éra sabído,  
E das õutras Equóreas Divindádes.

De aéreas esperanças illudído,  
Graõ tẽmpo seu espírito saudõso,  
Rastejãndo aã cruél, vagõu perdído ;

Graõ tẽmpo glórias vaas sonhõu teimõso,  
Antes que dèsse fructuõsa entráda  
A o ácre desengãno, o pèito anciõso. &c.

FIM.

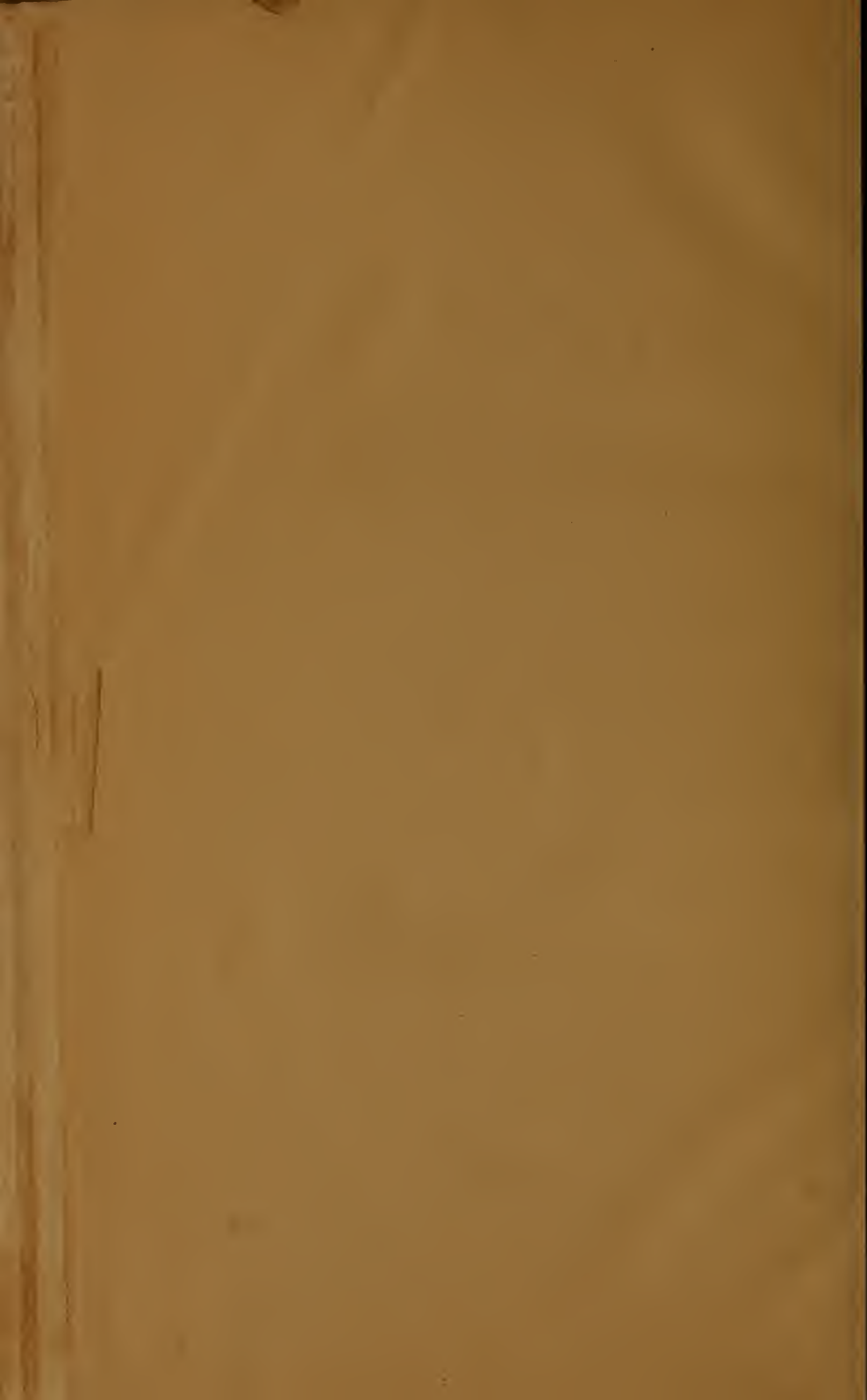


Handwritten marks or initials in the top left corner.

LBJa'23

LBFe '06









Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

**PreservationTechnologies**

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive  
Cranberry Township, PA 16066  
(724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



00022683111

